

# Chapter 301 - Eastern Region Report

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“What am I talking about? You’re in the Eastern Region Report. You’ve been named the most outstanding youngster in Omen Ridge since Luo Xu.”

Chang Qiqi was extremely excited. His face was glowing, and his cheeks were ruddy.

He opened the report, pointed to one of the paragraphs and read out, “Eighteen-year-old Zhang Ruochen, the ninth son of Yunwu Commandery Prince, defeated ‘Yan Qingwu’, the top-ranked genius of the Yan Family and ranks 98th on the Earth Board. He was unable to practice Martial Arts until the age of 16 when he obtained a Sacred Mark. Since then, his accomplishments have soared. He is named as the most outstanding warrior in Omen Ridge after Luo Xu.”

There was even a story stating his major results on the back page.

Zhang Ruochen looked with a faint smile. “It’s not a big deal to be published in Eastern Region Report. Moreover, I’m only listed on the 18th page, which is the last page.”

“How is this not amazing? You must know that it has been more than 10 years since an Omen Ridge warrior has been published in the Eastern Region Report. Do you know what this means? It means you’re popular now. Indeed, you’re famous!” said Chang Qiqi.

The Eastern Region Report was a monthly newspaper published by the Martial Market Bank. It had 18 pages and

mainly recorded the major events of the entire Eastern Region in the previous month.

The more significant an event was, the higher the chance it would be published on a leading page.

For example, the Commandery Prince of the Tianyi Commandery had broken through the Half-Saint realm; this was published on the second page in this issue. It was explosive news in the Tianyi Commandery, and still quite a significant piece of news in the entire Eastern Region. Even the commanderies near the border of the Tianyi Commandery were affected.

It was expected that the Commandery Princes of the border of the Tianyi Commandery had already prepared numerous gifts and were ready to congratulate him in person.

Of course, it was more than one million kilometers between Omen Ridge and Tianyi Commandery. Warriors here had discussed it a bit, but it didn't warrant too much attention.

As for the leading page of this issue, it was occupied by another shocking story:

A mysterious young master from the Black Market Excellence Hall had defeated Bu Qianfan, the top-ranked warrior on the Earth Board with only three moves. A warrior at the Half-Saint realm estimated that the young master had already broken through to the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm.

Even the news of Tianyi Commandery Prince breaking through to Half-Saint had been squeezed off the front page. It showed just how significant this was.

Bu Qianfan, who had been named the most outstanding youngster in the past century in the entire Eastern Region and reached the level of seven and a half tricks genius, had occupied the top spot of the Earth Board for three years. No one was able to withstand even one of his moves.

And yet this outstanding youngster had been defeated by a young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall in just three sword moves. How could it not be shocking news?

If the mysterious young master had indeed reached the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm, the shock would be even greater. It was surmised that even the governing body of the First Central Empire would need to send masters for investigation.

If this youngster was fully developed, it would be another hundred years before he could be matched.

Compared to the young master, Zhang Ruochen defeating Yan Qingwu was not worth mentioning. That's why his news had been published on the last page.

Even though it was on the last page, it still caused a massive commotion in Omen Ridge.

It had been years since a warrior from Omen Ridge had entered the top thousand of the Earth Board. Never mind the fact that Zhang Ruochen had reached the top 100. It was definitely a glorious achievement for Omen Ridge.

The latest issues of both the Eastern Region Report and the Earth Board had been selling like crazy. People were queuing up outside the Martial Market Bank wanting to purchase it.

It was a massive honor to be published in the Eastern Region Report.

“Have you read the latest Eastern Region Report? Zhang Ruochen, the Ninth Prince of the Yunwu Commandery is published in it!”

“Are you serious? When did Omen Ridge nurture such a popular person?”

“Amazing, isn't it? Zhang Ruochen defeated the top-ranked genius of the Yan Family and entered the top 100 of the Earth Board. He is the most outstanding warrior from Omen Ridge after Luo Xu.”

“He has brought so much glory to Omen Ridge! I need to buy a copy!”

...

People from every city in Omen Ridge were discussing Zhang Ruochen.

This youngster who had once been just slightly popular was now known by every single person in Omen Ridge.

The warriors of Yunwu Commandery were even crazier. They had bought every copy of both publications from the Martial Market Bank. Almost all the young warriors set Zhang Ruochen as their idol and started practicing hard.

Before the sun had even risen, a copy of the Eastern Region Report had been sent into Yunwu Commandery palace and placed in front of Yunwu Commandery Prince.

When he saw Zhang Ruochen's name in the paper, he was completely overjoyed. "I have practiced Martial Arts my entire life and I have never been published in the Eastern Region Report. My ninth son is only 18 years old and has already entered the top 100 of the Earth Board. Indeed, he did not let me down. Good, very good!"

While Yunwu Commandery Prince was praising Zhang Ruochen, the Queen was furious. "If I had known that this kid would develop to this stage... I should have killed him long ago. Now he's fully developed, even Guier is incomparable with him. No way! He has to die!"

The Queen was filled with regret. Zhang Ruochen had once been just a sickly crap in front of her. She could have killed him with one finger.

If she wanted to kill him now, it was going to be extremely difficult.

At the same time, a copy of the Eastern Region Report had been sent to Zhang Tiangui.

When he read through the part about Zhang Ruochen, his hands shook. He was so angry his pupils were on fire. He regretted that he hadn't killed him earlier when he'd had the chance. If he had known that Zhang Ruochen would develop into such an outstanding warrior, he would have killed him without any hesitation.

Zhang Ruochen had already entered the top 100 of the Earth Board, while he was still ranked thousands behind him. The glory he had once owned had all fallen on Zhang Ruochen.

How could this be?

It had only been a few months. How could this happen?

What made Zhang Tiangui even more confused was that the Master hadn't summoned him for two months. He hadn't even seen Han Qiu. Every time he had gone to find her, he had been refused.

Nothing like this had happened before.

Lin Chenyu stood behind Zhang Tiangui and stared at him with compassion, yet his eyes were cold.

Since Zhang Ruochen had fully developed, Zhang Tiangui's good days had come to an end.

"Zhang Tiangui has probably lost all foothold in both the Yunwu Commandery and Yuntai Suzerain." Lin Chenyu smiled coldly.

Zhang Tiangui tried his best to stay calm. "Lin Chenyu, do you know who the Master and junior sister apprentice Han have been in touch with? Why have their attitudes toward me changed so drastically?"

Lin Chenyu walked toward Zhang Tiangui and responded with courtesy, "Master, I heard that Elder Sister Han sent people to Yunwu Commandery and investigated you."

Zhang Tiangui stood up suddenly and narrowed his eyes. "How long ago?"

"Last time Elder Sister Han came back... Oh, I remember. Before she came back, she confronted the assassins of the black market and Square Commandery with Zhang Ruochen. I'm guessing he said something to her behind your back," said Lin Chenyu.

Zhang Tiangui grasped his fists tight. His look was enough to make one's blood run cold. "Zhang Ruochen again!"

Lin Chenyu looked down and said carefully, "I also heard that Elder Sister Han had feelings for Zhang Ruochen and that she went to the School of the Martial three times wanting to meet Zhang Ruochen. But, Zhang Ruochen was secluding himself for refining, so she didn't see him."

Zhang Tiangui was even more shocked. He said furiously, "Why didn't you tell me this earlier?"

A woman's voice let out outside his mansion, "I asked him not to tell you."

Han Qiu appeared carrying a white jade fighting sword.

Lin Chenyu retreated a few steps backward and escaped from the room.

The fact that he had betrayed Zhang Tiangui had been revealed. Of course, he had to leave immediately and wait patiently for what would happen next.

It was obvious that Han Qiu couldn't help but take action against Zhang Tiangui. With her current ability, she was now the stronger one. Moreover, she was the daughter of the Master. Zhang Tiangui had no leverage to fight with her.

Zhang Tiangui realized that something had happened.

He let out a long laugh. "Zhang Ruochen and Lin Chenyu. Indeed I underestimated them. Junior sister apprentice, do you believe what they told you?"

Han Qiu held the white jade sword and stood five steps away from Zhang Tiangui. She said, "Why wouldn't I? To be honest, my elder brother, you have always been my role model. Unfortunately, what you've done is not role-model worthy."

"What did Zhang Ruochen say to you?" Zhang Tiangui questioned.

"Zhang Ruochen didn't say anything. It was the results brought back from the people I sent for investigation." Han Qiu continued, "You snatched the woman your brother loved, and you even wanted to assassinate your own brother?! What a character you are. I really doubt if there is still any humanity in you!"

"Haha! Junior sister apprentice, since you've said all this, I have nothing to say."

Zhang Tiangui laughed and asked, "So there's no place for me to stay in the Yuntai Suzerain?"

“You haven’t done anything unfavorable to our suzerain. Why would you think there’s no place for you in the Yuntai Suzerain?” Han Qiu claimed.

Zhang Tiangui responded, “Well, since you and the Master believe the words of a scoundrel, you’ve started keeping a lookout on me and you see me as a villain who would do anything at any costs, I guess I won’t be learning any more advanced Martial Arts techniques at the Yuntai Suzerain. What’s the point of staying here? Don’t you worry. I’ll leave the Yuntai Suzerain; I won’t put the two of you in a difficult situation.”

Zhang Tiangui didn’t stop to get anything from his room. He walked passed Han Qiu, went down the long stone steps and left the Yuntai Suzerain through the mountain door.

He glanced back with a cold gaze and thought to himself, “Han Qiu, Yuntai Suzerain, you are going to regret letting me go today!”

He had pretended to be grieved in front of Han Qiu as he was hoping to get sympathy from her.

This was his only way to leave the Yuntai Suzerain alive.

Otherwise, today he would have died.

charlesjhade charlesjhade more please

# Chapter 302 - The Mysterious Master

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Lin Chenyu followed and stood behind Han Qiu. He watched Zhang Tiangui leave with murderous intent flashing in his eyes. He said, "Elder sister Han, if you don't kill Zhang Tiangui, there will be no end to your trouble in the future."

Han Qiu's eyes revealed a slight struggle. She sighed. "I know, but after all he is the elder brother in Yuntai Suzerain, and he hasn't done anything bad to the Suzerain. If I killed him, I would be neither virtuous nor righteous."

"You should have at least destroyed his cultivation and broken his meridians..." Lin Chenyu said.

"Don't say anything further. Just let him go! After all, he was once a member of Yuntai Suzerain and our eldest brother," Han Qiu said.

Lin Chenyu was disappointed. "How indecisive women are! But even if Han Qiu can't bear to do it, the Master is a man with the means. He will never set a tiger free to roam the mountains. It will not be easy for Zhang Tiangui to leave Yuntai Suzerain."

Zhang Tiangui quickly executed his fastest technique to fly through the woods, hoping to leave Omen Ridge as soon as possible.

"Lin Chenyu, how dare you betray me? You just wait and see. I will exterminate your whole family."

Zhang Tiangui was very angry. With his talent, he could have married Han Qiu and even become the future master of Yuntai



Suzerain.

The Master had even promised that as long as he reached the fish-dragon realm, he could marry Han Qiu. The honor of being Master would be passed to Han Qiu.

Han Qiu would have been the Master and Zhang Tiangui would have been the Second Master.

Han Li had intended to let him help Han Qiu carry Yuntai Suzerain forward.

However, because of Zhang Ruochen and Lin Chenyu, he had to leave Yuntai Suzerain. He would not have the chance to become the Second Master nor the opportunity to practice the Holy Universe Reaching Skill

.

He was like a stray dog now.

The world was so big. Where should he go?

“Shing!”

All of a sudden, there was a slight sound of breeze.

“Who goes there?”

Zhang Tiangui was highly alert. He stopped at once and looked towards the woods.

However, he could see nothing but trees, vines, moss, and rocks.

He seemed to feel something and turned around immediately.

Behind him, was a bearded elder who was likely in his 80s.

The bearded elder was skinny and haggard. He stood still in the forest like a mummy. His hands were shaped like eagle claws with ten sharp fingernails like trenchant edges.

Zhang Tiangui knew that the old man was a servant named Han Jingzhong. He always followed Han Li and was a master of martial arts. His cultivation was unfathomable.

“Oh, uncle Zhong. I knew that the Master wouldn’t allow me to leave alive.” Zhang Tiangui clasped his hands and

mobilized the Genuine Qi throughout his body.

With no hesitation, Zhang Tiangui seized the initiative to make an attack. He punched towards Han Jingzhong's abdomen.

“Tiger-intruding Fist.”

The Genuine Qi formed ripples around Zhang Tiangui's wrist. It sounded like the roar of a tiger.

“Grrrr!”

Zhang Tiangui was highly gifted, and his all-out punch was very powerful. It shook the trees nearby and leaves fell one by one.

Han Jingzhong stood still like a dry pine. His smile was as ferocious as a ghost. He raised his shriveled palm lightly.

His palm seemed to move slowly but left a weird mark in the void space.

“Clap!”

Han Jingzhong's palm collided against Zhang Tiangui's fist. He folded his fingers and easily caught Zhang Tiangui's fist. His long fingernails penetrated straight into Zhang Tiangui's flesh.

He twisted his arm.

With a popping sound, Zhang Tiangui's arm snapped. He was thrown back and rotated 360 degrees in the air.

“Bang!”

Zhang Tiangui fell to the ground on one knee. He felt an acute pain in his arm and his facial muscles were cramping.

“You think you're the top prodigy in Omen Ridge? Do you think you're invincible? In my eyes, you are still too young.”

Han Jingzhong's voice was like gravel. He laughed grimly.

One leg forward and one back, Zhang Tiangui was like a fierce tiger on the ground. He stared coldly at Han Jingzhong and waited for the next attack. He knew it would be even more fierce.

However, unexpectedly, Han Jingzhong didn't launch any further attack but said slowly, "Zhang Tiangui, do you know why the Master can't tolerate you and must eliminate you?"

"Because of my misconduct?" Zhang Tiangui said.

Han Jingzhong laughed, "What matters in the dog-eat-dog martial world is means. How many people actually conduct themselves well?"

"Then why?" asked Zhang Tiangui.

Han Jingzhong said, "Don't you know that two tigers can't live on one mountain? Before, your talents were much higher than Han Qiu. Of course, the Master eagerly wanted to marry Han Qiu to you and let you stay in Yuntai Suzerain. Thus, the power of Yuntai Suzerain would expand. But now it is different. Han Qiu has passed the fourth-floor of Jiuju Tower. She is as gifted as you. If the two of you have the same power, who should be the future master of Yuntai Suzerain?"

Zhang Tiangui said, "If we are equal, neither of us would surrender to the other. In the future, I must fight with Han Qiu. Either I or Han Qiu will die and there is no other possibility. That's why the Master chose to kill me. To protect his daughter. Funny!"

"Uncle Zhong, the Master has sent you to kill me. Why are you not attacking me?"

Han Jingzhong smiled coldly. "If I wanted to kill you, you'd be dead on the first move! Zhang Tiangui, you are a prodigy, a man with means and ambition. I think highly of you."

"What do you mean?" Zhang Tiangui asked, confused.

Han Jingzhong waved his hands and turned to leave. He said, "Neither Yuntai Suzerain nor Yunwu Commandery has room for you. You only have one way, which is to follow me. I will introduce you to someone and perhaps he can help you."

Zhang Tiangui endured the pain in his arms and looked at Han Jingzhong's hunched figure. "Who on earth are you?"

"Just follow me and no more nonsense." Han Jingzhong said coldly.

Zhang Tiangui didn't have any choice. He had to follow him.

Omen Ridge, as vast as a sea of forests, had turbulent rivers, wide lakes, and towering mountains.

When traveling through the forests, people got lost easily.

It was hard to know how far they had gone when Han Jingzhong led him to a military camp built in the dense jungle. The roar of savage beasts and the sound of military training could be heard far off in the distance.

Standing on the branch of an ancient tree, Han Jingzhong was as light as a feather. Folding his hands behind his back, he glanced into the distance and said, "In front of us is the camp of the Barbarian Elephant Army. It is the strongest military training center in the Square Commandery.

Zhang Tiangui said, "Isn't Square Commandery sanctioned? I thought they don't exist anymore?!"

Han Jingzhong laughed coldly. "The royal family of the Square Commandery has many masters. There are more than 20 warriors who have reached the Heaven Realm. Before the sanction paper from East Region Saint Mansions was handed out, they had already withdrawn and hidden in the training center concealed in Omen Ridge. You should clearly know that you and they share one enemy- Zhang Ruochen."

Zhang Tiangui asked, "Are you from the Square Commandery?"

"Square Commandery? Funny!" Han Jingzhong laughed disdainfully. "The royal members of Square Commandery are stray cats like you."

Suddenly, a cold wind blew.

"Swish!"

A red ray of light flashed in void space and flew through the dense forests.

Zhang Tiangui's eyes tightened and he shouted, "Who?"

Suddenly, Spiritual Qi surged and formed ripples in the void space. From the center of these ripples, a red hand with long

soft fingers stretched out, emitting crimson mist.

“Swoosh!”

The red hand displayed hundreds of phantoms and attacked Zhang Tiangui.

Han Jingzhong stepped onto the deadwood and rushed in front of him, striking out with two hands.

“Boom!”

Like eagle claws, his palms had a metal luster formed from a vast and mighty strength.

Han Jingzhong struck out with hundreds of palms, forming a wall of palm prints.

“Bang! Bang!”

In a mere second, Han Jingzhong struck against the red hand hundreds of times.

All of a sudden, Han Jingzhong was hit in the chest. He flew back and crashed into a huge rock with a giant crack!

A beautiful woman in red suddenly appeared from above. Her legs were slim, and her figure was curvy. She had a charming face and long hair as red as blood.

An eerie red light surrounded her body. As she landed on the ground, even the mud turned crimson.

Seeing her, Han Jingzhong knelt down on his knees. Fearfully, he said, “Red Wish Emissary.”

Han Jingzhong gave Zhang Tiangui a glare signaling him to do the same.

Zhang Tiangui felt terror spreading from the woman. His heart chilled and he immediately knelt on the ground with his face nearly buried in the mud.

“Han Jingzhong, why have you brought a stranger here? Are you forgetting the young master’s rules?”

Her voice was very fascinating, it seemed to carry both a smile and a chill.

Han Jingzhong said reverently, “I dare not forget the rules, but he is a rare talent. I want to recommend him to the young master.

“Talent?”

Red Wish Emissary carefully sized Zhang Tiangui up. She smiled. “Han Jingzhong, you should know that in black market excellence hall, talent is everywhere.”

“Taat taat!”

A handsome man in a purple gown appeared from the forest.

He carried a dragonhead long spear on his back and his face was cold. He said, “Red Wish, Han Jingzhong, the meeting has begun. Young master let me take you.”

“Purple Wind Emissary.”

Han Jingzhong bowed to the man and stood up straight.

Zhang Tiangui was bewildered. “Why are there so many top warriors appearing in Omen Ridge?”

Han Jingzhong alone, was an unfathomable old geezer. Even the Master of Yuntai Suzerain didn’t know his true strength.

What’s more, who was this siren in red and who was the man in purple? And who was the young master they mentioned?

Their martial cultivation seemed to be stronger than Han Jingzhong.

Zhang Tiangui’s was confused.

At the same time, he was excited. “If I follow them, perhaps my strength could be enhanced. Then, I will not need to worry about how to defeat Zhang Ruochen or destroy Yuntai Suzerain.”

# Chapter 303 - Di Yi

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

With looks of awe, Han Jingzhong and Zhang Tiangui bowed their heads and followed the Red Wish Emissary and the Purple Wind Emissary into the camp.

This was a vast military camp established amid the mountains as well as a training base for the Barbarian Elephant Army, the strongest army of the Square Commandery.

There were horse farms, places for martial arts, and camps exclusively for training savage beasts.

There were only 3,000 soldiers in the base, but even the most inferior among them had a martial cultivation in the Dawn State of the Earth Realm. Outside of the camp, they were all powerful practitioners of martial arts.

All of their mounts were Brute Elephants.

A four-armed Brute Elephant was an inferior savage beast.

Although they were the weakest, who could defend against a charge of 3,000 Brute Elephants?

Even the martial arts legends in the Heaven Realm would be crushed.

Possession of an army this strong was sufficient to sweep across all the 36 commanderies in Omen Ridge.

Such a Barbarian Elephant Army required a massive amount of Spiritual Crystals to fund as well as all the possible masters. However, the royal family in the Square Commandery did not have the funds for such an army, and they also did not have the popularity to attract so many masters.

So, the army did not belong to the Square Commandery, but to a big shot in the Black Market.

At the moment, the big shot was sitting at the head position in the main tent.

The man wore gold-rimmed Darksteel Armor and a gold-iron mask, and his hands peeking out of his sleeves were white and delicate. It was clear that he was young.

However, it was a young man such as this whose body emitted a strong sense of cold.

Besides him, 10 other Martial Arts Masters sat within the tent: the Commandery Prince of the Square Commandery, the leader of the Hades Department, the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club, and the Mansion Master of Rosefinch Tower...

Almost all the powers of the Black Market were present. Each of them had a reputation that would terrify anyone who heard it.

Of course, aside from them, there were other young talents who had no right to sit, standing off to the side. Among them were seven young masters from the Black Market and a few newly promoted young evil warriors.

A thin man stood amid these ruthless people. Wearing grey linen clothes, he leaned against the wall with an iron sword in hand, and a whiff of dead air emanated from him as if he had no emotions.

If Zhang Ruochen was here, he would recognize the man as the deadly swordsman who was determined to join the Black Market, Le.

Nevertheless, he had already become one of the best young killers in the Hades Department. He could kill a warrior in the Heaven Realm while his cultivation was in the Earth Realm, and thus, he was highly regarded by the Overseer of Hell.

In the Hades Department, his strength had already surpassed its young master, "Zi Yinyang".



But, Le was so solitary that he barely talked to anyone—he was just like a human-shaped stone.

In addition, another two young warriors of the Hades Department were in the tent. They were Zi Yinyang and Zi Qian. Their status dictated that they could only stand in the corner.

Only breathing sounds could be heard in the tent. The atmosphere was very tense.

The iron-masked man sitting at the head said in his husky tone, “I’m disappointed that the Black Market has been oppressed by the Martial Market Bank and the Moon Worship Demonic Sect and left without room to move. This is not like us.

“The Poisonous Spider Club, with over 10 martial arts legends in the Heaven Realm, is the biggest club of the Black Market in Omen Ridge, whose power has stretched out through the 36 commanderies. Chairman Hua, what is your opinion on this issue?”

Hua Qingye, the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club, was so shocked that he broke out in a cold sweat and his legs trembled as if he had been summoned by death.

He was over 100 years old and his martial cultivation had reached the Fish-dragon Realm, already beyond the realm of mortals. But before that mysterious man, a feeling of immense dread pounded in his heart.

He stood trembling and saluted to the man, saying, “Young master, the situation in Omen Ridge is very complicated. Not only the Martial Market Bank and the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, but all powers are formidable, such as the Tai Qing Palace and the Yuntai Suzerain. They are both four-class Suzerains with Half-Saints that cannot be ignored. Moreover...”

“Boom!”

The man in iron mask hit the table and sneered, saying, “If such is the case, what’s the point of keeping you alive?”

The Red Wish Emissary and the Purple Wind Emissary both stood behind him—the former wearing a red cloth and was sexy and enchanting; the latter wearing a purple gown with a dragon pattern and was handsome and powerful.

After hearing the man, the Red Wish Emissary and the Purple Wind Emissary immediately understood. They stared coldly at Hua Qingye.

“Chairman Hua, if you can dodge one of my blows, you will not die.”

The man wearing purple, the Purple Wind Emissary, carried a dragonhead iron spear, and rushed toward Hua Qingye. He appeared before him in a flash.

He squeezed his five fingers into a palm-knife and struck toward the chief chairman’s left shoulder in a streak of purple light.

The Purple Wind Emissary’s power was precisely controlled and not a single strand of Genuine Qi escaped.

As the Poisonous Spider Club’s chief chairman, Hua Qingye was also a powerful master. Twisting his body and pushing up with his legs, he tried to retreat rapidly.

But a sharp pain came from his shoulder before he could move.

“Shunk!”

Hua Qingye’s left arm was sliced off by the purple-tinted machete force and landed on the ground.

Blood spurted from his shoulder and the whole tent was filled with the strong scent of blood.

The Purple Wind Emissary glanced at Hua Qingye but did not attack him again. He retreated back and said, “Since you were able to dodge my blow, you won’t have to die. But you should know that I only used one-tenth of my cultivation. If I used my full strength, not even a bone of yours would remain.”

“Thank you, Purple Wind Emissary. Thank you, young master!”

At once, Hua Qingye knelt on the ground, constantly kowtowing to the iron-masked man.

All the men in the tent swallowed and felt even more afraid.

Hua Qingye was an immensely powerful warrior who had already surpassed the Heaven Realm, yet he lost his left arm to the purple-robed man. How powerful was that purple-robed man?

He looked to be around 20 years old. Even if a warrior could slow down aging, he could be no older than 50.

It was terrifying that he could reach such heights before turning 50.

The man in the metal mask said, “You don’t have to be afraid of me. We’re all working for the Black Market, so we should cooperate. Maybe you are still ignorant of my identity, so I will introduce myself first. I am the top master in the Eastern Region Black Market Excellence Hall, you can call me... Di Yi. If you have read this issue of the Eastern Region Report, you probably know me. It was me that defeat Bu Qianfan in three strikes.

“Although I just have reached the Earth Realm, I hope you won’t underestimate me, or else it will not be as simple as losing an arm!”

The man named Di Yi smiled and continued, “There are two main reasons for my visit this time to Omen Ridge. First, the Black Market must completely control Omen Ridge. Regardless of the Martial Market Bank, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, or other local forces, all must be subject to the Black Market.

“Second, I will find the legendary Dragon Sarira and hope that you all can help me.”

The Square Commandery Prince asked carefully, “Young master, what is the Dragon Sarira?”

Di Yi answered, “800 years ago, there were nine top powers in Kunlun’s Field, called the Nine Emperors. Among them was a man who cultivated as a Buddha and was called ‘Buddhist Emperor’.

“In order to unify the world, Empress Chi Yao had to march into the Western Region and suppress one of the three ‘Thousand Buddhas Sects’. As the prophet of Brahma, Buddhist Emperor inevitably had to fight against her at that time.

“As recorded in the historical records, Empress Chi Yao won the battle. She suppressed the Western Region and defeated the leader of Buddhism, the Thousand Buddhas Sect.

“After Buddhist Emperor’s death, the Sarira left behind was swallowed by his mount, Golden Dragon.

“Golden Dragon escaped as Empress Chi Yao was hurt. And later, Empress Chi Yao sent warriors to kill it and loot the Sarira. Empress Chi Yao didn’t expect that Golden Dragon had refined the Sarira into a Dragon Sarira. Its cultivation had also increased and destroyed everyone that Empress Chi Yao had sent.

“Although all of the enemies were killed, it was badly hurt and eventually died as it escaped. Since then, the Dragon Sarira vanished.

“I searched through all the ancient books in the Black Market Excellence Hall and finally found something in one of them.

“At that time, Empress Chi Yao’s power was at her peak. After sweeping away the Nine Emperors, she was completely unopposed. After Golden Dragon was hurt, it ran away to the bleak Eastern Region. In the Eastern Region, Golden Dragon had a junior, the old overlord in Omen Ridge, Four-winged Earth Dragon.

“I guess that the badly wounded Golden Dragon died right in Omen Ridge.

“Four-winged Earth Dragon had two caves—one in the Chikong Secret Mansion of Omen Ridge, the other in the Dragon Palace at the bottom of the Tongming River.

“The war 500 years ago destroyed the Chikong Secret Mansion. The Dragon Sarira was probably taken by someone if it existed there. However, the Underwater Dragon Palace

still has its mysteries. If Four-winged Earth Dragon had the Dragon Sarira, it would hide it in the palace.”

Those heretics of the Black Market were excited after listening to Di Yi.

The Sarira of the legendary Buddhist Emperor was possibly in Omen Ridge, how could there be anything more exciting?

Owning the Sarira meant owning the inheritance of Buddhist Emperor.

Of course, they did not dare to get the Dragon Sarira. It belonged to Di Yi. But, if they helped Di Yi to retrieve it, they would have done a great deed.

# Chapter 304 - Tongming River

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Square Commandery Prince's expression was somewhat unnatural. Carefully, he asked again, "Are you going to Underwater Dragon Palace?"

"Do you have a problem with it?"

Di Yi looked at him. His eyes were like two sharp swords.

Somehow, Square Commandery Prince's martial cultivation was obviously above Di Yi's. She was over-awed by Di Yi's eyes. She was slightly shocked. "Underwater Dragon Palace is a very dangerous place. Only warriors at the Heaven Realm can enter it. What if you meet danger?"

Di Yi smiled, "It is precisely because Underwater Dragon Palace is a very dangerous place, that I have invited you all here. I need a 1,000 warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm to come with me. I believe that all of you can help me with that."

They hesitated and looked at Hua Qingye, who had lost an arm. They all replied in one voice, "We will help you find a thousand Completion of the Earth Realm warriors within three days."

Zhang Tiangui who had been standing in the corner instantly knelt down one knee. "I would like to follow the young master and go to Underwater Dragon Palace."

Di Yi looked at Zhang Tiangui plainly like he could see right through him. He grinned. "Are you a four tricks genius? It is quite amazing to have a four tricks genius in Omen Ridge."

Omen Ridge was after all a small place and its cultivation practice was relatively low. If the practice of cultivation was low, then the starting point was lower than others.

And, the practice resources in Omen Ridge were also lower. So not only was the starting point lower than others', but the practice environment, the pills and masters who taught them martial arts were far behind that of others as well.

And under these condition, Zhang Tiangui had been able to become a four tricks genius in the Earth Realm. His talent was indeed incredible.

The Earth Realm was just a stage of refining the body. The bones hadn't been fixed yet. In the Heaven Realm and the Fish-dragon Realm, there was still a lot of room for improvement. If a four tricks genius could enter a perfect practice environment and get the best training, he could become a six or even seven tricks genius.

Like Luo Xu, he had been a two tricks genius and eventually in the end became a seven tricks genius.

On the path of practice, your growth potential was not fixed at the very beginning. As long as you worked hard, and the right opportunities came along, your future achievements were unpredictable.

Of course, if you laid down a solid foundation and moved forward step by step, your martial arts path would be much smoother, more solid and easier than others'.

After all, only one out of every hundred thousand warriors would become a top master later on in life. However, one in ten young warriors had the chance of becoming a top one master through honest accumulation.

Certainly, Di Yi was the latter, and Zhang Tiangui was the former.

It was 10,000 times harder for Zhang Tiangui to become a top master than Di Yi. Maybe he would be one of the 9,999 losers. Not everyone could become a miracle.

At this moment, an old man wearing a bamboo hat and grey cloak came into the tent. He walked towards Hua Qingye,

chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club and spoke to him in a low voice.

Hearing the old man's words, Hua Qingye's expression changed slightly. He looked like he wanted to kill someone.

Di Yi's ears moved. He asked, "Chairman Hua, what's going on?"

"Just a small thing. It doesn't concern you," Hua Qingye said.

"Big things are made up of many small things. Isn't a grand person actually a small one who has stepped up?" Di Yi said.

"It really is a small thing," Hua Qingye said. "Our undercover person in the black market of Devil Martial City just found out that Zhang Ruochen has left Devil Martial City."

"Zhang Ruochen? Who is Zhang Ruochen?" Di Yi asked.

"Zhang Ruochen is the top master among the younger generation in Omen Ridge," the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club replied. "He is in this month's edition of the

Eastern Region Report

together with you. However, you are on the front page and he is mentioned in a small section on the second last page."

"It is a small thing." Di Yi smiled.

He was just a talent in Omen Ridge. Di Yi certainly wouldn't care about him.

Square Commandery Prince stood up suddenly with an angry expression. "Young Master, Zhang Ruochen is our black market's enemy. He has killed several of the Black Market's warriors of the Heaven Realm. It is because of him, that our identity as the Royal Family of Square Commandery was exposed and we suffered the sanction from the East Region Saint Mansions. We must kill him, otherwise, he will be a huge enemy to the black market in the future."

Di Yi obviously did not care about Zhang Ruochen. He said, "All right! If you want to get rid of Zhang Ruochen, then I leave it to you to handle. Don't tell me that with the strength



of the Royal Family of Square Commandery, it can't kill a young genius.”

Di Yi's approval made Square Commandery Prince very happy. “If Zhang Ruochen had stayed in the Devil Martial City, we might have left him alone. But since he is out, I will cut him to pieces.”

Zhang Tiangui said, “I would like to give you a hand.”

“It seems that Zhang Ruochen has made lots of enemies in the black market. You can go if you want. But never leak the information. If anyone dares to inform others about Dragon Sarira, don't blame me for being impolite,” Di Yi said coldly.

They all felt chills in their spines and showed inexplicable awe.

In the entire tent, only Le and Zi Qian showed a glimmer of strange light in their eyes.

...

...

In order to cover up the story, Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong and Chen Xier left the town separately. They had decided to meet again at Tongming River.

When he left the town, Zhang Ruochen felt like he was being followed by more than one group of people.

He thought, “Just as I expected, someone suspects that I am going to the ancient cave from medieval times to dig up the treasure. I have to ditch them. I can't let them follow me to Underwater Dragon Palace of Tongming River.”

Zhang Ruochen grinned. He rode a savage beast with the Ancient Abyss Sword on his back. Suddenly, he sped up and rushed into a thick forest.

“Woosh!”

The warriors following him quickly unleashed their body movements and chased him into the woods.

But upon entering the forest, all they saw was a savage beast; they could not see Zhang Ruochen anywhere.

“Where is he?”

“The whole forest is sealed, but he is nowhere to be found. Can Zhang Ruochen disappear into the ground?”

“Keep looking, we have to find him.”

30 kilometers away, the void space twisted slightly. It was like a circle of ripples.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the circle of half transparent ripples. He looked back and continued walking.

As long as he was a master of space warps power, he could easily ditch followers.

Four days later, Zhang Ruochen was sitting in a small boat on the surface of Tongming River.

He sat with his legs crossed, practicing Five Strike Technique. This technique had yin-cold nature and belonged to the Sword Ripple of Ten Channels. The Five Strike Technique was in his right hand.

Zhang Ruochen drew characters in the air with his right fingers, forming streaks of Genuine Qi light.

“Tongming River is indeed an extremely cold place. It is perfect for practicing Sword Wave,” he said to himself.

The little boat sailed downward with the current and was very stable.

Tongming River was an ancient river that stretched a hundred thousand kilometers. It ran through 42 commanderies. The river was wide, and its flow was slow. You couldn't see its end; it was like an ocean.

If Omen Ridge was home to land savage beasts, then Tongming River was home to water savage beasts.

Empress Chi Yao had sat on the throne for 500 years. The national power was getting stronger and more prosperous.

Saints came forth in large numbers and practicing the Martial Arts had become very popular. Any land savage beasts who dared to fight with humans had been eradicated. In the whole Kunlun's Field, humans were the most respected and all the beasts were hibernating.

Humans had never been so powerful that they controlled almost all the beasts. Anything that dared to fight against a human was looking for death.

Now, in all of Kunlun's Field, with the exception of the wild place in the north, only the water beasts would dare to fight humans.

Tongming River was certainly home to many savage beasts. There were 10 times more here than in Omen Ridge.

The danger of an aquatic savage beast was no less than that of a land savage beast. They made trouble all the year round and destroyed human villages and towns along the river.

Especially the Death Section of Tongming River, it was a forbidden area for humans. Man would die if he or she came near.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen on his little boat was sailing straight toward the Death Section.

He had an arrangement with Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Chen Xier, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi that they would meet at the Death City, the only human city in the Death Section of the river.

Suddenly, large waves churned up on the water's once calm surface.

The waves were more than 10 meters high. They were like water walls wanting to push the little boat into the sky. At the same time, the wind was blowing hard like a tornado. There was whistling sound.

“Awoo!”

Savage beasts began to cry and growl. Their voices could be heard hundreds of kilometers away. Even the clouds in the sky cleared away with the sound of their voices.

A giant black shadow lurched out of the water, exposing fierce scales. Each scale was the size of a palm.

“Bam!”

The water flow surged, beating the boat fiercely.

The little boat was torn apart instantly turning to sawdust.

“SHING!”

Zhang Ruochen morphed into a white light and leaped into the sky. He applied Genuine Qi into his legs and stopped for a minute in the sky. Then he leaped higher, reaching a spot more than 30 meters above the water’s surface.

A giant black skull shot out of the water and opened its mouth. It wanted to swallow Zhang Ruochen in one bite.

It was a class four medium level savage beast, the Black-wind Anaconda.

The Black-wind Anaconda was an overlord in the water. It could come and go freely in the water, and also control hurricanes. It could make the strong wind blow and cause giant waves.

If it was angry, villagers who lived within hundreds of kilometers along the river would suffer.

Zhang Ruochen pinched his middle finger and forefinger together. The Heart of the Sword of Qi pool on his glabella lit up instantly and formed into a force of Sword Comprehension.

“Whew!”

The Ancient Abyss Sword let out a cry and flew out from his back. Like a dragon, it flew into the Black-wind Anaconda’s mouth. There was a “whish” sound.

# Chapter 305 - Here Comes A Strong Enemy

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Ancient Abyss Sword was very sharp. It pierced the Blackwind Python's Celestial Bodyshield instantly. It passed through its teeth and tongue and flew into its stomach.

The Blackwind Python felt the pain, and its body rolled drastically. A strange howling sound came out from its mouth.

Forces of wind nature Genuine Qi flew out from its body turning into wind blades that flew in every direction.

The waves on the water's surface became even more turbulent.

Zhang Ruochen stood calmly in the middle of the storm. He seemed quite tranquil.

“Woosh!”

Under Zhang Ruochen's control, the Ancient Abyss Sword sliced the Python's internal organs. It came out covered in blood and landed in his hand.

“Boom!”

The Blackwind Python's body dropped down heavily with a series of giant splashes.

A moment later, its giant body floated to the surface. It was more than 70 meters long. Its sturdy body was scary, ferocious and rugged. Every one of its scales seemed to be made of iron, reflecting light like metal.

The water was dyed crimson and emanated a strong stench of blood.

If Zhang Ruochen had not had the Ancient Abyss Sword and reached the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, killing the Blackwind Python would not have been an easy task.

Its scales were not ordinary Genuine Martial Arms; they could not be broken.

This class four medium level savage beast had finally died under Zhang Ruochen's sword. From then on, the water within a hundred kilometers of this area would be much calmer.

Zhang Ruochen's toes dipped onto the water's surface. He flew up, as light as a swallow. He flew a hundred meters away and gently landed on the Blackwind Python's body.

Its body was full of treasures, like snakeskin which could be made into soft armor.

Snake teeth could be made into a poisonous soldier.

Even its blood and meat could be eaten once it was processed. This could improve a warrior's physical quality and increase their resistance to poison.

However, for Zhang Ruochen, although Blackwind Python's skin, teeth, and meat were good stuff, he had no interest in them.

He had several million Spiritual Crystals. Couldn't he just buy those?

The higher one's martial cultivation was and the more fortune he had, and the higher his vision was.

Of course, there was still one thing he wanted.

The snake's gallbladder.

“Chh!”

Zhang Ruochen carefully cut the snake open. He removed its colorful gallbladder and one piece of Spiritual Brawn weighing more than 100kg.

A strong aroma arose from the Spiritual Brawn. It was like a Spiritual Dose made of flesh and blood. One would feel refreshed and energetic with just one sniff.

“A class four medium level savage beast was much stronger than a class four lower level. And its Spiritual Brawn was a nourishing food.”

The Blackwind Python was pretty much like a warrior at the Advanced Stage or Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. It was certainly a formidable savage beast.

It was not just 100kg Spiritual Brawn. Its value was ten times more precious than all of the snake’s flesh and blood combined.

Even a warrior at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm would benefit greatly from it.

Zhang Ruochen cut the Spiritual Brawn into ten pieces and put them into ten separate jade containers. He put them away carefully.

His eyes lit up as he stared at the fist-sized gallbladder. He was even more excited than he’d been at the sight of the Spiritual Brawn.

The snake’s gallbladder was three colors, black, white and yellow.

Three colors. This Blackwind Python had practiced for 300 years. Its gallbladder was equivalent to a 600 year old Spiritual Dose. It was a good thing!

He put away the gallbladder, and went back to shore.

He lifted his head and looked to the sky.

The sun was setting. It was like a flame burning bright in the sky. Even the water had turned into a golden color.

“It looks like I won’t make it to the Death City today.”

Zhang Ruochen was not in a hurry. Even though he wanted to unseal Underwater Dragon Palace, he had already waited three months. What was one more night?

Tonight, I should refine the Snake Gallbladder and see how much cultivation I can get from it.

Zhang Ruochen found a concealed valley and built a fire.

He sat by the fire and took out the Gallbladder. He processed it, ate it and started to refine it.

The energy it contained was very cold. He felt like he had eaten a piece of Profound Ice. Luckily, he had refined many Icing Meridians Pills before, so he could easily withstand the stream of icy air.

He started to practice his right hand's Five Strike Technique with the help of gallbladder's yin-cold power.

“Supreme Yin Pulse Sword Wave!”

His thumb was a sword and pointed out quickly.

“Swoosh!”

The air around him became cold suddenly.

A pale blue sword wave flew out from his thumb, hitting the stone wall behind the valley with a crash. A giant hole of three meters wide was left on the stone wall. It looked like it had been hit by an aerolite.

The surrounding stone walls broke and were sealed with a layer of cold.

His left thumb's “Supreme Yin Pulse Sword Wave” had reached the Small Success Realm.

“Tr “Supreme Yin Pulse Sword Wave!” tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

Zhang Ruochen's palm kept changing and his right forefinger pointed out.

A Sword Breath flew out from his fingertip, leaving a path of ice on the ground.

“Bam!”

There was another giant hole in the stone wall. Its destructive force was pretty much the same as the one before it.

He struck out once again. This time he only used his middle, ring and baby fingers.

Three fingers struck out at the same time.

“Middle Spiritual Pulse Sword Wave.”



“Supreme Abyss Pulse Sword Wave.”

“Lesser Moon Pulse Sword Wave.”

Three Sword Breaths flew out at the same time, leaving three more giant gaping holes in the remote stone wall.

Two of the holes were the same size as the former ones. The destructive force of Lesser Meridian Strike had made a smaller hole just one meter in diameter.

The Blackwind Python’s gallbladder was indeed good stuff. It had aided him in practicing Supreme Yin Pulse Sword Wave, Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave, Middle Spiritual Pulse Sword Wave, and Supreme Abyss Pulse Sword Wave to the level of Small Success. Only Lesser Moon Pulse Sword Wave was still at the Beginner level.

Zhang Ruochen was still very satisfied. Before coming to Tongming River, he had never thought that he could practice four Sword Waves to the level of Small Success in such a short time.

With his Sword Wave reaching the level of Small Success, his power increased several times over.

Zhang Ruochen felt that his martial cultivation had improved a lot. It was close to the peak of the Final State of the Earth Realm.

In addition, even his eyesight, hearing and Spiritual Power had improved slightly. His five senses became sharp, and the whole world became clearer.

At midnight, Zhang Ruochen suddenly woke up from practice. His ears moved, and he said to himself, “I am surrounded! They’ve caught up with me. I wonder who they are?”

He had heard their footsteps, breathing, and even heartbeats. Although the enemy was still far away, Zhang Ruochen already knew them very well.

The enemies were evil. A few of them had powerful cultivations, even more powerful than Zhang Ruochen’s. He could only defeat them if he used all his power.

The formidable enemies were getting closer. Zhang Ruochen was still very calm. He picked up twigs from the ground and threw them into the fire.

“Crack! Crack!”

The firewood began to crack and spark.

“Rustle!”

Thirty centimeters under the ground, a long metal whip full of sharp barbs was surging forward rapidly like a metal snake. It rushed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Three meters away, it dashed out from the underground with a “swoosh” sound. It kept spinning round with barbs as it moved toward Zhang Ruochen’s neck.

Its tip was a five-inch long spike and emanated a purple glow. Obviously, it was highly toxic.

Zhang Ruochen grinned and grabbed a tree branch with his two fingers.

Spiritual Fire Genuine Qi came out of his fingers, surrounding the tree branch. It hit the long metal whip.

“Ding!”

The tree branch with Spiritual Fire hit the long metal whip and dispersed the Genuine Qi it contained.

A moment later, the long metal whip flew out again and hit Zhang Ruochen in the back with a “swoosh” sound.

The owner of the long metal whip suddenly appeared from the darkness.

It was a woman who appeared to be around 30 years old. She wore a tightly wrapped golden armor around her chest and buttocks, exposing her long snow-white legs and waist.

She made a whining sound, like a phantom. She kept striking out the long metal whip. She applied a set of exquisite whips that completely surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

The entire valley was full of golden light.

Zhang Ruochen sat on the ground with his legs crossed. He was very elegant and comfortable. He kept striking out the tree branches, defeating the long metal whip every time.

“Whew!”

Suddenly, a fire arrow with a Phoenix Tail shot out of the darkness toward Zhang Ruochen.

In the blink of an eye, it had flown several kilometers through the valley. It was heading straight toward Zhang Ruochen’s glabella.

If an arrow could still keep its force after flying several kilometers, the owner must be a top master. He had not only amazing arm strength, but also eyesight that was much better than ordinary warriors.

Zhang Ruochen showed a serious expression in his eyes as he grabbed the hilt of the Ancient Abyss Sword.

“Swoosh!”

The ancient sword moved from its sheath and showed a brilliant sword light. It formed a crescent shaped Sword Breath with a diameter of more than ten meters in the sky.

“Bam!”

The fire arrow clashed together with the Sword Breath. With a bang, all the Spiritual Qi in the valley shook.

The Phoenix Feather Arrow was exposed instantly. It turned into a large rain of fire, firing out rapidly in all directions.

The woman holding the long metal whip stood back to avoid the impact of the fire rain.

The rain of fire certainly fell on Zhang Ruochen.

But Zhang Ruochen had a one meter shield of Genuine Qi, so the fire droplets fell to the ground and turned to iron sand.

“SHING!”

A man holding a red bow and quiver flew out from the darkness like a giant bird.

# Chapter 306 - A Waiting Trap

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The man looked tall and strong. His arms were as big as Zhang Ruochen's thighs. His muscles were like red hot steel.

“BANG!”

A loud explosion in the sky made the entire valley shake. Almost all the leaves fell from trees.

It was the sound of the Phoenix Feather Arrow. It was so fast, it exceeded the speed velocity, so the arrow arrived before it was heard.

The man could shoot an arrow at supersonic speed. His archery was excellent and very powerful.

He could kill an enemy from dozens of kilometers away.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the two men in front of him and asked, “Are you from Square Commandery?”

“Yes.”

The woman holding the long metal whip had well-developed breasts. She showed a cold expression in her eyes and said in a low voice, “I am the imperial concubine of the Square Commandery Prince, Jin Yeyun.”

“It is unusual for the Square Commandery Prince to pay so much attention to a junior such as me. He even sends out his concubine.”

Zhang Ruochen added more firewood to the fire. His expression was quite natural as he looked at the man. “Your

archery skill is quite amazing. You must be a martial arts legend from Square Commandery?”

“Young man, listen carefully! I am Yin Shan, Commander of the Ace Archer Battalion from Square Commandery.” The man holding the big red bow said with a coarse voice.

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head. “It’s a pity that Square Commandery colluded with the Black Market. It broke the First Central Dynasty’s rule and had to be eradicated!”

“You did that.”

Jin Yeyun was very angry and revealed a murderous light in her eyes, like she was going to swallow Zhang Ruochen whole.

If it were not Zhang Ruochen, she would still be the highest-ranking imperial concubine and lived comfortably. How could she come to kill a junior from far away?

Now Square Commandery no longer existed, she could only join the Black Market and live in darkness. Her glamor was gone forever.

Zhang Ruochen said coldly, “Although both of you are martial arts legends in the Heaven Realm, with your strength, it is not easy to kill me. Who else is out there? Show yourself!”

WOOSH!

A human figure appeared from the darkness and dashed into the valley at a very high speed.

“Supervisor of West Palace from Square Commandery, Cao Lin.”

An old eunuch in a green uniform landed behind Zhang Ruochen. He was wearing an official’s headgear with his long white hair tied beneath it.

“Commander of Imperial Guards from Square Commandery, Guo Shisan.”

A big bald man who was taller and stronger than Yin Shan appeared quickly on Zhang Ruochen’s left. He looked to be

2.8 meters tall. He was holding a wide heavy sword that looked like a giant metal door.

Both of his feet sunk into the ground from the weight of his combat sword.

In addition to Jin Yeyun, Yin Shan, Cao Lin and Guo Shisan, there were two more men standing in the distance.

Behind them was a team of soldiers riding brute elephants.

The brute elephant was a giant beast, close to ten meters tall. The soldiers stood on the backs of the elephants wearing heavy armor and holding long spears. They were like a team of black ghost knights.

The entire valley had turned into a death valley. The atmosphere was suppressed to its extreme.

Zhang Ruochen stood up and tightened his shirt slightly. He gazed out at the valley and said with a smile, “Square Commandery’s most powerful army, the Barbarian Elephant Army was moved in order to kill me. You think highly of me. I just want to know, who will lead the army to kill me tonight?”

An old man’s voice came from far away. “I am Jin Chuan, the tenth of the top ten masters of Square Commandery. I am under the command of the Commandery Prince to kill you. Zhang Ruochen, we have already set up nets above and snares below. You will not escape tonight. Even if you had wings you could not escape.”

“Predecessor Jin Chuan. It seems unlikely that I will escape tonight!” Zhang Ruochen said at a normal speed.

Zhang Ruochen looked calm, but in reality his heart was beating very quickly.

Jin Chuan was famous in Omen Ridge. He was rated as a top ten master in Square Commandery. His martial cultivation was unfathomable. It was said that he had practiced the Martial Soul.

Zhang Ruochen saw another shadow and felt its familiarity. “Zhang Tiangui?”

“Ninth brother, how are you?”

Zhang Tiangui took a few steps forward. He withdrew from the shadows, exposing his well-defined face. His eyebrows were bluish black and his eyes were sharp, giving him an imposing appearance.

He looked at Zhang Ruochen with pity in his eyes.

Zhang Ruochen withdrew his status. He would die for sure tonight. It was particularly sad to think about.

With his great talent, he had the opportunity to become the best in the future. But he was going to die a violent death before he was fully developed.

It was normal for Zhang Tiangui to show a merciful expression.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "You colluded with the men in Square Commandery. Aren't you afraid that Yuntai Suzerain will find out about this?"

"It is because of you that I am no longer a disciple of Yuntai Suzerain," Zhang Tiangui replied coldly. "I have officially become a member of the Black Market now."

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head, showing an understanding expression. He glanced toward the warriors of Square Commandery and asked, "Zhang Tiangui, don't you want to fight me personally?"

Zhang Tiangui stood up straight with his hands behind him like a javelin. He replied with a smile, "Ninth brother, you are now one of the top hundred masters on the Earth Board. I am afraid that I am no longer a match for you. Don't worry; I won't give you a chance to kill me."

"Don't talk nonsense with him. Kill him now."

Jin Yeyun bent her beautiful long legs slightly and shot off into the sky. She formed three graceful human shadows.

WOOSH!

The long metal whips in her hands swung out at the same time, turning into three golden spiritual snakes. They formed multiple spinning lines in the sky and attacked Zhang Ruochen in the neck, waist and legs.

The whips were like entities not phantoms.

The others couldn't see Jin Yeyun's bodily movement, but Zhang Ruochen could see it clearly.

His pupils were connecting with her Meridians. On the surface of his pupils was a thin layer of Genuine Qi. A great deal of Spiritual Fire moved around the Genuine Qi and his eyesight was greatly enhanced.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen rushed out, his body splitting into nine shadows.

The shadows drew swords from nine directions and attacked Jin Yeyun all at the same time.

"This is bad. The boy has practiced bodily movement martial techniques in the Superior class of Spiritual Stage. I'll go help her."

Guo Shisan ran over quickly, each step covering almost seven meters. He lifted the wide heavy sword above his head.

Genuine Qi poured out from his pores and formed a spherical Celestial Bodyshield with a diameter of 10 meters.

"Rainbow-cleaving Sword."

He swung his sword down heavily. Black Genuine Qi came out from the tip of his sword and turned into a illusory giant sword image ten meters long. It struck at Zhang Ruochen's nine shadows and blocked his way.

As the former Commander of Imperial Guards in Square Commandery, Guo Shisan's martial cultivation had reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. Plus, he was a top warrior and had the strength to fight in different realms. The sword he struck out with full strength was certainly unusual.

Even Yan Qingwu, who was one of the top 100 on the Earth Board was far behind compared to Guo Shisan.

The sword Qi Guo Shisan struck out was like a waterfall rushing down from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen had to withdraw his sword; his nine shadows became one again. His sword hit the back of Guo Shisan's heavy sword with a "BANG".



A terrible force spread to Zhang Ruochen's arm, causing his fingers to go numb.

“What a horrible power.”

Zhang Ruochen's heart sank. It was difficult enough to deal with Guo Shisan alone. How powerful would Jin Chuan, the top ten Master of Square Commandery be?

“You can withstand my sword. You are definitely a top 100 genius on the Earth Board. You do have ability.”

Guo Shisan chased after him, pressing harder and harder, striking out his sword at every step.

Despite Guo Shisan's huge arms and legs, his sword technique was quite good. Luckily, Zhang Ruochen's bodily movement was very flexible, otherwise he would have been killed by the sword.

“BAM!”

Guo Shisan's heavy sword missed Zhang Ruochen and hit the ground. It left a giant sword mark on the ground, more than 30 meters long, 30 meters deep and half a meter wide.

It was conceivable that if it were to strike a human body, the whole person would be smashed into pieces by the sword Qi and turned into blood fog.

WOOSH!

Jin Yeyun stood in the distance with her long metal whip. She helped Guo Shisan by constantly attacking Zhang Ruochen's legs and suppressing his bodily movement advantage.

One was near and the other was far.

One focused on his power and the other on his flexibility. They worked together perfectly. Every movement seemed to drive Zhang Ruochen closer to death.

As Zhang Ruochen withheld their attacks, he looked around seeking a way out of the valley.

Jin Chuan and Zhang Tiangui were in the mouth of the valley, in addition to the Barbarian Elephant Army. It was a dead end.

Looking to the other three sides of the valley, the old eunuch with unfathomable cultivation was standing on the left and the man holding the giant red bow was on the right.

Both of them were seemingly top-notch masters who could not be killed with two or three movements.

So, the back of the valley was the only way out.

The back was a cliff of over 333 meters in height. It was smooth and barren. Maybe this was why the masters from Square Commandery weren't sedulously guarding it.

However, Zhang Ruochen felt that something was wrong with this. Square Commandery had sent so many masters to kill him; they had set up nets above and snares below. How could they give him a way out?

Was it a dead end? Were they just deliberately giving him a way out, when actually they were waiting for him to attempt it?

Zhang Ruochen had no choice. Even though he knew that they might have set up a trap there, he had no other choice.

"No wonder the Commandery Prince wanted me to lead the team to kill Zhang Ruochen personally. This guy is indeed amazing!" Jin Chuan exclaimed. "Even though he hasn't reached the Heaven Realm, he can still resist a joint attack from Guo Shisan and Yun. How horrible will he be when he reaches the Heaven Realm? Even the top 50 warriors on the Earth Board are not that powerful!"

Zhang Tiangui smiled. "Zhang Ruochen is just pretending. Actually, he has reached his limit. Within 50 movements, Commander Guo and Concubine Jin will kill him."

Jin Chuan was a bit surprised. He could not help looking at Zhang Tiangui and thinking,

"This guy's judgement is very sharp, he can see Zhang Ruochen's strength."

In Jin Chuan's opinion, Zhang Ruochen had been put in an inferior position with Guo Shisan and Jin Yeyun's attack.

Unless he was still hiding some of his strength, he would for sure die within 50 movements.

# Chapter 307 - Endless Battles

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Phantom Lightning Whip.”

Jin Yeyun executed a Spiritual Stage whip martial technique. Genuine Qi flowed from her hands and wrapped around the metal long whip.

The metal long whip turned into threads of lightning that twisted together and flashed towards Zhang Ruochen’s waist in the dark.

“Windcatching Thirteen Swords.”

At the same time, Guo Shisan swung out 13 times in succession. Each sword stroke was like a wave that crashed one after another towards Zhang Ruochen.

The whip technique and sword Qi intertwined to form a gigantic wave of attack.

Zhang Ruochen retreated continuously, but she still managed to catch his thigh with her whip, leaving a wound.

Crackling sounds came from the wound as the blood and flesh were fried by lightning.

Fortunately, the wound was not deep and did not affect his bodily movement.

Zhang Ruochen resisted the pain in his leg and roared, “Break!”

The the Abyss Ancient Sword in his hand began to spin quickly and flew towards the metal whip.

SNAP!

The metal whip snapped in half; one half fell to the ground.

When the whip snapped, naturally its inscriptions also broke. The Genuine Martial Arms was destroyed; it had lost all of its previous power.

“How is this possible? My dragon lightning whip is made from Candle Dragon Metal and is an eighth level Genuine Martial Arms. How could he have broken it so easily?”

Jin Yeyun looked at the broken whip in her hand. She lost her focus slightly for a moment.

In that moment, Zhang Ruochen pushed off with both feet and arched into a curve. Genuine Qi flowed into his legs from his Qi Sea.

**BOOM!**

He flew into the sky like a cannonball.

His speed only began to slow slightly as he reached 70 meters. Looking down, the people on the ground appeared to be no larger than a finger.

After the initial burst of speed faded, Zhang Ruochen immediately executed the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon. Using the tiny scraps of wind power in the air, his body stopped slightly before continuing upwards.

“No! Zhang Ruochen wants to escape!” Zhang Tiangui announced.

“He can’t escape.”

Yin Shan took out three Phoenix Feather Arrows and nocked them into the giant red bow. He drew the bow to its fullest extent.

Upon closer examination, the flames were moving up and down the bow string.

The three Phoenix Feather Arrows were like three Phoenixes.

**BANG! BANG! BANG!**

As the three arrows flew out there were three ear-splitting explosions.

The power of the explosions forced Yin Shan to take three steps back.

The arrows flew faster than the speed of sound and became three streaks of fire. They formed a curve, flying towards Zhang Ruochen.

“Incredible. A man’s arrow is able to surpass the speed of sound!” Zhang Tiangui was awed.

“That is because Yin Shan’s bow itself is already very powerful,” Jin Chuan explained. “It is a ninth-level Genuine Martial Arms. The bowstring is made from the Meridians of a the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm warrior. Even without arming it, just the sound of firing an empty bow is enough to kill a flying bird.”

Guo Shisan added, “Yin Shan is publicly known as the best archer in Square Commandery. He once killed a Master of Martial Arts who was in the Heaven Realm from 50 kilometers away.”

“Zhang Ruochen will be much less agile in the air. No matter how skilled he is, he won’t be able to dodge three Phoenix Feather Arrows.”

It was at this moment that a strange thing happened right in front of their eyes.

The three Phoenix Feather Arrows turned together and flew past Zhang Ruochen before hitting the cliff nearby.

**BANG! BANG! BANG!**

Three giant booms sounded from the cliff.

Each Phoenix Feather Arrow gouged a deep hole into the cliff, causing the stone wall to shake, and dislodging giant rocks which fell to the ground below.

“How could this happen? Could it be that Zhang Ruochen has practiced the legendary Star Shift martial technique?” Zhang Tiangui narrowed his eyes and became lost in thought.

Naturally, they did not know that Zhang Ruochen had just demonstrated the power of space warps.

“Follow him!”

The four masters Guo Shisan, Jin Yeyun, Cao Lin, and Yin Shan ran together towards the stone wall and rushed to the top.

Meanwhile Jin Chuan did not appear to be in a rush. He appeared to be very relaxed. He smiled coolly, “Does Zhang Ruochen really think he can get away by climbing the cliff? He’s too naive!”

After Zhang Ruochen dodged the three Phoenix Feather Arrows, he climbed over the hundred meter high cliff and rushed into the glades.

He had just run into the glades when dozens of long spears appeared, turning the forest into a forest of spears.

WOOSH!

Above the cliff, there was an ambush from the Barbarian Elephant Army. There were 50 people and each was a master at the Dawn State of the Earth Realm.

Each of them was dressed in black armor. They rode brute elephants as large as small mountains.

The long spears they held were made from Earth Core Scorching Iron, and each weighed 1,500 kilograms. Combining that with the strength of the brute elephant’s charge, the power of each of their strikes could surpass the entire strength of a warrior at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

The power of a brute elephant was already equal to that of a warrior at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

The 50 members of the Barbarian Elephant Army stood in a row like a spear array. When they attacked at the same time it was like a rain of spears, and it forced Zhang Ruochen to back up.

PHHF!

Zhang Ruochen backed up to the edge of the cliff. If he took one more step back, he would fall into the abyss.

The four masters were running up the cliff; they were going to reach the top soon.

“There is a brute elephant spear forest ahead, and masters behind. It looks like my only option is to fly across the sky!”

The Spatial Ring on Zhang Ruochen’s finger gave out a pulse of light. He removed a fist-sized red iron ball from within the ring.

The surface of the ball was covered in scales and had many lines of inscriptions carved into it.

Zhang Ruochen injected his Genuine Qi into the iron ball and activated the inscriptions. In a flash, the scales on the surface of the iron ball fell off and enveloped Zhang Ruochen’s fingers, wrists, arms, chest, head, and legs.

**SWOOSH!**

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen’s entire body was covered in a layer of red scales and a pair of seven meter wide fins, like a pair of wings, appeared on his back.

A ninth-level Genuine Martial Arms, Flying Fish Armor.

**BAM!**

A loud boom came from the top of the cliff.

Zhang Ruochen flew up wearing the Flying Fish Armor and reached the speed velocity. In a mere moment, he had flown up into the night sky.

Yin Shan climbed to the top of the mountain and immediately nocked three Phoenix Feather Arrows to his bow.

**BANG! BANG! BANG!**

Three Phoenix Feather Arrows shot like shooting stars across the sky towards Zhang Ruochen.

After firing the three arrows, Yin Shan bent his bow and fired three more.

The six Phoenix Feather Arrows seemed to move together as one drawing six fiery paths across the sky.



Although Zhang Ruochen moved much more quickly after putting on the Flying Fish Armor, he was considerably less agile.

Using the power of space warps, he successfully dodged five Phoenix Feather Arrows but was struck in the back by the sixth.

BOOM! Zhang Ruochen felt like he had been struck by lightning. An intense pain radiated out from the center of his back; it felt like his spine had snapped.

Luckily the Flying Fish Armor blocked 70 percent of the Phoenix Feather Arrow's power. Otherwise, that one arrow would have left a bowl-sized blood hole in Zhang Ruochen.

Even so, he still lost some of his center of gravity. It seemed like he would topple to the earth.

No, he must continue on.

If he fell to the ground, he would be at their mercy!

Through sheer force of will, Zhang Rouchen clapped his hands in void space and drew on his Genuine Qi to correct his center of balance. Using the Flying Fish Armor, he flew into the distance.

"We can't let him escape!" Zhang Tiangui cried out.

"He can't escape."

Jin Chuan revealed a trace of a smile. "I have put down an inescapable net. It is not one that a junior could escape from."

In the night sky, there came a strange noise. It sounded both like the roar of a beast and the screech of an eagle.

CRASH!

Suddenly, lightning flashed, and thunder crashed in the clouds.

The shadow of a strange bird of gigantic proportions opened its wings and flew out of the clouds.

It was too dark for them to see anything clearly. They could only see that it was a giant savage bird with a wingspan that

covered half the sky and dimmed the light of the moon and stars.

Flying beneath the giant shadow, Zhang Ruochen looked like a tiny bug.

BOOM!

The giant shadow extended a claw that crackled with lightning and struck towards Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen's scalp felt numb and his entire body was freezing cold. It was as if he was being enveloped in death's embrace and could not escape.

“Oh no! I've been completely trapped by that savage bird. Its Genuine Qi has imprisoned me, and I can't escape.”

The savage bird was at least a fourth-level superior class savage beast.

When two warriors dueled, if their cultivations were too far apart, the stronger warrior would be able to trap the weaker with their Martial Arts Genuine Qi. This meant the weaker warrior did not even have a chance to escape.

Right now, Zhang Ruochen was caught in this situation.

It appeared that the giant descending claw was about to land on him.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen raised the Abyss Ancient Sword with great difficulty. He activated the inscriptions and swung the sword out.

TCH!

The Abyss Ancient Sword tore an opening into the savage bird's Genuine Qi. Zhang Ruochen seized the opportunity and burst through the opening. His body plummeted down and splashed into the ice cold Tongming River.

PHHFF!

Landing in the water, he sent up a wave meters high.

Like a fish entering the ocean, Zhang Ruochen dove into the water and swam towards the bottom of the river.

The wings on the Flying Fish Amor became two fins that sliced through the water with no resistance. Once again moving at the speed velocity, he disappeared into the dark water in a flash.

“GAAA!”

The black savage bird let out an earth-shattering cry.

The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi, affected by the savage bird’s power, created a thick bolt of lightning and sent it flashing down from the heavens onto the surface of the Tongming River.

The surface of the water was completely covered with lightning and emitted a cracking sound.

A moment later, fish, shrimp, and turtles floated to the surface of the water in a dense group. Among them there were even some Aquatic Savage Beasts’ corpses.

They had all been killed by the flash of lightning. All creatures within hundreds meters had pretty much been wiped out.

# Chapter 308 - Swordsman Vs. Swordsman

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn . This chapter is

“Pearl Thunder Bird, this is the Tongming River, the Aquatic Savage Beast’s zone. Take back your power first, lest the savage beast overlords become infuriated.”

Jin Chuan ran from the valley and stood on a raised rock by the river.

The golden-robed man looked very old. His grey hair fluttered in the wind.

Although he spoke quietly, his voice was echoed in the sky.

Above the vault of heaven, a gigantic black shadow promptly took back the power of thunderbolt. It swirled in the air and fell to the top of a small hill by the river.

From afar, it looked like a Pearl Thunder Bird. It was as big as a half-hill. Its body was like that of a black eagle, but it had a scaly neck and snake-like head.

With its snake-like head, it looked like a savage monster. No one dared to get close to it.

Zhang Tiangui arrived at the Tongming River and looked at the rolling waters. His face suddenly darkened.

Zhang Tiangui clenched both hands, releasing his envy and hate. “He ran away!”

If it were him, he would have died that night. However, Zhang Ruo Chen had gotten away successfully. This meant Zhang Ruo Chen was far stronger than him.

He was envious of Zhang Ruochen's power. The more envious he was, the more hateful he grew. He could not wait to see Zhang Ruochen get torn to pieces.

“Woosh!”

Four figures flashed. Jin Yeyun, Cao Lin, Guo Shisan and Yin Shan came from above and stood in a line. Each of them was powerful. They stood by the river like four great mountains.

“I am surprised that he could escape from our tight encirclement,” Jin Yeyun said. “If we do not kill him, he is doomed to be trouble for us.”

“Zhang Ruochen has been severely injured,” Yin Shan pointed out. “It's quite possible that he'll die in the abdomen of an Aquatic Savage Beast, even if he escapes into the Tongming River.”

Jin Chuan said, “We must never be negligent. As the Commandery Prince ordered, Zhang Ruochen is wanted dead or alive.”

“Boom!”

A group of brute elephants rushed from the forest. On each one's back was a heavily-armored soldier, holding a spear in hand.

A total of 200 people stood in a square formation. Each of them was a top-notch martial arts master.

Jin Chuan ordered, “Each takes a team of Barbarian Elephant soldiers to pursue separately along the Tongming River. Make sure to kill him while he is severely injured.”

“Please take care of yourselves. There are many strong savage beasts in these waters. It is called the ‘Forbidden Area for Humans’. Don't disturb the savage beast overlords during your chase.”

“Yes!”

Each of the four masters led 50 soldiers and disappeared into the night.

They began to track Zhang Ruochen along the upper and lower river.

A red coquettish figure suddenly flew over the water. It stopped in the mist like a ghost, but it had an enticing silhouette.

Jin Chuan and Zhang Tianguai promptly knelt down to salute in awe. “Red Wish Emissary, what brings you here?”

The Red Wish Emissary stood above the water with her jade white feet pointed. Her tiptoes made ripples in the water.

She said, “Our young master is already here. He asks me to tell you that he has found the Saintness from the Demonic Sect’s trail in Death City. It’s probably just a rumor that masters have come to the Tongming River. He asks you to be cautious; do not mess this up for him.”

“What? Why has the Saintness come here?” Jin Chuan raised his head. His face darkened.

Everyone had a natural fear of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

The Red Wish Emissary said, “The young master is looking into it. If the Moon Worship Demonic Sect knows about the Dragon Sarira, our actions in Underwater Dragon Palace might be obstructed. I heard that you were killing a so-called genius from Omen Ridge. Have you succeeded?”

“I’ve set a far-flung network, but unfortunately... That man is so sly that he ran into the Tongming River. We are tracking him now,” Jin Chuan said awkwardly.

The Red Wish Emissary laughed. “You are so useless, you cannot even deal with such trifles. I hope you can fix your problems here as soon as possible and avoid endangering our young master’s great plans.”

With this, the Red Wish Emissary turned into a red haze. She flew out and disappeared above the water.

Zhang Tianguai raised his head and looked to where the Red Wish Emissary had stood. “Predecessor Jin Chuan, who is the Red Wish Emissary? Why are you so scared of her?”

Jin Chuan stood up and flipped the dust from his knee. His eyes were full of awe. “She is one of the Seven Kills Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall. Each of the Seven Kills Emissaries is a genius of geniuses, a master of masters. You may be a top genius in Omen Ridge, but to them, you are just a small potato.”

“Really?”

Zhang Tiangui doubted that he was inferior to the so-called Seven Kills Emissary and the young master.

Someday, he would become a man of men, to be admired and awed by all people.

...

...

Zhang Ruochen swam rapidly downstream at the bottom of the river. He was wearing the Flying Fish Armor.

Without knowing how long it took, Zhang Ruochen stopped but remained underwater. He opened the internal space of the Space Spinel.

Upon entering the internal space, his Flying Fish Armor immediately disappeared and turned into a fist-sized red iron ball.

“Ahem!”

He knelt on one knee, a trail of blood dripping from his mouth.

A fierce pain shot through his back, like a fire was burning through his flesh and blood.

“Square Commandery has sent so many masters to murder me. They must be greatly shocked that I am 98th on the Earth Board and want to get rid of me.”

What was more worrisome, actually, was Zhang Tiangui, who had once been a disciple of Yuntai Suzerain. He had always erred on the side of caution.

However, he was not overly cautious now that he had joined the black market.

Zhang Ruochen knew all his secrets. How would he deal with him?

Would he murder Concubine Lin, Zhang Ruochen's mother?

Not a chance! Zhang Rouchen had to kill him. Otherwise, his mother would be in danger.

“Ahem!”

He began to cough up blood again, promptly eliminating his distracting thoughts.

He would make plans once he recovered.

He took a healing Pill and started to refine it.

After half a day, more than half of his injuries had healed.

There were two reasons for his fast recovery. First, he had reached the Advanced Stage in the Heaven Realm, because he had refined a lot of Refined Physique Elixirs over several months of practice in the Gravity Secret Practice Room.

Having a strong physical quality made it much easier to recover.

Secondly, the Genuine Qi of the Phoenix Feather Arrow's fire had been stopped by the Flying Fish Armor; it hadn't entered his body.

The hardest thing to recover from was the injury caused by Genuine Qi and Sword Breath that flowed into his body.

Take Zhang Ruochen for example. If he stabbed a warrior, there would not be only a sword cut. Sword Breath and Genuine Qi would also be injected into the warrior's body through the wound.

If the warrior failed to repel Zhang Ruochen's Sword Breath, he would die of broken meridians.

Flying Fish Armor helped ward off Genuine Qi and Sword Breath. It even dissolved seventy percent of the impact force.

Almost recovered, Zhang Ruochen left the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel and sped out of the water. He was ready to go to the Death City. He would consider the next step



once he met with Si Xingkong, Huang Yanchen, and the others.

A short time later, Zhang Ruochen felt a sudden slight Genuine Qi fluctuation from the forest.

Spiritual Qi quivered in the air causing fallen leaves to shake and swirl.

How powerful it was!

“SWOOSH!”

Zhang Ruochen changed his momentum and drew out the Ancient Abyss Sword. The sword edge radiated cold light. He called out, “Who’s there?”

“It’s me.”

A grey-robed man walked out of the forest.

He was thin and carried a rough iron sword behind his back.

As he approached, a gloomy cold breath emitted from him. It was an invisible murderous intent, but it could not be deliberately hidden.

“Le!”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the man and happily withdrew the Ancient Abyss Sword. He had not been expecting to run into his friend here.

Just like a sword, Le had an unspeakable persistence in his eyes. He would not yield to anything.

But he lowered his head before Zhang Ruochen. “My Savior, I’ve come specially to tell you an important thing.”

“What is it?” Zhang Ruochen grew serious.

He had saved Le and taught him exercises of the Nonuple Samsara Magic formula, without asking anything in return.

After all, the Nonuple Samsara Magic Formula was a death practice. For every one level increase, the cultivator had to experience death. Very few warriors could practice to the third level or higher.

At the time, Le's meridians had been completely broken. Zhang Ruochen imparting the Nonuple Samsara Magic Formula to him could be regarded as the only way to save him.

Later, Le had joined the black market.

Less than two years later, the young man with broken meridians became strong again.

He had killed countless people. Otherwise, he would not have such a cold murderous look. It seemed like it could freeze human blood.

Le said, "Huo Shilin, the Square Commandery Prince, is sending several masters to kill you."

"I know. I have already fought with them." Zhang Ruochen laughed.

Le said, "The masters of the Square Commandery are horrible, but the men behind them are even more dreadful."

"Who are they?" asked Zhang Ruochen.

Le replied, "A mysterious young master from the Black Market Excellence Hall has come to Omen Ridge."

# Chapter 309 - Heavy Armor Break

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“I never imagined that the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall would come to Omen Ridge.”

Zhang Ruochen was slightly stunned, fully realizing the seriousness of the current situation. He asked promptly, “Are the Seven Kills Emissaries in Omen Ridge too?”

“How do you know about the Seven Kills Emissary?” Le asked.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Since the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall has been elected, Seven Kills Emissaries, as the guardians of the young master, should be naturally appointed. All Seven Kills Emissaries are the best of the best. Before the young master has fully developed, they are the scariest.”

“How many Seven Kills Emissaries are there in Omen Ridge?”

Le said, “I’ve only seen two, Red Wish Emissary and Purple Wind Emissary. I don’t know if the other five are in Omen Ridge.”

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and touched his nose with his finger. He said, “Generally, Seven Kills Emissaries are selected in their twenties, and only one is selected every three years. That is to say, Purple Wind Emissary was selected first, so his martial cultivation is the best, while Red Wish Emissary was selected last, so her martial cultivation is the worst.”

“Since the best and the worst Emissaries have come to Omen Ridge, the other five Emissaries must have arrived as well. What on earth is there in Omen Ridge to attract the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall and the Seven Kills Emissaries?”

Le responded, “Dragon Sarira.”

“What is Dragon Sarira?” Asked Zhang Ruochen.

Le said, “As said by the mysterious young master ‘Di Yi’, Dragon Sarira is the remains of a Buddhist Emperor from 800 years ago, one of the Nine Emperors. It was taken by the Four-wing Earth Dragon, the dominator of Omen Ridge. After he died, it went missing. Di Yi doubts that it is in Underwater Dragon Palace.”

“So, it is for the Buddhist Emperor’s Sarira. No wonder the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall has come to Omen Ridge.”

Zhang Ruochen was going to Underwater Dragon Palace. He could expect to meet such a strong opponent.

In all of Kunlun’s Field, the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall could be counted as the top-ranked among the youth. He would likely be the future ruler of the Black Market.

However, Zhang Ruochen had no fear. Rather he had a strong war intent.

The Dragon Sarira surprised him more.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had been involved with the Buddhist Emperor. The Buddhist Emperor and Emperor Ming had exchanged one martial art each. What the Buddhist Emperor gave to Emperor Ming was “Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm”.

It was said that Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was a top palm technique in Thousand Buddhas Sect, due to its extreme masculine and myriad forms. However, it was very difficult to practice, and very few people reached the Seventh Palm.

“Dragon Sarira, I have to get it.”

Zhang Ruochen wanted to defeat Empress Chi Yao. If he could get the Buddhist Emperor's Sarira, he would be closer to achieving his goal.

Certainly, he would not fight blindly with Di Yi. If he did, he would die a terrible death, like an egg against a rock.

Le told him some other information about Di Yi. However, as a killer of Hades Department, Le only knew part of it. Thus, Zhang Ruochen had only a rough idea of the Black Market's recent actions.

"My savior, I have told you everything I know. I have to go back as soon as possible, lest the Hades Department finds out."

Le bowed down to Zhang Ruochen and turned away immediately.

"Le!" Zhang Ruochen called.

Le slowed his pace.

"Thanks!"

Zhang Ruochen knew Le had risked everything to secretly deliver this news to him.

"Without your rescue and teachings, I would not be what I am today. It is I who should thank you."

Le's voice was gruff; he was a poor speaker.

He was often very isolated.

BOOM!

The ground shook violently.

A brute elephant roared in the distance.

Zhang Ruochen and Le's expressions changed.

"It must be pursuers from the Square Commandery. Ninth Prince, you'd better leave and let me deal with them."

Le put his grey hood back on to conceal his face, only his reddish lips could be seen.

SWISH!

Unsheathing his sword, he had an icy murderous feeling.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are completely surrounded. You cannot escape!”

Turning into an elegant silhouette, Jin Yeyun flew down from the top of an ancient tree.

Jin Yeyun was definitely pretty, as an imperial concubine and a martial arts legend of the Heaven Realm. She looked to be 28 or 29 years old, with skin on her face more delicate and white like a young girls’.

“BANG!”

“BANG!”

...

Like scaly moving hills, 50 hulking brute elephants appeared from all sides surrounding Zhang Ruochen and Le.

“Roar!”

50 soldiers with heavy armor, stood on the backs of the brute elephants. Each of them carried a long spear and made an ear-splitting sound.

Zhang Ruochen said to Le, “They are calling other soldiers. We must find our way out as soon as possible. Otherwise, there will be more.”

“Haha! Zhang Ruochen, you might be overestimating your ability.” Jin Yeyun sneered. “Even if your cultivation doubled, you could not break the Heaven-shaking Formation arranged by the Barbarian Elephant Army.”

“Let’s see if you can successfully arrange the Heaven-shaking Formation.” Le laughed grimly.

With this, he rushed towards a brute elephant. He leaped up 10 meters and stabbed the heart of the sergeant upon it.

The sergeant waved his spear, stabbing at Le.

Le easily avoided the spear; he was faster than the sergeant expected.

DING!

The iron sword pierced straight into the sergeant's heart, but it was blocked by heavy armor, causing energy ripples.

Under the strong impact, the sergeant flew backward. With a bang, he fell to the earth 10 meters away.

The sergeant hit the ground with a palm, and quickly jumped back onto the brute elephant. He attacked Le once again as if he had not been hurt.

Jin Yeyun laughed. "The Barbarian Elephant Army's armour is made from 5,000 kilograms of 10 centimeter thick Earth Core Scorching Iron. How can you break it?"

Le retreated and glanced at the sergeant's chest. He had not even pierced into the armor; there was only a three-centimeter sword mark.

The Barbarian Elephant Army's armour was completely connected. There was no breach; even eye sockets were mounted with spinels.

"Are there really no flaws? I doubt it." Le replied.

Jin Yeyun said nothing to Le, but ordered, "Attention, Barbarian Elephant Army! Prepare to arrange Heaven-shaking Formation, to kill these two."

When the army embattled, Le started a new attack.

SWOOSH!

His sword thrust like lightning crossing the sky.

PFFFF!

He stabbed just underneath the soldier's chin and pierced into the armour.

Le withdrew his sword.

A stream of blood spilled out from the soldier's neck. His body trembled for a while, and then he fell face up.

"How...can this happen?" Jin Yeyun screamed.

"The soldier's armor indeed has very strong defensive power." Zhang Ruochen said. "Moreover, it is up to 10 centimeters thick, so a normal sword cannot pierce through."

“However, the joint between the head and shoulder is relatively weak, because it is only about three centimeters thick. Comparatively, the joint between the helmet and body armor is weaker. It is just below the chin.”

Le had just pierced the weakest part below the soldier’s chin.

Only with rich fighting experience and extraordinary oversight, could a warrior see the Barbarian Elephant Army’s weakness.

“What are you going to do now that you know this?”

Jin Yeyun shouted, “Defense.”

The remaining 49 soldiers simultaneously lowered their heads, held down their chins, and tried to guard their weakest joint with their helmets.

“It is useless to defend.”

Zhang Ruochen activated the inscription of Force Series by injecting Genuine Qi into the Abyss Ancient Sword. The weight of the sword rapidly increased to 2,500 kilograms.

He jumped high into the air and brandished his sword.

The soldier beneath aimed his sword horizontally to ward off Zhang Ruochen’s sword.

**BANG!**

The Abyss Ancient Sword nearly cut the spear off. He broke the heavy armor and sliced the soldier from the top of the head.

Sword Qi went through with a loud bang, and Zhang Ruochen landed on his feet.

There was a long blood trail on the ground in the direction he had pointed the sword, and the ground cracked.

Not only was the soldier’s body split into two, but also his savage beast mount.

The power of the sword surprised all the soldiers present and oppressed their morale.

“He... he can... break the soldiers’ armour so easily?”



“How can his sword be so sharp? Is it a legendary tenth level Genuine Martial Arms?”

...

Stunned by his overwhelming sword technique, Jin Yeyun turned pale.

“Did he deliberately hide his strength in the valley?”

Jin Yeyun could not stay calm. Even with her cultivation at the Advanced Stage of the Peak of the Heaven Realm, she could not release such powerful attack force.

“Fight!”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Le and rushed out to attack another soldier.

**SWOOSH!**

With a flash of sword light, the soldier was beheaded.

As if it was made of paper, the so-called heavy armour was powerless under the Abyss Ancient Sword.

These soldiers were really top-notch martial arts masters. They quickly reacted to attack Zhang Ruochen.

Nine spears thrust out nearly at the same time.

“Animal Spirits Fixing Arms!”

Crimson Spiritual Blood gushed out from his body. It formed nine spinning Blood Swords.

**PHEW!**

As nine swords flew out, nine soldiers flew to the sky.

Le promptly rushed out, suspending in the air nine times. When he fell down to the ground, all nine soldiers had holes in their necks, from which blood gushed out.

**BANG! BANG!**

All became corpses when they fell down to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen’s sword technique was delicate and graceful, without any flaws. Following the righteous path, he looked like a young sword saint.

Following an odd and unconventional path, Le looked like a sword demon.

# Chapter 310 - Death City

Chapter 310: Death City

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

“What a terrible sword!”

Seeing the soldiers of Barbarian Elephant Army falling down one by one, Jin Yeyun’s face changed color. She performed a bodily movement immediately, charged to the distance, and tried to run away.

Facing two horrible young swordsmen, she was already frightened. She believed that even 50 soldiers of Barbarian Elephant Army couldn’t take them down.

She had only gone about 33 meters when Le, dressed in grey, stopped in front of her, blocking her way.

“Who are you? Why are you helping Zhang Ruochen?” She asked.

“I don’t answer questions from the dead.” He replied.

“Another arrogant boy!”

Jin Yeyun believed her cultivation was deep enough. She decided, therefore, to kill one before she left.

She transferred Genuine Qi to her palms, with a tittering noise. Sharp clear ice spikes were formed. She shook her wrists and the ice spikes flew towards Le all at once.

“Shadow Sword Technique!”

Le slashed, and seven shadows appeared, as if seven sword techniques were performed at the same time. The ice spikes all smashed into fine powder.

“Die!”

Jin Yeyun’s voice rang in Le’s ear.

When she’d thrown the ice spikes out, she had been very fast. Now she was less than a meter away from Le.

Her palm struck out with a clapping sound.

A powerful palm power struck towards Le's stomach.

Before the palm hit Le, its Icing air formed a layer of thick frost.

Jin Yeyun was after all in the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. Le hadn't even reached the Heaven Realm yet. There was a huge gap between them.

Le didn't even have a chance to escape.

**BANG!**

Jin Yeyun hit Le in the stomach, and he was blown into the air. His outfit was torn up, shredding into rags around him like moths.

“Haha!”

Jin Yeyun laughed and struck him again in the chest.

Le spat out a mouthful of blood. With a crackling sound, his rib collapsed.

**BANG!**

He fell to the ground on his knees. His chest bled so badly that his clothes completely incarnadined.

“Let's get this over with!”

Jin Yeyun's five fingers turned into knives and she slashed towards Le's neck.

The dying Le suddenly burst out a sense of death and used his last strength to stab upwards with his sword.

The whole movement was accomplished in one breath.

It was not only like a deathbed struggle, it was also like a preconceived stabbing.

There was no way Jin Yeyun believed that Le could strike back.

**PFFT!**

The sword tore open her Celestial Bodyshield, pierced her heart, and went through her back. A 17-centimeter bloody

sword tip came out of her body.

Jin Yeyun shook from head to toe. She looked at her chest. She still couldn't believe the fact that she was dying by a dying man's hand.

"It... it can't...be..."

Le withdrew his sword, and Jin Yeyun's body fell down to the ground heavily.

A master at the Peak of the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm would never be reconciled to die like this. She looked straight into the sky even after death.

**SWOOSH!**

After taking down the last soldier, Zhang Ruochen rushed over immediately. He took out a healing Pill quickly and handed it to Le. He said, "Take this. Quick."

Actually, Le and Jin Yeyun's battle had happened in a mere second. By the time Zhang Ruochen reached them, Jin Yeyun had already been killed by Le.

Le glanced at the healing pill and shook his head. "No, I don't need... this. The worse I get wounded, the faster my martial cultivation will improve. Don't you remember it is the Nonuple Samsara Magic formula that I practice? Put me to death and I shall rise; wound me to the extreme and I shall grow. Cough-cough!"

He clenched his chest and spat out another mouthful of blood.

But he still chose not to take the healing Pill. Instead, he pushed the ground with his hands and managed to stand up.

The Nonuple Samsara Magic formula was just that amazing. The warrior had to experience a hairbreadth escape in order to become stronger.

Even if the warrior was wounded, he mustn't heal himself on purpose. Instead, he had to depend on his body and his Genuine Qi to recuperate. Only in this way could he improve his cultivation.

It was a huge test of the warrior's will power!

A timid and weak person could not successfully practice the first level, never mind achieve great success.

Le had improved drastically in the last two years. Thus, he must have gone through countless injuries, tests and tortures that no one could even imagine.

A man like him would become a top Saint in the future if he survived everything.

Zhang Ruochen put the healing pill away. “Over the past two years, your heart has become colder and your will stronger. I don’t know whether that’s a good thing or not.”

Le glanced at Zhang Ruochen, looking at the blood on his hands. He smiled rigidly and said, “And so have you. I remember two years ago you refused to kill anyone.”

Looking at the piles of dead bodies on the ground, Zhang Ruochen frowned. “My status is different now. In the past, no one dared to kill me, so naturally, I didn’t have to kill anyone. But now it’s different. There are too many people wanting me dead. I will be killed if I don’t kill them. I don’t want to die. I still have a lot to do. So I must kill. Maybe I can say it’s all beyond my control!”

Le replied, “As the saying goes, a general builds his success on ten thousand bleaching bones. Saint’s sword must be stained with thousands of people’s blood. My dear benefactor, I have a feeling that your future path will be much harder than mine.”

With serious wounds, Le quickly left and returned to the Hades Department.

Zhang Ruochen went in another direction to the Death City.

An hour later, Jin Chuan, Zhang Tiangui and Guo Shisan arrived with 50 Barbarian Elephant Soldiers.

The strong scent of Spiritual Blood filled the air.

The savage beasts were feasting on the dead bodies.

50 Barbarian Elephant Soldiers dashed out and killed all the savage beasts.

“A Barbarian Elephant Army was completely annihilated!”

Gripping his sword, Guo Shisan looked cold and angry.

“Concubine Jin’s body is here.”

A Barbarian Elephant Soldier found Jin Yeyun lying in a pool of blood.

“Yun!”

Jin Chuan rushed forward and held Jin Yeyun’s body in his arm. He broke down and cried out loud.

Jin Chuan was Jin Yeyun’s father.

“Zhang Ruochen is too heinous! He killed Concubine Jin!”

Said Zhang Tiangui with a vicious look. “Predecessor Jin Chuan, you must avenge for Concubine Jin!”

“Zhang Ruochen!”

Jin Chuan roared. A strong blast of wind power burst out of his mouth like a hurricane, shaking every leaf in the forest from the branches. They floated in the air, rustling.

All the trees became naked.

All the birds and beasts were shaken to death as well.

“Go after him!” Jin Chuan roared. “I will catch Zhang Ruochen and cut him into pieces!”

...

The Tongming River was occupied by Aquatic Savage Beasts; it was the forbidden area for Human tribe.

In order to clean the Tongming River, Human tribe had built a city only a hundred kilometers away from the death reach of Tongming River. It was called the Death City.

More than ten commanderies had once had their armies stationed in the Death City, and the number of soldiers had even reached a million.

Almost every month, human soldiers would go into the reach by battleship to wipe out savage beasts.

Every year, there would be a large-scale campaign between the savage beasts and human beings. Both sides would suffer huge losses.

In addition to the armies, there were warriors from every commandery coming here to hunt savage beasts and search for treasures in the river.

There were more practicing treasures in the water than on land. Even just one treasure could improve a warrior's cultivation greatly.

It was because of these benefits that every day numerous warriors, fully aware of the danger, came to the Death City and joined the adventure.

Some of them died and became underwater corpses, while some of them found treasures and became masters.

It was a place full of opportunities and dangers; legends and death existing side by side.

Arriving at the Death City, Zhang Ruochen saw high walls, countless battleships and a continuous stream of warriors.

"It is said that Zhao Santu dug up a Crimson Coral in the Tongming River and sold two million silver coins. He made a good fortune!"

"There was another fight on Caoshi Street. It is said that more than 60 people died, and the blood was flowing like a stream. There was even an Earth Realm warrior among them."

"This morning, the Death City army sent 13 warships out into the death reach. It is said that they want to hunt the medium level savage beast, Gelid Octopus. I don't know if they will succeed."

"More than ten lovely ladies arrived at the Rosefinch Tower earlier. Tonight their virgin nights will be auctioned. I wonder who will be sold for the highest price?"

...

Walking along the busy street, Zhang Ruochen heard all kinds of stories; treasures found, important people who had come to the Death City, powerful savage beasts that had been seen...



The Death City was indeed a place where good and evil mixed together.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen felt something. He looked up towards an inn in the distance. He believed he saw a familiar figure.

“It’s her.”

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and stared at the woman in purple who was standing on the third floor of an ancient building near the street.

The woman was very pretty. She had a beautiful face and a slim figure. It looked like she was not strong, but actually her martial cultivation was very deep. What’s more, her five senses were very sharp, and she seemed to notice that someone was watching her.

She turned and looked towards the stare. She saw Zhang Ruochen standing in the center of the street.

# Chapter 311 - Meeting

Chapter 311: Meeting

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

Seeing Zhang Ruochen below, Zi Qian was also slightly shocked.

She thought her eyes were playing tricks on her. She closed her eyes and thought to herself, “He can’t be here at the Death City. It must be an illusion. Yes, it must be.”

When she opened her eyes again, however, Zhang Ruochen was still there.

Standing in the center of the street, Zhang Ruochen smiled. He nodded to her slightly.

“He actually is here, in the Death City.”

After a short while, Zi Qian left the inn in her purple veil. Walking through the crowd, she found Zhang Ruochen.

They stood face to face.

Zi Qian asked coldly, “Why are you here?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “You are here as well. Why can’t I be here?”

“You don’t know what you are talking about. Masters from the Black Market are everywhere here. What’s more, many people want to kill you.” In a low voice she said, “We can’t talk here. Follow me!”

Zi Qian took Zhang Ruochen to the inn. They entered a room and she carefully closed the window and door. Only then did she dare to take off the purple veil and show her beautiful face.

Zhang Ruochen was very calm. He sat on the chair and asked, “So, I assume there must be many masters from the Hades Department here?”

His tranquil attitude was not what she was expecting.

Zi Qian replied, “There are altogether 257 killers at the Completion of the Earth Realm in the Hades Department. They are from all over the 36 commanderies in the Omen Ridge. And now, they are all here. Most of them are superiors from the older generation. Although they are not on the Earth Board, many of them are just as powerful as the Earth Board warriors.”

One of the rules for the Earth Board was that warriors must be under the age of 50.

So in the Omen Ridge, there were many older warriors who actually had the ability to be on the Earth Board but couldn’t because of their age.

Among the 257 killers from the Hades Department, there were at least 20 who had the same abilities as Earth Board warriors.

“The Hades Department is indeed the biggest assassin organization in the Omen Ridge. They can send out 257 killers at the Completion of the Earth Realm in such a short time. With power like this, they can easily destroy any inferior commandery.”

Zhang Ruochen continued, “Are they going to follow Di Yi into the Underwater Dragon Palace?”

Zi Qian was astonished. “You know about that? Who told you that?”

“It’s none of your business!”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I have only one question for you. Do you want to go to the Underwater Dragon Palace with me? You found the dragon horn and I gave you my promise. If I go to the Underwater Dragon Palace, I will take you with me.”

“But I’m not a student at the School of the Martial Market now.” Said Zi Qian disappointedly.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “I don’t care if you are from the School of the Martial Market or the Black Market. If you go, you’ll have a share in the Underwater Dragon Palace’s treasures.”

Suddenly, Zi Qian's color changed slightly. "Zhang Ruochen, you need to listen to me. You can't go to the Underwater Dragon Palace. You have no idea how strong Di Yi is. Even Bu Qianfan, first on the Earth Board, couldn't block three of his movements. What's more, Di Yi has also sent many masters from the Black Market out to patrol the death reach in case someone gets close to the Underwater Dragon Palace."

"Well, it seems that many masters from the Black Market are here now." Zhang Ruochen frowned.

"At least half of the masters from the Black Market are gathering at the Tongming River now." Zi Qian said. "And it is said that masters from the Moon Worship Demonic Sect are here as well. It looks like they are asking around."

Zhang Ruochen smiled. "The Black Market made such a major move, the Moon Worship Demonic Sect and the Martial Market Bank must have noticed something. I'll think about what you said. If I really can't get into the Underwater Dragon Palace, I won't barge in. I'll stay in the Death City. If you have any problems, just come to me."

Zhang Ruochen left Zi Qian's room and was back on the street. He looked up and saw Zi Qian standing there. The moment their eyes met, Zi Qian became flustered and shy. She turned away immediately.

Zhang Ruochen didn't worry too much. He wandered about the Death City for a while, and soon found the mark Huang Yanchen and Duanmu Xingling had left. Following the mark, he came to a magnificent mountain villa.

The mountain villa belonged to the Martial Market Bank.

When they had decided to come to the Tongming River, Si Xingkong had told the warriors of the Martial Market Bank in the Death City to get the mountain villa ready for their arrival.

Zhang Ruochen scanned the villa to make sure it was safe, then entered through the gate.

"Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, your cultivation is the highest, why are you the last to arrive? We have been waiting for you for two days."

Giggling, Chang Qiqi walked up to Zhang Ruochen.

Behind her was a red Greedy Rabbit as fat as a pig. It had long ears and big white teeth.

The Greedy Rabbit walked on two legs. It held a bowl-wide ginseng in its hands and was gnawing on it like a carrot.

“Yum, yum!”

When the Greedy Rabbit saw Zhang Ruochen, its eyes lit up and it swooped into his arms. Its teeth rubbed hard against his shoes.

What’s more, it pointed to the ginseng in its paws with a discontented look. Then it simply threw the ginseng away.

Apparently, it didn’t really like ginseng.

The ginseng Chang Qiqi had given it was not a Spiritual Dose at all. Although it was around three kilograms in weight, it was just common ginseng.

For common people, it might be useful. But for warriors and savage beasts, it was just like cabbage.

“Guoguo!”

Chang Qiqi shouted and gripped his fingers. He was very upset and quickly picked up the ginseng. He said bitterly, “This rabbit is too hard to raise. It is not only has a huge appetite, it’s also fussy. This ginseng cost me 800 silver coins. But it throws it away just like that! I can’t afford to raise it anymore. I’ll sell it.”

Guoguo was the name Chang Qiqi had given the Greedy Rabbit.

It seemed Guoguo understood what he had said. It was so shocked that its ears straightened up. Immediately, it hid itself behind Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and pulled a jade box out from his Storage Ring. He took out a 10 kilogram Spiritual Brawn from the jar.

“I happened to kill a Blackwind Python in the Tongming River and took its Spiritual Brawn. Guoguo can have this.” Zhang

Ruo Chen patted Guoguo on the head.

Seeing the Spiritual Brawn, the Greedy Rabbit's eyes suddenly lit up. It grabbed the Spiritual Brawn at once and started eating in a terrible hurry.

"The Blackwind Python is a fourth-level medium level savage beast." Cried Chang Qiqi. "It's as strong as a warrior in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. When it is in water, it can be even stronger. Even a human warship can be overturned by it. Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, are you this strong now?!"

"Chang Qiqi, you are a mediocrity, while junior fellow apprentice Zhang is a top 100 genius on the Earth Board. There's no way you can imagine his martial cultivation."

The voice of a beautiful woman sounded out. Her voice was like music to the ear.

Chen Xier came out in a white dress.

Indeed, Chen Xier had an angelic face and voice. Almost every man fell for her. No wonder a conqueror like Yan Yunhuan had turned into an idiot when he was with her.

Chen Xier walked up to Zhang Ruo Chen. She smiled and said gently, "Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, where have you been these past few days? Were you in danger? My cousin and I were both worried about you!"

When Zhang Ruo Chen defeated Yan Yunhuan and became the top genius in the Omen Ridge, Chen Xier became interested in him again. She gave him excessive attention by actively talking to him about sword technique, the Underwater Dragon Palace, and Martial Arts.

In the past, she had advanced on Zhang Ruo Chen actively just because she wanted to annoy Huang Yanchen.

But now, it looked like she really was chasing him. Every time she looked at him, her eyes were filled with love.

Being the top genius in the Omen Ridge might not be so important, but being in the top 100 on the Earth Board was indeed very meaningful. It meant that he was one of the top ranked warriors in all of the Eastern Region.

A person like this had the potential to become a Half-Saint or even a Saint.

Zhang Ruochen was immune to Chen Xier's tenderness. He remained calm and said to Chang Qiqi, "Gather everyone. I have something very important to discuss."

After a while, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling and Si Xingkong all appeared.

The six of them gathered together.

Zhang Ruochen asked, "You guys have been here for two days. Have you noticed anything strange?"

"Strange? Is there something strange?" Chang Qiqi could be very unobservant.

Si Xingkong replied seriously, "I have been here twice. So I think I am quite familiar with the Death City. But this time, I do feel something strange."

"Like what?" Asked Chang Qiqi.

"There are more masters here than before." Said Si Xingkong. "Everywhere I go it feels dangerous."

In a small place like the Omen Ridge, Si Xingkong could reach Three-and-a-half-realm. He was indeed an elite of man.

Only a very sensitive person could feel the danger just by staying in the city.

Chen Xier and Huang Yanchen were both very confused about what was going on.

Since Zhang Ruochen had asked the question, he must have known something himself.

Feeling all eyes upon him, Zhang Ruochen said slowly, "The situation is very severe now. Half of the masters from the Black Market in the Omen Ridge are gathering in the Death City and the death reach of the Tongming River."

# Chapter 312 - Growing Crises

Chapter 312: Growing Crises

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

“What? What’s happening in the Death City? Why are so many masters from the Black Market being attracted here?” Exclaimed Chang Qiqi.

Chen Xier said seriously, “I did hear news from the Martial Market Bank that many masters from the Black Market were transferred here. But is it over the top to have more than half of the masters here?”

Duanmu Xingling was a little surprised as well. Just like Chen Xier, she had also heard something earlier.

But the news had been heresy.

Duanmu Xingling and Chen Xier both believed that it was almost impossible for the Black Market to transfer more than half of their masters to the Death City.

“They didn’t transfer this many masters even when the Black Market had the most furious fight with the Martial Market Bank.” Chen Xier said. “You know, the Black Market is made up of countless forces. There is a chief in every Black Market in each commandery, and each of them forms an individual black market system. In Omen Ridge, no one has the ability to transfer the black market masters of the 36 commanderies at the same time. The 36 chiefs can’t do that. The head of the Hades Department can’t do that. And the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club can’t do that.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “But the young master from the Black Market Excellence Hall can do that.”

“Who?” Asked Chang Qiqi.



“Who is the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall?” Si Xingkong wanted to know as well.

Hearing the name Black Market Excellence Hall, Duanmu Xingling’s eyes changed slightly. She asked, “Did the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall come to the Omen Ridge?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded. “Not only the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall, but also the Seven Kills Emissary are here as well. You can see how bad the situation is.”

Chen Xier and Huang Yanchen had heard of the Black Market Excellence Hall before due to their special status. Their faces grew pale after hearing Zhang Ruochen’s words.

Chang Qiqi was still very confused. He glanced at them and asked, “What is this Black Market Excellence Hall? Why do you look so scared?”

Huang Yanchen hummed coldly and replied, “The Black Market Excellence Hall is the biggest organization in the Black Market. It was set up to confront the School of the Martial Market. Notice, it was set up to confront the School of the Martial Market, not the Martial Market Bank.”

Chen Xier said, “At first, the Martial Market Bank set up the School of the Martial Market with a focus on attracting talented people so they would have talented personnel for the Bank. Nowadays, most of the top managers in the Martial Market Bank are graduates from the School. The Black Market noticed the significance of the School of the Martial Market and were afraid that the Martial Market Bank would one day take their place. So they established the Black Market Excellence Hall.”

“The Black Market Excellence Hall was established by the saints in the Black Market. It is not only a place to cultivate talented people, but also a sharp weapon to deal with the School of the Martial Market.”

“The disciples of different forces in the Black Market all regard attending the Black Market Excellence Hall as a great

honor. Getting into the Black Market Excellence Hall does not just require extremely high talent. There is one more thing.”

Chang Qiqi asked, “What is that?”

“A head.” Answered Chen Xier.

“A genius from the Black Market can only enter the Black Market Excellence Hall’s gate by carrying the head of a student from the School of the Martial Market.” Said Huang Yanchen.

Chang Qiqi shrank the moment he heard this, feeling a chill in his spine.

Chen Xier said, “The young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall is like the young celestial in the Saint Academy of the School of the Martial Market, or the Saintness in heresy. In addition, the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall has more power in some ways. You can say he is the representative of the Black Market Saints’ wills.”

“The Seven Kills Emissaries are the people who were selected to protect the young master of the Excellence Hall. Their talents are only slightly weaker than the young master, and one day they will become prominent figures in the Black Market. Because they are older than the young master, their abilities are actually stronger than the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall.”

Huang Yanchen added, “If the young master dies young, or has no ability to continue his talent, the new young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall will be picked out from among the Seven Kills Emissaries.”

Duanmu Xingling asked, “If they are so significant, why have they come to the Omen Ridge?”

“Because of one treasure, the Dragon Sarira,” replied Zhang Ruochen.

“The Dragon Sarira?”

Everyone was confused.

Zhang Ruochen, explained the origin of the Dragon Sarira to them. After hearing this, everyone became very excited again.

“The Buddhist Emperor’s Sarira is indeed a precious treasure! If I could eat it, I could become a legendary and peerless Seven-realm Fighting Genius!” Chang Qiqi was wild with joy.

Huang Yanchen gave him an angry glare. “The Buddhist Emperor’s Sarira likely contains a huge amount of energy. If you simply swallowed it, you would burst to death immediately.”

Chang Qiqi said, “Forget the Dragon Sarira. If we can find the Golden Dragon’s body and take some drops of Dragon’s Blood from it, we can refine our bodies. It would be very easy for me to become a Three-realm Fighting Genius! Maybe I could even become a Four-realm Fighting Genius!”

Chang Qiqi’s words moved everyone.

It was said that a baby dragon was equivalent to a human Three-realm Fighting Genius at birth. And it would become even stronger with practice. But this was only the situation for the mixed-blood Dragon tribes, like the Four-winged Earth Dragon.

The pure-blood Dragon tribes were even stronger. Some of the baby dragons were equal to Five or even Six-realm Fighting Geniuses.

So human warriors always saw Dragon’s Blood as precious refining medicine.

The stronger the dragon was, the more effective its blood would be. The purer the dragon’s blood was, the more the human warrior’s physical quality would improve.

The Golden Dragon was not only a pure-blood dragon, it also had very high cultivation. Even one drop of its blood would benefit young warriors significantly.

So even Si Xingkong, who was always calm, was in ecstasy.

This was indeed a great opportunity. If he could seize it, his life would be totally different.

It was now or never.

Staring at everybody, Zhang Ruochen said, “I’ve told you just about everything. Great danger and great opportunity co-exist

in the Underwater Dragon Palace. I believe you all have your answers now.”

“We have to take our chance no matter how dangerous it is,” said Si Xingkong. “But there is one problem: the Underwater Dragon Palace was blockaded by the Black Market masters; even if we have the key we can’t get in.”

“I won’t allow the Black Market to take the Dragon Sarira alone. I’ll contact my father now and have him come here in person.”

Chen Xier took out a Signal Flare and crumpled it.

**SWOOSH!**

A bright light came out of the flare and disappeared into the horizon.

Chen Xier’s father was the Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market.

Zhang Ruochen didn’t stop her. After all, young warriors like them couldn’t compete with the countless Black Market masters. Only by contacting the masters from the Martial Market Bank and the School of the Martial Market would they have a possibility of winning.

Duanmu Xingling also took out a Signal Flare. She smiled and said, “I’ll ask my aunt to come here as well. After all, there are too many Black Market masters here. The School of the Martial Market and the Martial Market Bank won’t necessarily be able to gather enough masters in such a short time. The more we have, the stronger we are.”

As Lady Saint of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, Duanmu Xingling also had her responsibility.

She had also been investigating why so many Black Market masters were here in the Death City. She had even fought against Di Yi once. But she hadn’t known his identity until she met with Zhang Ruochen.

Naturally, Duanmu Xingling would tell all of this to the Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

Zhang Ruochen gazed at Duanmu Xingling. He pondered for a while but decided not to say anything.

Chang Qiqi asked, "So what should we do now?"

"There's nothing we can do now. All we need to do is hide and wait for the Palace Master to come and take charge." Said Si Xingkong.

"I'm afraid you won't live to see that!"

A penetrating sound wave stabbed into their ears like a needle from outside the villa.

"No! The villa has been surrounded by the Black Market warriors!" Said Chen Xier.

Outside the villa, the ground was shaking. The roar of brute elephants could be heard everywhere.

The giant brute elephants surrounded the villa like mountains.

Si Xingkong said, "Don't panic! There is a blind pass in the villa to the underground river. And the underground river is connected to the Tongming River. It's not hard to escape. I'll take you to the blind pass now."

The Martial Market Bank had operated in the Death City for many years, so they had room for maneuvering.

Si Xingkong had been here twice. Naturally, he knew the blind pass in the villa.

"You guys leave first. I'll stall for time."

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm, and 32 Formation Flags flew out from his Spatial Ring. They landed in 32 different positions in the villa. He stood directly in the center of the array.

There were too many Black Market masters. Even if there was a blind pass, it might be hard to escape.

Someone needed to stall for time.

"Zhang Ruochen, I'll help you."

Huang Yanchen stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen, trying to dash back.

Duanmu Xingling grabbed her. “If Zhang Ruochen can’t stall for time successfully, you will be no help either. All we need to do now is leave here quickly. That way, Zhang Ruochen will be able to leave earlier as well.”

“Senior sister apprentice Duanmu is right.” Said Zhang Ruochen. “Senior sister apprentice Huang, you will only distract me if you stay here.”

Chen Xier grabbed Huang Yanchen’s other wrist and pulled her away with Duanmu Xingling.

After they left, Zhang Ruochen gave out a small sigh of relief. He took out a War Map and put it in his hand, ready to set it off at anytime.

CLANG!

Outside the villa, two brute elephants ran towards the wall at the same time. The wall tumbled down, leaving a huge hole.

The brute elephants were over nine meters tall. Their legs were like pillars. They had black scales and two sharp teeth, like white blades in their mouths.

# Chapter 313 - Kill Yin Shan

Chapter 313: Kill Yin Shan

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

On each brute elephant's back stood a strong heavily-armored sergeant.

They held long spears with an aura of coldness, like devils.

“Zhang Ruochen, how can you escape this time?”

Holding a heavy sword, Guo Shisan leapt onto the wall. He stared at Zhang Ruochen from a distance.

The eunuch, Cao Lin and the archery Master, Yin Shan appeared from the other two directions.

Zhang Ruochen smiled. “You guys again. You failed last time. You don't have the means to catch me, do you?”

“Hoho! You are overestimating yourself, you bloke. I want to know how strong you really are.”

Cao Lin stomped on the ground suddenly, causing it to crack. With the help of the power of recoil, his speed exploded. Like a shadow he rushed toward Zhang Ruochen.

At Cao Lin's martial cultivation level, with speed exceeding the speed velocity, it was impossible to judge exactly how fast he was going.

Zhang Ruochen could only see Cao Lin's moves by using his Spiritual Power.

Warriors who had reached the Heaven Realm had the advantage of using Spiritual Power to see.

However, they couldn't be superior if fighting with Zhang Ruochen because of his sharper eyes and stronger Spiritual Power.

The moment Cao Lin moved, Zhang Ruochen started to move, too.

Genuine Qi surged rapidly through his Meridians and rushed towards his left thumb. He pointed out and shot a magnificent red Sword Wave from his fingertip.

There was an about 33 meters wide Qi billow circle surrounding him with his finger at the very center.

WHEW!

Under the power of Sword Wave, a stupefied Cao Lin stretched out his hands to form a Celestial Bodyshield.

Once a warrior's cultivation had reached the Heaven Realm, the Celestial Bodyshield would form when there was a qualitative change in Genuine Qi.

The Genuine Qi spread out like Celestial Bodyshield Qi.

The higher one's martial cultivation was, the thicker and stronger his Celestial Bodyshield was.

BANG!

A magnificent power erupted from the collision between the Sun Meridian Ripple and Cao Lin's Celestial Bodyshield. Cao Lin flew back.

Blood flowed from the space between his fingers, bringing him an intense burning pain. His hands trembled ceaselessly.

Sword Qi had entered his body and was destroying his Meridians.

“What strong Sword Wave! It broke my Celestial Bodyshield!”

Cao Lin activated Icing cold Genuine Qi to expel the invading sword Qi from his body.

“What a pity that I have only reached Small Success! If I had achieved succeed, I could kill you with that blow.” Zhang Ruochen said lightly.

“Don't talk rubbish with him; he is just wasting time.”

Guo Shisan pulled out his combat sword and shouted, “Barbarian Elephant Army obey my order. Go into the villa immediately. Kill all the people in it! No exceptions!”



There were only 300 Barbarian Elephant Soldiers outside the villa, but their presence had already shocked people inexplicably, as if the sky would soon dim.

The 300 Barbarian Elephant Army warriors attacked at the same time. They charged into the villa and razed it to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen infused Genuine Qi into Cloud Painting.

The War Map produced a vast amount of white mist, enveloping the whole villa and its peripheral area.

The mist was like a piece of white cloud had fallen down from the sky.

It was hard to discern a shadow beyond 10 steps.

“A huge Barbarian Elephant Army appeared, and then an odd white fog covered the city. There must be something happening in the Death City!”

“No one knows where the Barbarian Elephant Army came from, it just popped up. It’s so shocking. Even the millions of soldiers stationed in Death City cannot deter the Barbarian Elephant Army.”

...

After activating the Cloud Painting, Zhang Ruochen put on the Flying Fish Armor and sped out.

**SLASH!**

He slashed his sword, chopping the legs off of a brute elephant.

The elephant burst out a sad and shrill howl. Its enormous body fell to the ground.

The warrior standing on the back of the brute elephant thudded to the ground.

Zhang Ruochen sped out of the white mist at the speed of sound. He slashed at the legs of brute elephants as he went. Several brute elephants were hurt. They whined up and down the whole property, causing the Barbarian Elephant Army to panic.

They couldn't even see Zhang Ruochen so couldn't execute their combined attack.

Activating the power of Martial Soul, Zhang Ruochen released Space Domain so he could see the situation in the villa clearly and surprise the Barbarian Elephant Army.

He detected the trace of archery master Yin Shan. With killing intent flashing in his eyes, he rushed towards Yin Shan.

Yin Shan's magnificent archery skills were a great danger for Zhang Ruochen. He needed to kill Yin Shan.

With the fog drifting through the manor, Yin Shan had lost sight of Zhang Ruochen. But he could sense where he was when he heard him move. Zhang Ruochen, who was as fast as the speed velocity, had already moved by the time Yin Shan heard him.

All of a sudden, Yin Shan saw a shadow coming toward him.

“Perfect timing!”

Yin Shan moved his fingers quickly and put a Phoenix Feather Arrow on the bowstring.

As if it had a mind of its own, the Phoenix Feather Arrow made a slight turn and flew towards Zhang Ruochen's chest.

“Dragon and Elephant Returning to Earth!”

Zhang Ruochen struck out his palm, Genuine Qi shot from his hand in the dragon shadow.

The success of the fifth movement meant that Zhang Ruochen had broken the “Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm” to the spiritual stage mid-class level. The power this technique could explode was stronger than most of the martial techniques of Spiritual Stage Superior class.

Dragon and Elephant Returning to Earth was the third palm of Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. Although it was weaker than the fifth palm, it could still burst out seven-fold power, which was equivalent to the power of a Spiritual Stage Superior class martial technique.

AWOO!

A light dragon shadow flew out from Zhang Ruochen's palm and bounced off the Phoenix Feather Arrow.

The palm strength hit Yin Shan and forced him to stop.

“What a potent palm technique!”

Yin Shan's complexion changed; he felt all his Spiritual Blood stop, like an invisible strength was squeezing his chest.

Zhang Ruochen appeared on his left and stabbed him in the neck.

Oh no!

Yin Shan's face changed. Zhang Ruochen was too fast; it was too late.

With no other solution in sight, Yin Shan had to infuse Genuine Qi into a string of jade beads.

It was an amulet treasure that had cost him several million silver coins.

With the inscription of jade beads activated, a two-meter-long Light Shield appeared in the void space, guarding Yin Shan.

BANG!

But before the Abyss Ancient Sword, the Light Shield was broken immediately.

Sword Qi slashed through Yin Shan's neck.

His eyes opened wide; the red bow in his hand fell to the ground; he was not moving any more.

Zhang Ruochen retrieved the Abyss Ancient Sword and looked at the string of jade beads. “Your amulet treasure's class was too low. It could withstand other's swords, but not mine.”

TCH!

A line of blood appeared on Yin Shan's neck, and it gushed out.

Yin Shan's martial cultivation, which had reached the Peak of the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, was so great that he could fight with a warrior at the Dawn State of the Heaven

Realm. That's why he'd been able to harm Zhang Ruochen with his arrow last time.

Even though he was an archery master, Zhang Rouxhwn had been within steps of him. His magnificent archery skills were meaningless.

He had been killed by Zhang Ruochen. It didn't mean that he was weaker; Zhang Ruochen had taken advantage of the situation.

"They should have entered the underground river by now. I should leave."

The moment he tried to escape, a thundering voice boomed out from the white fog. "Zhang Ruochen, give my daughter's life back!"

Jin Chuan, dressed in a golden robe, rushed into the manor, crossing through layers of white fog. He hit Zhang Ruochen with his palm.

CLANG!

The whole villa shook from the impact.

Although Jin Chuan was still 33 meters away, Zhang Ruochen's internal organs shook fiercely as if they had been broken to pieces.

PFFT!

Zhang Ruochen started bleeding. He was thrown back violently into the center of the prepared array.

Jin Chuan, the tenth greatest Martial Arts master in Square Commandery, had achieved the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. Besides, he was a two-class master, so he could actually fight with warriors at the Final State of the Heaven Realm.

Facing Jin Chuan, fighting against Yin Shan, Jin Yeyun and the others was like fighting against children. There was a huge gap in their levels of strength.

Such a strong superior punching with his full strength created an incredibly powerful momentum.

Even a warrior with 10 times the power Zhang Ruochen had would be killed.

Standing in the center of the array, Zhang Ruochen stomped fiercely on the ground. A stream of Genuine Qi surged from his soles, diverging into 32 streams of Genuine Qi and activating the 32 Formation Flags.

The Array of Water Fire Wind and Thunder!

BOOM!

In a flash, the 32 Formation Flags produced a light column each nearly at the same time. The beams connected to form a huge array.

Jin Chuan's palm made a dent in the light wall, forming streams of surging ripples.

Pointing his finger, Zhang Ruochen initiated the power of the array to attack Jin Chuan.

()

The 16 Formation Flags on Zhang Ruochen's left formed a Power of Water. On his right, a red Power of Fire appeared.

The two kinds of power came together and began to spin in large spirals.

“Attack!”

The power of fire and water surged out to attack Jin Chuan.

# Chapter 314 - Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Jin Chuan's long hair fluttered without wind. He put his hands together in Mudra to unleash the Celestial Bodyshield, which covered his body.

BOOM! With a loud sound, Jin Chuan was hit by the power of water and fire. Under protection of the Celestial Bodyshield, he slid backward more than 30 meters.

“Attack!”

Zhang Ruochen screamed the word again. Flashes of purple lightning flew out in all directions from the array.

Tiny electric lines appeared densely on the ground. The whole villa was turning into a thunderbolt ocean.

The pavilions were split into pieces under the impact of lightning. Only bits of burned wood remained.

More than 30 soldiers from the Barbarian Elephant Army were hit by the lightning. They screamed out and fell to the ground.

Some of them were badly hurt and fainted; others were turned into charred skeletons inside their armor.

In the distance, a man with a metal mask was standing on top of a six story tower. It was Di Yi, the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall.

A purple light emerged in his eyes, like two purple fireballs burning in his pupils. Even the white fog that enveloped the city couldn't block his line of sight.

Gazing out at the faraway battleground, Di Yi shook his head. “A bunch of craps! Zi Feng, go help them.”

“Yes, sir.”

Dressed in a purple robe, the man who had stood behind Di Yi flew to the sky of the Death City in a flash.

The Purple Wind Emissary, who wore a pair of purple metal gloves, was hanging in the void space. His fingers were like purple metal sticks. He put his hands together in Magic Handprint in different positions and shouted, “Spirit of wind throughout the universe, heed my call!”

BOOM!

The Purple Wind Emissary opened his mouth and took a breath. He exhaled a fierce wind over the entire Death City.

The wild wind howled eerily. After a few seconds, the white fog in the city was blown away.

When the white mist lifted, the Barbarian Elephant Army soldiers who had been besieging Zhang Ruochen got their vision back. They attacked in the direction of the Array of Water, Fire, Wind, and Thunder.

“Forward!”

“Kill Zhang Ruochen, and you will be handsomely rewarded.” Guo Shisan said.

“Do you really think you can stop me with an array? Guo Shisan, assist me!” Jin Chuan said in a deep voice.

Guo Shisan made a dash for the spot near Jin Chuan.

Jin Chuan closed his eyes. A light shadow of soul flew out from his body and floated above him.

“Jin Chuan has practiced the Martial Soul. No wonder he is one of the top 10 masters in the Square Commandery.”

Guo Shisan stared at the shadow of soul above, full of admiration.

Although it was said that once a warrior reached the Heaven Realm, he or she could use Genuine Qi to foster their soul and

practice the Martial Soul, only warriors with profound cultivation actually had the ability to do it.

If a warrior practiced Martial Soul, he or she could mobilize Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi to attack others.

So, warriors of the Heaven Realm who practiced Martial Souls and those who didn't were two totally different concepts.

The strength of Guo Shisan's soul was far from the level of Martial Soul.

Martial Soul was actually the name of a soul that had reached a certain level.

Jin Chuan's Martial Soul began to mobilize Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. He created a huge saber shadow in the void space and used it to cut the Array of Water, Fire, Wind and Thunder below.

“What bad luck! Jin Chuan has practiced the Martial Soul.”  
Zhang Ruochen's face clouded.

Although Zhang Ruochen had a Martial Soul to mobilize the Genuine Qi of the universe and his Martial Soul might even be stronger than Jin Chuan's, his Martial Soul had to be connected by the power of the Vessel of Spirit, which was largely restrained.

Regardless of whether he could withstand Jin Chuan by mobilizing the power of his Martial Soul, Zhang Ruochen dared not show his Martial Soul. The powerhouse who had just blown away all the white fog in the city was somewhere nearby.

Once his Martial Soul was exposed, more horrible warriors would be attracted.

Zhang Ruochen would not show his Martial Soul until he had no other alternative.

He controlled the array and gathered the power of the 32 Formation Flags together. It turned into a huge lightning ball. He used it to attack in front of Jin Chuan.

**CLASH!**



Jin Chuan controlled the shadow of the saber and cut downwards.

The Thunder Bolt was sliced to pieces with a loud noise, turning into shades of thunderbolt, rushing in all directions.

BANG!

The shadow of saber hit the top of the shield of the Array of Water, Fire, Wind and Thunder, crushing the earth beneath the array and spraying mud up from the ground.

When the mud cleared, a huge hole dozens of meters wide and two meters deep appeared on the ground.

Only broken Formation Flags remained. Zhang Ruochen disappeared.

Jin Chuan's Martial Soul returned to his body. He cried out, "Chase him! We cannot let him escape from us."

Cao Lin and Guo Shisan led the Barbarian Elephant Army into the villa and searched the whole building.

"The powerhouse of the Heaven Realm that practiced the Martial Soul is indeed powerful. Even the Array of Water, Fire, Wind, and Thunder couldn't defend against his hit. He is truly a martial arts legend. Thankfully the Flying Fish Armor warded off 70% of the attack."

Zhang Ruochen unleashed movements and raised his speed as much as he could, heading towards the entrance of the secret channel.

He had consumed a lot of Genuine Qi when he was controlling the array. In addition, he was badly hurt from Jin Chuan's last attack.

He only hoped that he could escape through the secret channel.

A deep voice called out behind Zhang Ruochen. "Zhang Ruochen, where are you trying to escape to?"

The old eunuch Cao Lin trailed closely behind and was rapidly gaining on him.

Zhang Ruochen could feel the Icing air coming from his back. Every wisp of the chilly air was like a needle punching his

back. It was cold and painful.

Cao Lin was much faster than Zhang Ruochen. Just as Zhang Ruochen arrived at the stone gate of the secret channel, Cao Lin stuck his hand out with claw-shaped trying to scratch Zhang Ruochen's back.

Zhang Ruochen was fully aware that the claw would hit him, but he did not dare stop and resist. If he did, Guo Shisan and the Barbarian Elephant Army would track him down and surround him again.

If he was surrounded again, would he be able to get out?

He could only bear the attack.

CRACK!

Cao Lin's claw hit him in the back.

The claw crashed against the Flying Fish Armor with a metallic clink. It left five white marks on the armor.

"It's a ninth-level Genuine Martial Arm suit of armour. It was able to withstand a hit from Jin Chuan and save me from him. But it's a pity, no matter how strong the armour is, it can only keep out penetrating power, not hidden or concussive power."

Cao Lin took his claw back and opened his hand.

"Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm."

BANG!

He hit Zhang Ruochen right on the spine with a cold and penetrating palm power.

Although the armor kept out some of the power, there was still Yin power coming through the armor continuously. It was a unique type of palm power. It could enter Zhang Ruochen's body and seep towards his bones.

Suffering this, Zhang Ruochen continued on and fell through the stone gate of the secret channel. He tumbled down the stone ladder towards the underground.

"There is a secret channel. No wonder Zhang Ruochen went all out to escape in this direction."

Cao Lin was delighted. He quickly entered the secret channel. If he could catch Zhang Ruochen, whether he was alive or not, it would be a great merit.

Zhang Ruochen had already been hurt even before Cao Lin hit him with the Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm. Now was the perfect time to kill him.

“The old eunuch has a great capability. He is more powerful than Yin Shan and Jin Yeyun, not to mention that he has practiced the evil Bone-melting Skill.”

After falling down the stone ladder, Zhang Ruochen was dizzy and weak. He was in great pain and felt like his bones had disappeared.

The sound of flowing water came to his ears.

The air was moist, and it was totally dark all around him.

Nevertheless, he could see his surroundings by using the power of Space Domain. There was an underground river a short distance away.

He was lying on the stone terrace, only a dozen meters from the river.

Zhang Ruochen immediately used the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean, hoping that he could defuse the power of Cao Lin's Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm with Spiritual Fire and Genuine Qi.

The Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm that Cao Lin practiced was quite strange. It had a kind of Yin power that could cross the air and touch one's bones. Even the Flying Fish Armor couldn't withstand it.

Scripture of Emperor Ming's Emphyrean deserved to be rated as one of the top exercises. Genuine Qi circulated vital power through his body for a large circle of vital energy and some of the Yin power dispersed. Zhang Ruochen regained some power.

But he didn't have time to completely disperse the Yin palm power. He heard the sound of footsteps not far away.

Cao Lin lit the dark underground space with a Spiritual Crystal of light nature, showing his ferocious pale old face.

He appeared in front of Zhang Ruochen and laughed. “Young man, you’ve been hit by my Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm. That must be painful. Are you feeling like all your bones are disappearing? Do you have any strength left? Haha!”

Zhang Ruochen had been lying on the ground. But as soon as Cao Lin appeared, he suddenly unleashed his power, pulled back his legs and sat cross-legged.

Cao Lin was shocked; his eyes twitched. He said, “Good boy, you’ve got the goods. I’m surprised you can even move after being hit by my Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm.”

Cao Lin assumed it was Zhang Rouchen’s armour that helped him withstand the palm power, and that was why he could still move. He could never have realized that Zhang Ruochen had the power to disperse the Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm.

Zhang Ruochen continued dispersing the power from the palm. He laughed and said, “A simple palm technique can’t hurt me.”

“Really. I think you are just pretending.”

Cao Lin smiled inexorably and got closer and closer to Zhang Ruochen.

Knowing that Zhang Ruochen had skills and weapons, Cao Lin dared not underestimate him. He had seen him kill Yin Shan.

Even with 300 Barbarian Elephant Army soldiers surrounding him, he could still fight his way out. This man should never be underestimated.

When Cao Lin was less than five steps away, he suddenly dashed forward charging his finger towards Zhang Ruochen’s glabella.

As soon as Cao Lin pointed his finger, the whole underground was filled with a cold light.

Zhang Ruochen frowned. He lifted his left thumb quickly, in an attempt to fight back.

“Sun Meridian Ripple!”

WHEW!

Two fingertip forces smashed together.

It was obvious that Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation had not recovered, and the power of his Sword Wave was still limited. He was defeated by Cao Lin’s finger force in a split second.

“BANG!” Cao Lin’s fingertip hit the surface of Zhang Ruochen’s Flying Fish Armor and sent him flying.

“Haha! You’re badly hurt just as I expected. It’s naive of you to try to scare me like that.”

Cao Lin laughed and charged up again. He moved his Genuine Qi and rotated his five fingers, ready to use the Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm again.

If he killed Zhang Ruochen, he would not only gain great merit, he would also be famous around the world.

Lost in his excitement, Cao Lin didn’t notice that the space around him was vibrating slightly, and that strange space Lines had emerged.

# Chapter 315 - What A Rabbit

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The space around them shook harder and harder.

**SWOOSH!**

Zhang Ruochen, who was badly hurt, suddenly stood tall. He stared at Cao Lin, waved his arm and struck towards Cao Lin.

It seemed like he was striking in void space without unleashing any power.

However, a two-meter-long crack appeared in the space in front of Cao Lin.

The ground was broken. The crack unleashed a strong suction power with a purring sound. It was chaos inside.

The whole underground tunnel became a mess.

The Space Crack became the center of the entire space. It seemed that the crack wanted to swallow everything in the underground tunnel.

Looking at the split, Cao Lin's face clouded. He was lurching forward and there was no way he could elude it.

“No... How could this happen...”

**TCH!**

The Space Crack swallowed Cao Lin whole, leaving nothing but his scream.

Then, the crack closed up.

“I’m so fortunate the old eunuch dropped his guard... Otherwise, the Space Crack might not have hurt him.” Zhang Ruochen took a long breath.

Actually, Zhang Ruochen had planned to deal with Cao Lin by using the power of Space Crack from the beginning. But considering Cao Lin’s high speed, he knew it would be hard to kill him if he used it rashly.

So, he had to wait for an opportunity in which Cao Lin totally dropped his guard.

Only in this way, could he beat Cao Lin in one hit.

After killing Cao Lin, Zhang Ruochen was not excited at all. Because fighting with Cao Lin had exacerbated his injury.

In his current physical condition, it was hard for him to even move his fingers, never mind jumping in the underground river.

“There is a secret channel leading to the underground. Zhang Ruochen must have escaped through the channel.”

“Hurry up!”

The sound of several human voices came to Zhang Ruochen’s ears. It was obvious that the Barbarian Elephant Army had found the secret channel and was still in pursuit.

“Even killing Cao Lin didn’t help me get away.”

Zhang Ruochen bit the bullet and tried to control his body and move to the underground river not far away.

Even in his most difficult moments, he would never give up his hope.

**CRACK!**

There was a strange sound from the stone ladder in the distance.

A red rabbit, as big as a pig, rolled down the stone ladder quickly. It showed its big white teeth and ran very fast.

Zhang Ruochen was suddenly delighted. He hurriedly called the rabbit. “Guoguo, this way.”

Hearing Zhang Ruochen's voice, Guoguo immediately stopped running and looked in his direction.

Guoguo's eyes popped at the sight of Zhang Ruochen on the ground. It rushed over and uttered a little squeak as if to ask Zhang Ruochen why he was lying on the ground.

Zhang Ruochen had fed it the Spiritual Brawn of the Blackwind Python earlier without any consideration of the energy the Spiritual Brawn contained. The icy power had frozen the greedy rabbit and it had been unable to move.

Chang Qiqi hadn't been able find it when they evacuated the villa, so he had left it there.

It had just finished digesting all the power from the spiritual brawn and traced their smell to the underground river. It didn't expect to see Zhang Ruochen who was badly hurt.

"Hurry! Zhang Ruochen wouldn't run far."

"Your Excellency Cao Lin was chasing after him. He might have already caught him."

...

Voices from above the underground channel became clearer. It wouldn't be long before they arrived.

"Guoguo, get me out of here." Zhang Ruochen said.

Guoguo's wide eyes were filled with confusion. It plucked at Zhang Ruochen with great effort but couldn't move him.

Zhang Ruochen said hastily, "If you can get me out, you will get more food than you can imagine."

The word "food" lifted Guoguo's spirit. It grasped Zhang Ruochen's body and carried him. It jumped into the river with a plop. It sank to the bottom of the water and swam downstream.

After a few moments, Jin Chuan and Guo Shisan arrived at the underground riverside with some soldiers from the Barbarian Elephant Army. But they couldn't find any trace of Zhang Ruochen or Cao Lin.



“They must have left via the river. Guo Shisan, keep chasing with our people. We can’t let Zhang Ruochen escape from us. I will go back and report our current status to the young master and the Commandery Prince.”

Jin Chuan returned through the underground channel, heading towards the six-story tower in the Death City.

At the sight of Di Yi who sat upon the top, Jin Chuan showed respect by kneeling on the ground. Cautiously he said, “Young master, Zhang Ruochen and the internal students from the School of the Martial Market have escaped.”

Jin Chuan thought Di Yi would burst into anger. He prepared to get punished.

To his surprise, Di Yi stayed calm. Coolly, he said, “I was watching when you laid siege to the student from the School of the Martial Market. He was well prepared has excellent cultivation. I won’t blame you for letting him escape. It is the information organization of the Black Market that should be responsible for this.”

Square Commandery Prince was standing beside him. He asked, “Young master, what do you mean?”

“The student from the School of the Martial Market is not just a warrior in the top 100 of the Earth Board. His power is similar to that of the top 20 warriors.”

Di Yi said with a smile, “I didn’t expect that Omen Ridge could have such a powerful master. He is indeed outstanding.”

Square Commandery Prince said with flattery, “No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen is, he still has a long way to go compared to you, our young master. Even the top ranked warrior on the Earth Board, Bu Qianfan couldn’t withstand three movements from you, never mind Zhang Ruochen.”

Di Yi hummed coolly. In a serious tone he said, “You truly underestimate the top 20 masters of the Earth Board.”

“Do you realize that masters like Zhang Ruochen are big threats to the Black Market? I can tell you clearly, he is more of a threat than his Master Lei Jing. We must kill him before he grows up and causes trouble for us.”

“Where is the Red Wish Emissary?”

In the void space, a few wisps of red smoke came and gathered in the air, then formed into a sexy female figure.

Dressed in red, the Red Wish Emissary floated in the air. Evil smoke surrounded her body like a fantasy.

Di Yi said, “Go and help them kill Zhang Ruochen. Remember, this man must die.”

“Yes, sir.” The Red Wish Emissary responded.

After she and Jin Chuan left, Di Yi put on a thoughtful look. “Purple Wind Emissary, take my order to others. The situation has changed. Let every force in the Black Market start to prepare now. I will go to the Underwater Dragon Palace to explore tonight.”

The Purple Wind Emissary was a little worried. He said, “Young master, the Underwater Dragon Palace is too dangerous. I suggest that we send some people to search for the Life Gate of the Dragon Palace a few more times before you go there.”

“We can’t wait any longer! I have a hunch that the School of the Martial Market and the Moon Worship Demonic Sect have heard the message and will be sending masters soon.”

Di Yi continued, “Besides, I just want to go on a fishing expedition. I don’t need to break in yet.”

“I understand. I will inform all the forces to start preparations.”

After the Purple Wind Emissary finished speaking, he left.

...

The water in death reach of the Tongming River was as black as ink.

It was too cold for ordinary savage beasts to live in.

Savage beasts that could survive here were all extremely fierce creatures.

**SWOOSH!**

A huge bubble suddenly surged upward in the placid river.

A rabbit, carrying a man dressed in armor, appeared in the river. It shifted its eyes and looked around. Finding no enemy, it headed towards the shore.

The other side of the underground river ran into the death reach of the Tongming River.

After going ashore, they went into the wood. Zhang Ruochen took off the Flying Fish Armor and it turned into a fist-sized red iron ball.

He took some healing Pills and started to run exercises, making all efforts to defuse the power of the Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm.

A short time later, the Spiritual Fire and Genuine Qi had run nine large circles of vital energy. Most of the power from the Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm was defused.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and looked forward. The fat face of the rabbit was all he could see.

Guoguo stared at him. Seeing Zhang Ruochen waking up, its face lit up. The rabbit drew its claws, begging him for food.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "We haven't arrived at the safe place. Our enemies may catch us up at any time." Zhang Ruochen smiled. "We haven't arrived at a safe place yet. Our enemies may catch up to us at any time. Even though I defused the power of the Bone-melting Darkcloud Palm, I haven't recovered yet. I can only unleash about a quarter of my power. If you can take me somewhere safe, I will give you lots of delicious food."

Guoguo made a squeaking sound as if to ask him where was safe.

Indeed!

People from the Black Market had now surrounded the entire city. Where could he find a safe place?

Though Zhang Ruochen could hide in the Time and Space Spinel, any top masters who had practiced Martial Soul could follow his aura and find the Spinel.

Would he have to stay in the Time and Space Spinel for the rest of his life?

What's more, the Time and Space Spinel was hard to break for ordinary warriors. But that was not the case when it came to the top masters of the Black Market.

At least for now, Zhang Ruochen couldn't put his hope in the Time and Space Spinel. He had to find another safe place.

Zhang Ruochen pondered for a while, then said, "The most dangerous place might be the safest one. Let's go towards the death reach of the Tongming River and get into the water. This might be the only way for us to survive."

Zhang Ruochen cut down an ancient tree two meters wide. He hollowed it out in the middle and made a ten-meter-long canoe.

After putting the canoe into the water, Zhang Ruochen sat at the bow and continued to heal himself.

The death reach of the Tongming River was like a wide lake, much larger than a normal river. From afar, it looked like an endless ocean.

Guoguo stood at the stern of the canoe and used a branch to row to the deep section of the Tongming River.

To get the food that Zhang Ruochen had promised it, the Greedy Rabbit spared no efforts.

# Chapter 316 - Martial Soul VS Beast Soul

Chapter 316: Martial Soul VS Beast Soul

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

Spiritual Qi was floating in the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

The Time and Space Spinel was a source of Spiritual Qi, so it released Spiritual Qi all the time.

Zhang Ruochen sat cross-legged with a Spirit Flower Petal in his hands. The Genuine Qi of Spiritual Fire spurted from his body to refine the petal.

Under the refinement of his Genuine Qi, the Spirit Flower Petal thawed a little and a drip of Spiritual Fluid dropped. It emitted a strong exotic fragrance in Zhang Ruochen's hand.

“CRACK!” Zhang Ruochen inhaled the fluid into his Meridians to fuse with his Genuine Qi.

As Spiritual Fluid entered his Meridians, it became a strong fire-like potency, circulating with Genuine Qi. It flowed through the whole body, muscles, meridians, blood, internal organs and Tianchong. Finally, it gathered at the Qi Sea in his glabella.

Every inhalation of the Spiritual Fluid advanced his martial cultivation.

As it thawed, the petal of the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower became smaller and smaller.

WHOOSH...

Nearly an hour passed. A vast amount of Spiritual Fire gushed from Zhang Ruochen's body. It formed a five-meter fire ball, with him at its center.

The power became stronger and stronger, a balloon that was going to burst. His Meridians couldn't hold this much strong power, so it poured out.

It signified that Zhang Ruochen was going to break the shackle and reach a new realm.

**BAM!**

A fire mark appeared on his glabella and the Qi Sea in his mind made a crack.

Spiritual Qi shook the entire internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

Zhang Ruochen's Qi Sea rapidly expanded with all his Meridians extending at a high speed. After a moment, he finally broke through the realm, reaching the Completion of the Earth Realm in one stroke.

**A breakthrough!**

As the capacity of his Qi pool increased, it became hungry and began to absorb the surrounding energy.

Spiritual Fire, which had been swirling around Zhang Ruochen, rushed into his glabella like a flood. It went through the Sacred Mark and finally arrived in the expanded Qi Sea.

He had absorbed one-third of the Spirit Flower Petal before his breakthrough.

His refinement and assimilation were now faster.

Half an hour later, he had fully absorbed the Spirit Flower Petal. It strengthened his Genuine Qi so that it covered almost 40 percent of his Qi pool.

There was a layer of faint light shining from his skin.

“I've finally reached the Completion of the Earth Realm. I wonder how much my power has strengthened.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his arm and lightly shoved his palm forward. Strong Genuine Qi gathered to form a two-meter-long giant handprint ahead.

The handprint alone could wound masters like Guo Shisan and Cao Lin badly.

Zhang Ruochen didn't display the handprint. He ran exercises to take back all of the Genuine Qi from it.

“If I refine one more Spirit Flower Petal, I should be able to perfect the Genuine Qi Practice and reach the Peak of the Completion of the Earth Realm. Then, my strength will be even further enhanced.”

Zhang Ruochen did not go about refining the second petal, because he realized the fighting outside was coming to an end.

Sure enough, strength of the Silverlight Shark superior. It had injured the giant octopus severely and won the Spirit Flower Seed.

Although badly wounded, the octopus beast's power was just slightly less than the Silverlight Shark's. It took five Spirit Flower Petals as it was escaping.

The Silverlight Shark won the remaining four petals and the Spirit Flower Seed. It once again issued a shout, as if claiming itself dominator of this area and showing its strong power.

Savage beasts in the water were trembling with fear when they heard the roar. They did not dare to take the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower and immediately swam away.

The whole water area became silent once more.

The Silverlight Shark swam to the bottom to swallow the seed and the remaining four petals. They would be a mighty power for him to evolve into a five-level savage beast.

The Silverlight Shark was a savage beast of the superior class in the fourth level. Its force could contend against a warrior at the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

The Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower could enhance the shark's physical quality and would probably make him evolve.

Becoming a fifth-level savage beast would be completely different.

It would be a top dominator at the Death Reach and the waters under its rule would be even broader.

With success in sight it was extremely excited.

However...

Where were the Spiritual Flower Seed and five petals it had swallowed?

They had just vanished.

Where were they?

The Silverlight Shark suddenly became anxious. So close to becoming a fifth-level beast, how could this happen?

It could not believe that the swallowed treasures had just vanished.

Once Zhang Ruochen put the Spirit Flower Seed and the four Spirit Flower Petals into his Space Spinel, dressed in the Flying Fish Armor, he rushed from the spinel and entered into the Silverlight Shark's belly.

There were strongly corrosive liquids in the Silverlight Shark's stomach. If not for the Flying Fish Armor, Zhang Ruochen's body would be eroded.

"Silverlight Shark, it's your time to die!"

Covered in armour, Zhang Ruochen pulled out and wielded the Abyss Ancient Sword. He sliced off the Silverlight Shark's main artery.

He continued to attack other crucial parts of the Silverlight Shark.

Silverlight Shark felt a sharp pain from his abdomen and felt Zhang Ruochen's aura.

When did I swallow a human?

Without time to think, the annoyed Silverlight Shark immediately unleashed its beast soul.

Dazzling light burst forth from its brain. A ferocious shadow of soul flew out with an aura of wild beast.

**CLASH!**



The beast soul rushed into its abdomen and attacked Zhang Ruochen.

The beast soul of a savage beast was the same as the Martial Soul of a warrior.

Only a savage beast in the superior class of the fourth level could refine a Martial Soul and reach the realm of Martial Soul Out of Body.

The Silverlight Shark's beast soul broke out tyrannical power, baring fierce teeth. It chomped at Zhang Ruochen attempting to bite him into pieces.

“You have your beast soul, I own a Martial Soul, too.”

Zhang Ruochen promptly communicated with the Vessel of Spirit, and a white light column flew out over his head.

A shadow that looked exactly like Zhang Ruochen flew out and met the Silverlight Shark's beast soul head-on.

BOOM!

The beast soul and the Martial Soul collided together, forming a strong energy wave.

In his previous life, Zhang Ruocheng had only had cultivation at the Completion of the Heaven Realm, but he had remained the top of the Heaven Board with stronger power than inferior warriors who were at the Fish-dragon Realm.

His Martial Soul was definitely more powerful than the souls of the warriors at the Completion of the Heaven Realm. And it was just slightly less than that of Fish-dragon Realm warriors.

And now, the intention of his Martial Soul had naturally improved. It could match the souls of Fish-dragon Realm warriors.

However, his cultivation had not reached the Heaven Realm. He could only use the Vessel of Spirit to communicate with his Martial Soul, the power exerted by which was not robust enough.

After reaching the Completion of the Earth Realm, Zhang Ruochen could use more power from his Martial Soul. So it

was parallel for him to compete with the Silverlight Shark's beast soul.

“Though the Silverlight Shark is a fourth-level superior-class savage beast, it was hurt during the war with that Octopus. Also, some of its vital parts have been cut, which makes it weaker. Even if its beast soul is the same as a warrior in the Completion of the Heaven Realm, its power is still limited.”

Both the beast soul and the Martial Soul could mobilize the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi and transfer it into their own power.

The more powerful the soul was, the more Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi it could control, and the power it exploded was more formidable.

The greatest advantage Zhang Ruochen had was not that his Martial Soul was stronger than the Silverlight Shark's beast soul, but the fact that he was in the Silverlight Shark's abdomen. No matter how violently the two souls fought, the hapless Silverlight Shark would lose.

The Silverlight Shark had originally thought that its beast soul could easily kill the human, but it was unexpected that the man had practiced Martial Soul.

There was almost nothing its beast soul could do to deal with its opponent.

The two souls were fighting fiercely, causing more wounds in the Silverlight Shark's viscera. It could feel more drastic aching.

It was spitting blood and groaning in pain.

“Weapon of thunderbolt!”

The Spiritual Qi in the water gathered toward Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul and transformed into lightning.

The lightning twisted into a dagger and stabbed into the shadow of the beast soul.

Seeing the beast soul would be pierced by thunderbolt dagger...

Suddenly, the Silverlight Shark begged for mercy. Through its beast soul, it talked to Zhang Ruochen, “Superior of Human tribe, I’d like to submit to you and be your mount, please spare my life.”

The sharp thunderbolt Dagger suspended over its beast soul blowing bright light. It frightened the shark into begging.

Even without powerful strength, Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul still had robust deterrence.

The reason the Silverlight Shark was willing to surrender to him was that it felt the great power of his Martial Soul.

It assumed Zhang Ruochen was a warrior in Fish-dragon Realm since he owned such a powerful Martial Soul. It was not disgraced to submit to him.

Whether human beings or savage beasts, all honored superiors.

If the Silverlight Shark had known that Zhang Ruochen was only at the Completion of the Earth Realm, it would not have surrendered even if it died. It was the dominator in this water, how could it submit to a weaker human?

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Why should I believe you? What should I do if you change your mind and bite me?”

The Silverlight Shark was afraid of provoking the human master, so it said in haste, “I would like to dedicate my beast soul. As long as it is held by you, you still can destroy it any time you think I’m going to betray you.”

The Silverlight Shark had great intelligence. It was clear to it that making a huge sacrifice was the only way to stay alive.

# Chapter 317 - Six Red Spider Vessels

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The beast soul was the soul of the Silverlight Shark.

Both human beings and savage beasts would die if their soul broke.

Generally, a savage beast's soul could only survive inside its body. However, when the soul became a martial soul, it could be separated.

The Silverlight Shark was offering to give its beast soul to Zhang Ruochen in order to survive.

After some contemplation, Zhang Ruochen decided to accept the Silverlight Shark's beast soul.

The Silverlight Shark had strong power and it was a water dominator. It would be good for him to control a savage beast like this. He might even be able to make use of the Silverlight Shark to deal with masters from the Black Market.

“OK! In that case, you can put your beast soul into this scroll.”

Zhang Ruochen's glabella flared. A scroll flew out and landed on his hand.

The scroll spread out. In the painting, a Sacred Prime Tree was sending out a strong momentum. This frightened the Silverlight Shark even more. He had a sense that the man in front of him was unfathomable.

It was the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, which had once sealed Blackie.

Only the power of the Yin Yang Wooden Graph could suppress the Silverlight Shark's beast soul. There was no need for Zhang Ruochen to be wary of it.

After putting the Silverlight Shark's beast soul into the Yin Yang Wooden Graph, Zhang Ruochen rolled up the painting and retracted his Qi Sea.

Since he could now control Silverlight Shark's beast soul, there was no need for him to stay inside its belly.

He flew out through its mouth and landed on its back.

The Silverlight Shark surged out from the water with Zhang Ruochen on its back.

It was nearly dark. The moon was floating in the sky.

Sunset glowed as red as fire.

It was about to sink below the horizon.

Zhang Ruochen took out a Fourth Class Pill, the Muscle Growing Pill. He threw it to the Silverlight Shark and motioned for the shark to take it to heal.

"Master, thank you very much." The Silverlight Shark said respectfully.

Given that Zhang Rouchen now controlled its soul, the Silverlight Shark must respect him. It dared not resist against him.

The fourth-level savage beast was highly intelligent. It had the ability to learn human languages quickly.

It was only a fourth-level savage beast. It was said that a seventh-level savage beast could even practice into a human shape.

Looking at the sun setting in the sky, Zhang Ruochen said, "You are familiar with the Death river, do you know where the Four-winged Earth Dragon's Underwater Dragon Palace is?"

"Master, you want to go the Underwater Dragon Palace?" The Silverlight Shark was surprised.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Don’t tell me that you don’t know where it is.”

“Of course not. It’s just... just the Underwater Dragon Palace is located in the depth of the death river. What’s more, it is the Three-clawed Flood Dragon’s place. A human could die trying to break into it.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Is the Three-clawed Flood Dragon powerful?”

The Silverlight Shark answered, “500 years ago, a human army caused a massacre, killing all the powerful savage beasts. Even the overlord, the Four-winged Earth Dragon was killed. But a son of the Four-winged Earth Dragon survived, it was the Three-clawed Flood Dragon.”

“I once visited Three-clawed Flood Dragon; it was a horrible Dominator, its breathing alone was enough to make me too scared to move. Don’t go to the Underwater Dragon Palace, Master. If you disturb it, we will die.”

Zhang Rouchen had to go to the Underwater Dragon Palace.

The Buddha Sarira was extremely important to him.

Zhang Ruochen touched his lower jaw and pondered. Finally, he asked, “Silverlight Shark, you call me master. Are you willing to obey my order, no matter what the order is?”

“Of course.” The Shark answered.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Okay! Go see the Three-clawed Flood Dragon and tell it that a massive group of humans are going to the Death river. They want to break into the Underwater Dragon Palace and steal the treasure left by the Four-winged Earth Dragon.”

“Master, who wants to break into the Underwater Dragon Palace?” Silverlight Shark asked.

“You’d better not ask questions that you shouldn’t ask.” Zhang Ruochen said.

The Silverlight Shark stopped asking questions at once and went to inform the Three-clawed Flood Dragon.

Before leaving, it told Zhang Ruochen where the Underwater Dragon Palace was located.

“When I go to the Underwater Dragon Palace, I can test my speed and see if I have a faster burst rate.”

He stood on the surface of the water as steady as if he was standing on the ground. He took a deep breath and leapt into the air.

As time went on, Zhang Ruochen went faster and faster. He quickly broke a speed of 300 meters per second, followed by 310 per second, then 320, 330, 331, 332...

As his speed got closer to the speed velocity, the resistance of the air became stronger and stronger.

“CRACK!”

Zhang Ruochen’s clothes started to burn, quickly turning to flying ash.

Meanwhile, he was feeling ill. His upper body became heavier and heavier while his lower body was getting lighter and lighter. His eardrum had expanded and he heard a deep ringing sound.

PFFT!

He threw himself headfirst into the water, making a huge splash.

A short time later, he leaped out of the water panting for breath. His long hair covered his face.

The closer he got to the speed velocity, the greater the air resistance was. If his body hadn’t reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, he would have been torn up by the hedge force.

Zhang Ruochen had been wearing the Flying Fish Armor, so he hadn’t felt the powerful pressure.

However, when he broke through speed velocity in the cultivation of the Earth Realm, he found it was so difficult.

His speed nearly reached the speed velocity, but the closer he got, the more pressure he felt. Even though his body had

reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, it wasn't enough.

Warriors in the Heaven Realm who had a Celestial Bodysield could withstand the pressure.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen didn't have a Celestial Bodysield. He had to use his body to withstand the power. As a result, he felt ill.

“This could explain why it is so difficult to reach the Earth Realm's Ultimate Realm. Even with my power and advantages, I cannot break through. Do I have to advance my body to the Heaven Realm's Dawn State, to reach the Ultimate Realm?”

If a warrior in the Earth Realm could make his body reach the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm, it was a great achievement.

There were very few warriors whose body had reached the Heaven Realm's Mid Stage.

The number of warriors in the Completion of the Earth Realm, whose bodies had reached the Heaven Realm's Advanced Stage, like Zhang Ruochen, was very few. The ones who had were great Geniuses. If a warrior wanted to achieve this, he would need a large number of Treasured Body Refining Medicine, to put in a lot of effort and come across the right advantages.

As for one's body reaching the Heaven Realm's Dawn State while still in the Earth Realm, it was legendary.

According to Zhang Ruochen's understanding, it had only happened once. 800 years ago, among the Nine Emperors, Emperor Wu had a strong enough body that his body reached the Heaven Realm's Dawn State when he was in the Completion of the Earth Realm.

Zhang Ruochen was about to reach the Earth Realm's Ultimate Realm. Perhaps if he advanced his body to the Heaven Realm's Dawn State he could break through the realm.

“Only by getting Dragon Sarira or Dragon's Blood, can I improve my physical quality to reach the Earth Realm's Ultimate Realm.”



Zhang Ruochen's clothes had burned to ashes. He stood naked with a big smile on his face. "That explains why the Elders who have reached the Heaven Realm all wear special silver robes. Common clothes must burn when they run at a very high speed."

Although Zhang Ruochen was just an internal student, he had enjoyed a treat that only silver gowned Elders could enjoy. He had gained three sets of silver robes.

After taking out a silver robe and putting it on, Zhang Ruochen continued his journey. He stepped onto the water's surface and headed for Underwater Dragon Palace at a very high speed.

Entering the vicinity of the Underwater Dragon Palace, he sensed warriors' breathing.

He slowed down and put on the Flying Fish Armor. He dove down and used the power of space to hide himself as he moved forward carefully.

He let out his Martial Soul to explore the area at the same time.

He found six Red Spider Vessels hundreds of kilometers away.

Zhang Ruochen used his Martial Soul to explore, but he still stayed at a distance in order to not be found by the strong vessels.

"So much powerful aura. Like Le said, the Black Market has assembled a great number of warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm. There may be thousands of Martial Arts superiors here."

The Black Market's power could not be underestimated. Thousands of warriors in the Completion of the Earth Realm; it was horrible.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was invisible. It floated in the air like a gust of wind and watched the six Red Spider Vessels.

He discovered that two of his acquaintances, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi, were on a Red Spider Vessel.

Their hands were bound with iron chains and their legs were shackled. On their necks, chests, backs and bellies, were many whip scars, and they were dripping with blood.

In addition to them, hundreds of ragged warriors of the Earth Realm were tied to the masts.

“They’ve been caught by the Black Market masters. Did senior sister apprentice Huang and senior sister apprentice Duanmu manage to escape?”

Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul searched all six Red Spider Vessels and didn’t find Huang Yanchen or Duanmu Xingling. He was relieved.

“I can understand why the Black Market would want to catch Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi. After all, the Black Market and the School of the Martial Market have been hostile to each other for ages. But why did they kidnap the other warriors and why so many?”

# Chapter 318 - Zhang Tiangui's Revenge

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

As Zhang Ruochen was thinking about how to rescue Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi, several warriors from the Black Market came out of the Red Spider Vessel.

Jin Chuan and Guo Shisan were in the front. Behind them were other warriors whose cultivation had reached the Completion of the Earth Realm. They wore black robes and had weapons on their waists.

Everyone showed arrogance.

“Why have you kidnapped me? Who are you? I am the successor of the Wang Clan, Wang Jingtian. If my father finds out what you did to me, you will die.”

A magnificently dressed man was tied to the mast. He was shouting as if his identity as the heir of the Wang Clan was so great that it would scare them.

Jin Chuan cast a cold look and gave orders to a nearby warrior.

The warrior nodded and sneered, walking towards Wang Jingtian. He took out a blazed whip, a sixth-level Genuine Martial Arm, and began lashing Wang Jingtian.

CLAP!

CLAP!

After only two lashes, Wang Jingtian cried out loudly. He was begging for mercy.

But the warrior continued to whip him ruthlessly. His flesh and blood flew in all directions.

And he did not stop until Wang Jingtian was almost dead.

“Bah! The Wang Clan actually dares to threaten our Black Market.”

He spat contemptuously in Wang Jingtian’s face.

On the deck, the other warriors had originally wanted to rebel. When they saw this scene, everyone calmed down.

Even though they wanted to rebel, all they could do was keeping silent.

They had just witnessed Wang Jingtian get beat almost to death.

Jin Chuan looked at the warriors and focused on Si Xingkong. He walked towards Si Xingkong and said coldly, “Si Xingkong, you are a top master in the younger generation of Omen Ridge. You are different from them. Our young master values talent, so, he is giving you one last chance. If you tell us where Zhang Ruochen is, the young master will spare your life. Think carefully. This is your final chance.”

Si Xingkong’s long hair covered his face, but it did not cover his free temperament.

He smiled and said, “I don’t know where junior fellow apprentice Zhang is. Even if I knew, I wouldn’t tell you.”

Jin Chuan sneered. His eyes were murderous. He transferred Genuine Qi to his fingers, about to stab Si Xingkong in the heart.

“Wait!”

Zhang Tiangui came out from the cabin with his arms crossed behind his back and said to Jin Chuan, “Predecessor Jin, the young master is very interested in Si Xingkong. He wants to see how strong the first genius of Omen Ridge is.”

“Does the young master want to test Si Xingkong’s cultivation by himself?” Jin Chuan asked.

Jin Chuan did not dare look down upon Zhang Tiangui. Di Yi trusted him and gave him preferential treatment.

Zhang Tiangui shook his head and laughed. “To test Si Xingkong’s cultivation? I am enough!”

Chang Qiqi laughed aloud, “Zhang Tiangui, you were defeated by my eldest brother. Only a few months have passed, and yet you boast without shame.”

Zhang Tiangui didn’t get angry. He said, “I’m different now. My level has reached new heights under the guidance of the young master.”

Chang Qiqi sneered and said, “Who the hell do you think you are? Do you think the eldest brother will fight against you? You overestimate yourself!”

Chang Qiqi was so sharp-tongued that Zhang Tiangui who was in a state of peace of tranquility was irritated by his words.

He gave a cold look and attacked immediately. He squeezed Chang Qiqi’s neck and pulled him up.

Zhang Tiangui squeezed hard, making Chang Qiqi’s neck thinner and thinner. He let out a gasping sound as if his throat and cervical vertebra were broken.

Chang Qiqi’s face grew more and more pale. The veins on his face were bulging as if about to burst.

“Enough!” Si Xingkong shouted. “Let him go! Zhang Tiangui, I’ll fight with you.”

Zhang Tiangui sneered; his mouth was like a hook. He released Chang Qiqi’s neck and threw him to the ground. “Perfect! Very good! As expected your brotherhood is deep. Come on, untie Si Xingkong!”

Two Black Market masters in their fifties walked towards them and quickly untied Si Xingkong.

As for Chang Qiqi, he was dragged aside by the two masters.

One master pulled out his dagger and put it up to Chang Qiqi’s neck.

“Don’t hurt my junior fellow apprentice.”

Si Xingkong shot out an Icing air and dashed towards Chang Qiqi.

Zhang Tiangui flashed in front of Si Xingkong and laughed. “Si Xingkong, if you can defeat me, you can save Chang Qiqi. But if you lose, he must die.”

Si Xingkong clenched his fists. His eyes were red with rage.

“Zhang...Tian...gui...” Si Xingkong gritted his teeth in anger.

With Si Xingkong’s Genuine Qi surging out, the air around him shook.

He unleashed a long fist covered with purple light that formed a huge fist shadow.

Zhang Tiangui sneered. He separated his feet slightly to dodge Si Xingkong’s attack.

Si Xingkong was shocked. He hadn’t expected that Zhang Tiangui could dodge his fist so easily at such a high speed. It was a world of difference compared to a few months ago.

Zhang Tiangui was now a Four-realm Fighting Genius. His cultivation had reached a new high, in only a few months’ time.

“Si Xingkong, during our last battle, you defeated me in seven attacks. Now, I can beat you with five attacks. You will taste failure.”

Zhang Tiangui hummed coldly. Both of his feet left the ground as he kicked towards Si Xingkong’s chest.

Si Xingkong stepped on the deck and leaped up more than 33 meters to dodge Zhang Tiangui’s attack and strike towards Zhang Tiangui’s head.

“Thousand Hands of the War God!”

Zhang Tiangui bent his legs and unleashed his palms towards the sky. A palm shadow appeared as if he had released 1,000 handprints at the same time.

“BANG!”

Both of their handprints crashed into each other forming an energy ripples that flew in all directions.

The other Black Market warriors standing nearby were forced to step back.

“Marvelous, a battle between two top masters of the Omen Ridge. These guys must have the ability to defeat martial arts legends of the Heaven Realm!” One of masters murmured, shocked.

PFFT!

Si Xingkong spat out a mouthful of blood. He flew back.

Zhang Tiangui’s strong palm power was beyond Si Xingkong’s expectation, much stronger than his.

Seeing Si Xingkong hurt, Zhang Tiangui was happy. “The Dragon’s Blood Di Yi gave me was a great thing. Now my body’s physical quality is very close to that of warriors at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. I may be a Four-and-a-Half-realm Fighting Genius.”

“It was said that there might be Golden Dragon remains in the Underwater Dragon Palace. If he could get Golden Dragon’s Blood, he could reach the level of Five-realm Fighting Genius, which would be even better.”

Zhang Tiangui had wild ambitions. He fawned over Di Yi only because he wanted to gain precious practice resources from him.

In fact, deep in his heart, he had no respect for Di Yi.

“Now you know how big a disparity there is between us? Haha!”

Zhang Tiangui laughed loudly. All of a sudden, he leapt forward and released his palms once again, striking Si Xingkong in the chest.

BANG! Si Xingkong flew backwards again and spat out a mouthful of blood.

Zhang Tiangui jumped up and flew high, stomping hard on Si Xingkong’s back.

CRACK!

This attack stepped Si Xingkong down to the board.

Si Xingkong's body hit the deck so hard that the sound of his bones breaking could be heard.

“Eldest brother.”

“Zhang Tiangui, I'm going to kill you!”

Chang Qiqi roared and tried to break free from the two Black Market masters.

However, both warriors were masters of the Completion of the Earth Realm. Moreover, they were elders who had been practicing for more than 50 years. Their Genuine Qi was stronger than Chang Qiqi's.

One of them bashed at Chang Qiqi's temple with a knife handle. His temple Meridians broke and drops of blood surged out.

Chang Qiqi's face was filled with blood and all he could see was black. BANG! He fell down on the deck.

“Junior... fellow apprentice... Chang...”

Si Xingkong shouted out. He lay on the deck in pain. He felt like all his bones were broken. He blamed himself. He had thought that if he could defeat Zhang Tiangui, he could save Chang Qiqi's life.

Zhang Tiangui stepped hard on Si Xingkong's back and chuckled arrogantly. “Si Xingkong, I can give you one more chance. If you kneel before me and make three kowtows to me, I will consider letting your junior fellow apprentice go. How about that?”

“Zhang... you are dreaming.”

Every word was forced out as Si Xingkong gripped his teeth hard.

“Am I? I admire your great pride. But your junior fellow apprentice will die.”



Zhang Tiangui motioned to the two Black Market masters with his eyes and sneered. “Cut Chang Qiqi into pieces and throw them in the water. Feed the savage beasts.”

# Chapter 320 - The War of Death

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Yes, sir.”

The two Black Market masters sneered and waved their war knives towards Chang Qiqi.

“Wait a minute!”

Si Xingkong clenched his teeth and shouted, “Zhang Tiangui, I agree... I agree... OK?”

“Ha ha ha ha!”

Zhang Tiangui burst out a great laughter. “As expected, you are righteous and affectionate. I have to say, I admire you! Kneel down and give me a kotow.”

Zhang Tiangui moved his feet and stood upright. Expectations were rising in his mind.

A few months ago, Si Xingkong had been the eldest brother at the School of the Martial Market, full of high spirits. But now he was being defeated by Zhang Tiangui.

Only a few months had passed. Now Si Xingkong was lying on the ground like a dog, his life in the hands of Zhang Tiangui.

For Zhang Tiangui, the satisfied feeling of power was so wonderful.

Si Xingkong dragged his badly injured body and climbed up from the ground glaring at Zhang Tiangui.

As a warrior, Si Xingkong would rather to die than be humiliated.

But as a friend and senior fellow apprentice, he couldn't ignore his junior fellow apprentice.

He was a great man with dignity as well as affection.

Between dignity and his junior fellow apprentice's life, he must choose one.

This was a much more difficult problem than death. If Si Xingkong could choose, he would choose to die. It would be easier for him.

Si Xingkong closed his eyes with a long sigh and was about to kneel down.

Zhang Tiangui's smile grew larger.

But suddenly, two ice swords surged out from the water. They rotated and finally shot onto the Red Spider Vessel.

CRACK!

The two nine-meter ice swords pierced through the Genuine Qi of the two masters who were holding Chang Qiqi. The swords penetrated through their chests leaving two icy sword tips.

The blood covering the two tips looked like bloody jade.

“AHH...”

“Young master, save...me...”

Looking down at the two ice swords pierced through their chests, the two masters were frozen with fear.

BANG! BANG!

Their vitality ran out. They fell to the ground at the same time.

However, wounds in their chests didn't bleed.

The blood was sealed with Icing cold.

The sudden change left all the Black Market warriors aboard the Red Spider Vessel in a panic. They all looked towards the surface of the water.

A hundred meters out, a warrior in red armour with a broken sword was gliding across the water. He walked towards the Red Spider Vessel.

Every step he took froze the surrounding water into ice.

It was he who had used the ice sword to kill the two masters.

“Zhang Ruochen!”

Although he was covered in armour, Jin Chuan recognized him.

Jin Chuan clenched his fists, with a complicated feeling. He was angry but excited.

What really angered him was that Zhang Ruochen had killed his daughter, Jin Yeyun.

Of course, Jin Yeyun had actually been killed under Le’s sword, but Jin Chuan didn’t know that. He hated Zhang Ruochen.

What really excited him was that Zhang Ruochen had appeared.

It would not have been easy for Jin Chuan to find him if he had remained hidden.

Of all those present, aside from Jin Chuan, Zhang Tiangui was the most excited.

Originally, he had just wanted to humiliate Si Xingkong. He hadn’t expected to draw Zhang Ruochen out. It was an unexpected harvest.

Excellent!

Zhang Tiangui thought,

“Zhang Ruochen! Zhang Ruochen! There’s a way to reach the heaven and yet, you decide to break into the underworld. If you can escape successfully today, I will be shocked.”

Zhang Tiangui was so delirious with joy that his blood was boiling.

If he could kill Zhang Ruochen, he would regain the honor that once belonged to him. He must get back what Zhang

Ruochen had taken away.

In fact, Zhang Ruochen never wanted this. It was a dead end.

If he had remained hidden in the water and ignored Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong, he would not have been found by the warriors of the Black Market.

But, he couldn't convince himself.

Zhang Ruochen had no other choice. Si Xingkong was being forced to give up his dignity to save his junior fellow apprentice's life.

He would sooner die a hero than drag out an ignoble existence and see his junior fellow apprentice being humiliated.

Even Di Yi sitting in the cabin looked out the window and stared at Zhang Ruochen. He sneered and thought, "He is choosing to come forward. Is he being brave or is he just stupid?"

Zhang Ruochen stopped when he was 160 meters from the Red Spider Vessel. "Let elder brother Chang and elder brother Si go. I will be your captive."

Standing on the bow Jin Chuan sneered with his creepy face. "Zhang Ruochen, you aren't qualified to talk terms with us. Do you think you can escape now that you are here? Guo Shisan, Xia Houshuo, you two take Zhang Ruochen."

WOOSH!

Guo Shisan and Xia Houshuo leapt up at the same time and charged toward water, attacking Zhang Ruochen from two different directions.

As a top Master of Martial Arts in the Square Commandery, Guo Shisan's power was strong. He held an epee but still rushed towards Zhang Ruochen's right at a speed faster than sound.

He slid on the water with the Genuine Qi inside his body surging hard and forming a Blood Wave five meters wide. He lifted his sword and struck towards Zhang Ruochen without any other moves.

A surge of vast and mighty sword Qi flew downward like a waterfall.

The surface of the water was split, forming a path.

The waves poured to the left and right of the water wall.

Zhang Ruochen stood in front of the sword Qi like an ancient pine rooted in water. When he waved his arms, the Genuine Qi turned into wind that surged out.

A wave of water rose and condensed into an ice wall 10 meters high and three meters thick.

**BANG!**

Guo Shisan cut through the ice wall in one single motion, then struck at Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the sword. With contracted pupils he could see everything clearly as if in slow motion.

In reality, Guo Shisan was very fast, even faster than Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen held the Abyss Ancient Sword and condensed his Genuine Qi into palms activating the sword's inscriptions. He lifted his arms and shook sword light towards Guo Shisan.

( )

His counterattack was as fast as the speed of sound.

For an instant, all the sword Qi flew out.

Guo Shisan's expression changed. He immediately held up his Celestial Bodyshield and blocked it with his sword.

**BANG!**

Guo Shisan flew back and fell to the ground more than 30 meters away. His Celestial Bodyshield had been pierced by the sword Qi, leaving two cuts, one on his belly and one on his right leg.

**SWOOSH!**

Having repelled Guo Shisan, Zhang Ruochen stepped forward and flew towards the Red Spider Vessel.

All of a sudden, a shadow dashed towards him, it was Xia Houshuo, Jin Chuan's first disciple. He was a martial arts legend at the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. He was famous in the Square Commandery.

“Zhang Ruochen, if you want to break into the Red Spider Vessel, you have to pass through me first.”

“Tianyuan Vigorous Qi!”

Xia Houshuo spread his arms. He was holding a globe cover of Vigorous Qi. It was 40 meters in diameter and emanated bright white light.

Standing in the center of the cover, Xia Houshuo moved his palms with force.

A huge handprint appeared on the Vigorous Qi cover and pressed towards Zhang Ruochen's head.

“Dragon in the Sky!”

Zhang Ruochen twisted and swung. All his bones connected together causing a sound like dragon's roar.

ROAR!

Zhang Ruochen struck towards Xia Houshuo with sevenfold power. All of a sudden, Xia Houshuo's Vigorous Qi cover broke.

Xiang Ruochen's palm hit him and he spat out a mouthful of blood. He fell into the water with a huge splash.

“Awesome! With just one attack, Xia Houshuo was badly injured. Zhang Ruochen deserves to be a top master among the younger generation.”

“Even Guo Shisan was hurt badly by Zhang Ruochen. He is talented in both palm technique and sword technique.”

“Shit! He is flying towards the Red Spider Vessel.”

...

When Zhang Ruochen landed on the Red Spider Vessel, more than 10 Black Market warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm rushed forward and surrounded him.

“Sacred Wave Sword!”

Zhang Ruochen slashed with his sword. He surged out Genuine Qi that turned into waves of sword Qi.

PFFT!

As the sword Qi swept, blood spilled and screaming arose.

Six Earth Realm warriors were chopped in half by the sword Qi. They died. Other warriors with higher cultivation reluctantly blocked Zhang Ruochen’s attack but were still injured.

Zhang Ruochen dashed towards Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong. He grabbed Chang Qiqi’s right arm and Si Xingkong’s left arm and dragged them away.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen’s two hands were busy, Zhang Tiangui seized the opportunity to quickly unleash a fist technique of Spiritual Stage, attacking him from behind.

Zhang Tiangui didn’t have the ability to defeat Zhang Ruochen if they fought face to face.

However, still grasping his injured brothers, he turned back to Zhang Tiangui.

His attack was enough to cause serious injury.

Zhang Tiangui was strong. As he punched, a crackling sound rose. His fist turned silvery like an iron fist.

Zhang Ruochen could feel Zhang Tiangui’s fist strength. It was as if he had eyes in the back of his head. He nudged Si Xingkong forward, pushing him out of the Red Spider Vessel and into the water.

He turned back quickly and pointed his left thumb.

“Sun Meridian Ripple!”

All his Genuine Qi surged into his thumb. Like a roaring flame, it turned into sword Qi and flew towards Zhang Tiangui’s fist.



# Chapter 321 - Dark Clouds Cover the Moon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Swoosh!”

A vigorous Sword Wave like the light of a blazing sun rushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s fingertip and collided with the fist of Zhang Tiangui.

“Boom!” A loud noise resounded.

The impact of the sword and the silver fist made the sound of metal crashing together.

The Sword Wave broke through Zhang Tiangui’s Genuine Qi and entered into his fist, cutting off his middle finger and stabbing through his palm.

Zhang Tiangui slid backward and hit the glittering bronze boat pole of the Red Spider Vessel, which was knocked lightly.

His viscera, torn by the Sword Breath, received serious damage. He felt a bloody and sweet taste from his throat as blood surged into his mouth, but he forcibly swallowed it.

“I... I cannot defend even... even one move.”

Just one move had greatly injured him, making Zhang Tiangui feel indignant.

The Ninth Prince, who had once been an invalid, had become so powerful. In the past, he could have killed Zhang Ruochen with only a single finger.

Though Zhang Tiangui knew that Zhang Ruochen was powerful, he did not imagine that he could be strong enough to

have already surpassed him.

Zhang Tiangui was so furious that he had been eclipsed by such a waste.

Soon, a severe pain could be felt on his right hand.

Not until now did Zhang Tiangui find that his middle finger had been cut off by that Sword Wave from Zhang Ruochen.

Spreading his hand out, there were only four fingers on it. The wound and his palm were bleeding, and the blinding pain made him scream.

Zhang Tiangui was arrogant, so he had enslaved Lin Chenyu and looked down upon Lin Chenyu because he was a waste.

However, he had never thought that he actually had become a waste as well.

“No, no...”

Zhang Tiangui could not accept that fact, so he roared out in pain. If his power was strong enough, he would torture Zhang Ruochen in various ways.

“Nice Sword Ripple of Ten Channels. I will battle you.”

There was a man’s voice that resounded out of the vessel.

Zhang Ruochen looked toward the cabin and saw a man wearing a gold mask, whose body exuded an overbearing aura. Although he was only in the Earth Realm of Martial Arts, his aura made warriors with a higher cultivation that his bow in awe.

Is he the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Di Yi?

Di Yi originally had been still sitting in the cabin. But suddenly, he disappeared.

In next moment, Di Yi stood in front of Zhang Ruochen, and the distance between his metal face and Zhang Ruochen’s face was only half a foot.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly see Di Yi’s cold eyes.

The speed of his Di Yi's palm was faster as he threw out a palm with his five fingers combined.

Instantaneously, numerous sparks of lightning appeared in the entire space.

“Crack!”

The center of the lightning converged into Di Yi's palm.

Zhang Ruochen frowned, then all of a sudden, he gathered all of his Genuine Qi and struck a palm out.

“Dragon and Elephant Returning to Earth!”

The roar of dragons and elephants resounded throughout his body, even the power of his palm became an illusory image of flying dragons and divine elephants.

“Boom!”

The two palms crashed together with a thud, and the whole Red Spider Vessel trembled.

Zhang Ruochen felt an overwhelming, strong power. He grasped Chang Qiqi's shoulder and flew out. They plummeted down under the vessel, landing in the icy and dark water.

“Thank you, young master, for taking me away.”

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen grasped Chang Qiqi and rushed directly into the water.

In the water, Zhang Ruochen quickly found Si Xingkong, who had been brought by him first. Grabbing them both with one in each hand and at a rapid speed, he quickly flew to the depths of the waters.

Di Yi had swept Zhang Ruochen away, but he also had to retreat a little. He looked at his palm with a smile.

“It's the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. I had just doubted that a prodigy could suddenly appear in Omen Ridge. Unexpectedly, he is a lay disciple of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. There are so many Saints in the Thousand Buddhas Sect. Who is his master?”

“Young master, how strong is his power?”

The Red Wish Emissary jumped out of the cabin enchantingly and gracefully—her body was so lithe, looking like a red leaf. Just a touch of her tiptoes sent her a distance of about 33 meters to arrive behind Di Yi.

Her pretty face and bright eyes were so enchanting that it made all the warriors on the vessel excited.

But, no one dared to have any wicked ideas due to her strong power. They all looked down without a second glance.

Di Yi flexed his fingers and said, “In the entire Eastern Region, only Bu Qianfan and the Saintess of Heresy could catch my one move among all the young warriors whose cultivation was in the Earth Realm. But now, Zhang Ruochen has appeared. What do you think about his strength?”

“He could be the scourge of the Black Market,” the Red Wish Emissary said seriously.

Di Yi had a cold look. Obviously, he agreed with the Red Wish Emissary, so he said, “Go after him and eliminate him.”

“Swoosh!”

Hearing what he had said, many masters of the Black Market rushed out, including the Purple Wind Emissary, the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club, and the Square Commandery Prince—they were all top-notch.

Even if Zhang Ruochen could fly into the sky and enter into the earth, he could not possibly escape while so many masters were chasing after him.

But when they were ready to capture him, a dark cloud that looked like many horses galloping rapidly covered the sky.

A howling wind blew over the water like a giant beast was roaring.

The dark clouds above had become thicker, even the moon and stars were hidden by them.

The whole world became gloomy, and no one could see anything in the pitch-black.

In just an instant, the Death River had gotten so dismal as if the whole world had vanished.

“What happened? How are there clouds suddenly?”

“It’s so cold. The temperature has dropped by half at least.”

“I feel a formidable power approaching. Did we disturb some strong savage beasts?”

...

All the warriors on the six Red Spider Vessels were panicking as the sudden celestial phenomena gave everyone a sinking feeling.

“Awoo!”

A dragon’s roar made the water roll as a 10-meter-high wave was formed that seemed to roll down from the dark clouds in the vault of heaven.

In the darkness, a huge dragon claw reached out from the void space. It slapped against a Red Spider Vessel, where the Vessel-defending Formation was quickly broken, making the vessel sink.

“Boom!”

Almost all the warriors who were on it fell into the water.

More than half of them were squashed by that claw, and only a few survived.

With such a horrifying power, even the warriors in the Completion of the Earth Realm could not withstand it. Their Meridians were ruptured, making their skin cut open and flesh tear. Soon after, they all died.

Under an attack of this strength, human power appeared to be very insignificant, as frail as ants.

“Young master, that must be the Three-clawed Flood Dragon, the lord of the Death River.”

The Purple Wind Emissary majestically stood behind Di Yi with a Dragonhead Long Spear.

Purple light materialized from his glabella, in which a purple moon flew out of the Sacred Mark, hanging in the darkness and illuminating the whole world.

Under its light, the originally black wave was covered with a purple light.

And the people on the vessel saw many giant savage beasts swimming in the water.

The warriors on the sunken Red Spider Vessel were all swallowed by those beasts without anyone surviving.

A rich smell of blood could be faintly detected and the bones of the dead could be seen floating on the water.

A full 200 Martial Arts Masters in the Completion of the Earth Realm on that vessel were all dead in just an instant.

It was a huge loss for the Black Market.

Di Yi said solemnly, “Red Wish Emissary, Jin Chuan, you two go to kill Zhang Ruochen. And the rest, follow me to deal with these Aquatic Savage Beasts. Now that the Three-clawed Flood Dragon wants to ruin my plan, I will slaughter it.”

“Yes, sir.”

“I shall cut off Zhang Ruochen’s head and bring it back to the young master.”

The Red Wish Emissary and Jin Chuan turned into two streamers and flew off into the darkness. They followed the scent to hunt down Zhang Ruochen.

...

Leading Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi, Zhang Ruochen swam fast, hoping that they could get out as soon as possible.

All of them were so strong that they would not drown even if they held their breath beneath the water for a full day.

Before long, a multitude of savage beasts appeared in the water, all rushing toward those six Red Spider Vessels.

Some beasts discovered Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi and attacked them. But, Zhang Ruochen fought

their way through.

Wearing the Flying Fish Armour, he could erupt at the speed of sound. Aside from meeting with a fourth-stage savage beast, no beast could threaten him.

The group of beasts did not scare Zhang Ruochen, on the contrary, he felt exultant. He knew that it had to be the Three-clawed Flood Dragon, who had such a formidable allure in the Death River. ( )

Now that the Three-clawed Flood Dragon and Aquatic Savage Beasts were pinning down those masters of the Black Market, they had a much better chance to escape.

Zhang Ruochen had gone to rescue Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi with a determination to die. But the appearance of the Aquatic Savage Beasts helped them to contain those enemies. Then, the three of them had gotten an opportunity to escape.

Before he became relaxed, a golden shadow came from the surface of the water.

“Zhang Ruochen, I have already found your breath. Do you think that hiding in the water will save you?”

The voice of Jin Chuan coming from above shook the water, and the waves were lifted up several meters high.

“Damn, it’s Jin Chuan.”

Zhang Ruochen swam to the bottom vigorously.

Suddenly, Jin Chuan, who was standing on the water, stretched out his palm.

A Genuine Qi light column burst out from his palm and gathered into a giant claw that dove into the water, capturing Zhang Ruochen and his companions.

# Chapter 322 - An Extraordinary Beauty in Red

Chapter 322: An Extraordinary Beauty in Red

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

“Boy, you cannot escape my grasp with your Earth Realm cultivation.”

Standing on the water, Jin Chuan laughed loudly with his hair and long beard flying. His breath became stronger and the thick Genuine Qi condensed into a golden cloud.

“Go to hell.”

The giant claw of Genuine Qi that was controlled by Jin Chuan began to generate power.

It slowly contracted with the wish of squeezing the three of them to death.

“I can only use the Defending Light Screen in the Spatial Ring.”

It could only be used three times, so unless he was in a dire situation, Zhang Ruochen was not willing to use it.

The power of the Genuine Qi claw became stronger and Zhang Ruochen immediately infused his Genuine Qi into the Spatial Ring, on which many space defense inscriptions then appeared.

“Swoosh!”

White lights came from the ring, forming a cocoon-shaped light screen that looked just like a micro-universe.

“You dare to wear an amulet treasure? I want to see how long your treasure can last.”

Jin Chuan laughed fiendishly as his other hand punched out and condensed a second Genuine Qi giant claw with a desire to break the cocoon-shaped light screen of the Spatial Ring.



“Jin Chuan’s cultivation is indeed profound. I will not be his match if I don’t raise my cultivation to the Heaven Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately closed his eyes and Genuine Qi gushed out from his body, causing a vision of a “hundred foot blizzard” of heaven and earth.

The snow blew on the water while the temperature was rapidly decreasing.

Gradually, the water there was frozen into a thick layer of ice.

Staying on the ice, Zhang Ruochen’s sword cut through Jin Chuan’s hand of Genuine Qi and he escaped, roaring with a sound wave, “Jin Chuan, do you dare to fight me in the water?”

“Why not?”

Jin Chuan did not take Zhang Ruochen seriously because, with his cultivation, it was so easy to deal with a people like Zhang Ruochen.

But Di Yi attached great importance to this guy—if he could kill Zhang Ruochen, it would be an honor for Di Yi.

Perhaps, he could take this opportunity to leave Omen Ridge and join the Black Market Excellence Hall.

It was also a huge merit, so Jin Chuan should seize the opportunity anyway.

As he stamped his feet “Crack!” the ice shattered.

“Boom!”

Surrounded by his Celestial Bodyshield, Jin Chuan turned into a golden light and dashed into the water.

However, he felt something terrible as he entered the water—a strong savage beast aura was approaching rapidly.

Not far away, a silver shark was coming, whose big eyes like two silver suns turned the black water into the color of quicksilver.

The Silverlight Shark showed its sharp teeth and rushed at Jin Chuan with wind blades coming from its mouth.

“Swish!” The wind blades whizzed and slid through the water, all of them attacking Jin Chuan.

“A fourth-level superior-class savage beast, the Silverlight Shark.”

Jin Chuan was immediately shocked and stretched out hands, then his Genuine Qi gushed and formed an ice wall that froze all of the wind blades from the Silverlight Shark.

Why did this horrible savage beast appear here so suddenly?

This fourth-level superior-class savage beast, which could be compared to a warrior in the Completion of Heaven Realm, had much deeper cultivation than Jin Chuan.

“Clang!”

The Silverlight Shark smashed into the ice wall and cracked it.

In just one shot, the nearly five-meter-thick wall broke into pieces of ice stones that flew down under the water.

The powerful impact force also knocked Jin Chuan away. He was so confused as to why the shark had attacked just him and ignored Zhang Ruochen.

But, he was afraid to fight the Silverlight Shark in the water, so he quickly fled to the surface, in a hurry to get far away.

The Silverlight Shark was more formidable than he was, let alone in the water, where its power could be exerted to its maximum extent and defeat a warrior in the Completion of the Heaven Realm.

Jin Chuan was only in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, so all he could do was just escape upon seeing a Silverlight Shark.

Watching him flee, Zhang Ruochen sighed with relief, then he took Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong to continue their escape.

They did not know how long had passed and, to their surprise, an island appeared on the water.

Zhang Ruochen felt exhausted because the use of the Flying Fish Armor consumed a massive amount of his Genuine Qi.

So, he took Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi, who were badly injured, to the island for a temporary rest.

They should have been safe because they had escaped so far away!

“Thank you, junior fellow apprentice Zhang, for saving our lives.”

Arriving at the beach, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi suppressed their injuries and simultaneously bowed to Zhang Ruochen.

They were deeply touched because they knew that he had taken enormous risks to save them. How could they repay such kindness?

“Recuperate first, we’ll talk about that later,” Zhang Ruochen said.

The two nodded and, knowing that they were not yet completely safe, they took their Pills and began to heal themselves.

Zhang Ruochen took out two Spiritual Crystals and started to restore his Genuine Qi by holding a Spiritual Crystal in each hand.

After 15 minutes, half of his Genuine Qi had recovered.

Suddenly, he opened his eyes and looked at the water, where a hint of vague Spiritual Qi could be felt.

Not from a savage beast, but from a human.

Only due to his powerful Spiritual Power could he find that man’s aura.

“Who’s there? Now that you’re here, why don’t you reveal yourself?”

Zhang Ruochen’s right hand touched the hilt of the Abyss Ancient Sword, looking dignified.

Still healing, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi also opened their eyes, but neither of them saw anyone nor felt any aura.

They looked at Zhang Ruochen with doubt, but he just stared at the water seriously. At once, the two of them were alert with their eyes looking around.

Maybe some master really had come.

Chang Qiqi felt like he had only blinked as a stunning beauty in red suddenly appeared out of thin air on the surface of the water.

That beauty was suspended on the water with long scarlet hair, snow-white feet, slender and straight legs, a thin waist, and a pretty and coquettish face.

Chang Qiqi was so stunned and, even knowing that the woman was probably from the Black Market and he was likely lost in the environment, he rushed over to the water cheerfully.

Even possessing strong composure, Si Xingkong was also obsessed with her enchantment.

However, he did better than Chang Qiqi and was able to control his body and restrain his desire.

Only Zhang Ruochen could remain calm as he stared at Chang Qiqi and howled, "Get back."

Containing Genuine Qi, his voice made all the Spiritual Qi shake, breaking the beauty's sorcery.

Chang Qiqi, who had already rushed to the edge, immediately became calm with a shiver after hearing his roar.

The water had submerged his insteps, he saw the water and then looked the suspending beauty, soon knowing what happened. He was shocked and shifted his eyes right away without any courage to see that woman.

"What wonderful sorcery!"

Si Xingkong also sobered up in fear, realizing that this siren had such a high attainment of sorcery that could break the spirit and soul of warriors.

Once they were lost in it, they could only be killed by her.

Thinking about this, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi were completely nervous with their bodies shivering. Fortunately,

they had Zhang Ruochen, otherwise, they would have never known how they were killed.

The Red Wish Emissary gave a melodious laugh with her beautiful eyes squinting and said, “You are worthy to be the lay disciple of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. Being not afraid of my sorcery, no wonder that my young master regards you as his archenemy.”

Zhang Ruochen was not a disciple of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. The reason that the Red Wish Emissary’s sorcery was unable to influence him was that he had formidable Spiritual Power that was stronger than hers.

Sorcery was a great strange martial technique that few people could successfully cultivate.

To successfully cultivate sorcery required a strong Spiritual Power.

The Red Wish Emissary indeed had formidable Spiritual Power that had reached the 30th stage, which was superior among her peers.

But, Zhang Ruochen was an exception.

Her proud Spiritual Power was so weak when she fought against Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen roughly understood the level of her martial cultivation at just a glance.

She had just broken into the Heaven Realm.

She was less formidable than Jin Chuan, who was in the same Realm.

However, Zhang Ruochen thought that she possessed much stronger power than Jin Chuan, She was a terrifying master of martial arts.

A master like Jin Chuan probably could not defend against one of her tricks. ( )

That meant that she was a genius of at least six unique skills, and could even be a legendary genius of seven unique skills.

It appeared that there was only one realm between the Completion of the Earth Realm and the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm, but actually, it was the span of three little realms.

Zhang Ruochen absolutely could not defeat her unless he broke into the Heaven Realm. Only in the same realm could he beat her down.

The distance of a realm was equal to the distance between heaven and hell.

Chang Qiqi bent his legs to take the horse stance posture with his arms flat, making the gesture of meeting head-on. He said, “Younger brother Zhang, the three of us must collaborate to fight her! I don’t believe we cannot deal with this bitch with our combined strength.”

“Hoho! Bravo, such being the case, you three can try.”

The Red Wish Emissary smiled gently and stretched a finger out toward Chang Qiqi.

Suddenly, Chang Qiqi could not control his body and he flew up.

It seemed like an intangible rope was lifting him in the air by twining around his neck.

“How did... how did it happen... Are you... a human or a ghost...”

Chang Qiqi struggled to cover his neck while he was suspended in the air.

That uncanny trick crept Si Xingkong out as he had never seen anything like this. He also began to suspect the identity of the woman in red—was it really a ghost?

# Chapter 323 - Poison Blood

## Mind Control Pill

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Heart of the Sword in Zhang Ruochen's glabella burst out brilliant light.

A string of Sword Comprehension power pervaded around the space, forming stripes of invisible sword Qi. It even made leaves fly from the ground rustling.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen waved his arm, the Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of its sheath above Chang Qiqi's head.

The invisible power entangling Chang Qiqi's neck vanished immediately.

With a "BANG", Chang Qiqi tumbled down 10 meters to the beach heavily.

"God! Ghost...she's absolutely a ghost! Eldest brother, junior fellow apprentice Zhang, run!"

Shouting, scratching and scrambling, Chang Qiqi, fled back. He didn't dare to fight against the Red Wish Emissary.

She was too horrifying to be human.

"She is not a ghost," Zhang Ruochen said calmly. "She is taking advantage of her Martial Soul and attaching to you in the air through the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi."

Zhang Ruochen stared at the Red Wish Emissary. "You are worthy of being one of the Seven Kills Emissaries of the Black

Market. You have cultivated Martial Soul at such a young age.”

“Not better than you! I admire you so much. You have cultivated the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword in the Earth Realm.” Laughed Red Wish Emissary.

Zhang Ruochen had used the power of Heart Integrated into Sword, the Sword-wielding Technique, to cut the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi that was constraining Chang Qiqi.

For some reason, Zhang Ruochen exposed his Heart Integrated into Sword realm to her deliberately.

Like a female ghost in red, without a moving body, Red Wish Emissary floated on the island. She suspended in the air more than 10 meters away from Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi.

Cold Genuine Qi emitted from her body. She dashed into the sky and lowered the temperature suddenly.

Feathery snowflakes danced and fell from the night sky.

It was a vision of heaven and earth, a thousand meters of flying snow.

Influenced by her Genuine Qi, ice and snow covered the land for thousands of meters in the surrounding area.

Chang Qiqi ducked his neck, “How can it not be a ghost! It’s obvious that she is a soul-sucking ghost!”

“Hehe! Exactly! Indeed, I have come to demand your lives, especially Zhang Ruochen’s.”

She pointed to Zhang Ruochen.

Her long red hair suddenly lengthened in a bloody fall. It was more than 3 meters long. A strand of her hair flew to Zhang Ruochen and entangled his neck.

He activated Genuine Qi at once in attempt to countercharge. However, it broke off as it was flowing out from his Qi Sea.

The backfire of Genuine Qi inflated Zhang Ruochen’s head Meridians completely as if they were going to explode.



Realizing something was wrong, Zhang Ruochen pulled his Genuine Qi back.

“Don’t flog a dead horse. Stretching from the Qi Sea, a warrior’s Meridians will most definitely pass the neck. Once the neck is sealed, the Meridians in your whole body are sealed. If you continue to activate your Genuine Qi, all the Meridians in your body will burst out and you will become paralyzed.” The Red Wish Emissary laughed.

No one could save him now. Except himself.

Thinking quickly, Zhang Ruochen calmed himself down. He clenched his teeth and laughed. “If I were you, I would never kill me.”

“Why?” She asked coldly.

Zhang Ruochen explained, “As far as I know, each Seven Kills Emissary is a most excellent conqueror, whose talent is almost equal to the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall. But you, like slaves, have to submit to the young master and obey his command. Are you really willing to do so?”

The Red Wish Emissary laughed, showing her lovely white teeth. She licked her rosy lips with her sweet tongue and used her hair to bring Zhang Ruochen closer in front of her.

She reached out one tenuous finger and stroked Zhang Ruochen’s cheek. In a sweet and gentle voice, she said, “Chap, you are tempting me to betray the Black Market, aren’t you? Your little trick will not work on me.”

The strength of the hair entwining Zhang Ruochen’s neck became increasingly stronger and tighter, as if to cut off his neck.

The gap of strength between the two was too large. Not to consider that Zhang Ruochen’s Genuine Qi had been sealed, even if it hadn’t, he didn’t have the means to fight against her.

Zhang Ruochen squeezed out a smile. “You don’t need to betray the Black Market. Just a transaction between you and me.”

“What’s the deal?”

The Red Wish Emissary laughed amorously with her sweet voice. But in her beautiful eyes a cold murderous intent showed.

“If you let us go now, I can kill Di Yi for you.” Said Zhang Ruochen.

The Red Wish Emissary looked astonished. She smiled. “Did I hear right? Why do I need you to murder Di Yi for me?”

Zhang Ruochen said unhurriedly, “From the information I gained, the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall will rule the Black Market and all the forces there, as the top dictator. However, if the young master dies before he is fully developed, the new one will be picked from the Seven Kills Emissaries. That’s to say, once I kill Di Yi, you can obtain the chance to be the new young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall.” #

“Haha!”

Red Wish Emissary guffawed, “Do you know how strong Di Yi is? You are nothing compared to him.”

Disdainfully as she said this, she loosened the hair around his neck slightly.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen was right. Strong and arrogant as she was, how could she be a subordinate to others?

The Red Wish Emissary was a little bit moved.

The Seven Kills Emissaries could not murder Di Yi. They had to protect him and obey his command. However, killing Di Yi with the help of Zhang Ruochen seemed like a good deal.

The only concern was that Di Yi was almost invincible to opponents at the same realm.

Given Zhang Ruochen’s strength, he was far from being a match for Di Yi.

At the age of 16, Di Yi had reached the Peak of the Earth Realm and could even break through to the Heaven Realm at any time. Once he reached the Heaven Realm, even the Red Wish Emissary would not be able to match him.

Could Zhang Ruochen compare to Di Yi?

Zhang Ruochen understood that Red Wish Emissary was skeptical about his ability, so he went on, “You know that I have reached the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. But Di Yi hasn’t, has he?”

Red Wish Emissary was impressed. She smiled and her white teeth showed. She took out a Vermilion pill between her two fingers and pressed it against Zhang Ruochen’s lips.

“As long as you take this pill, I will trust your sincerity in making a deal with me.” She smiled coquettishly.

“Don’t believe her, junior fellow apprentice Zhang! That Pill must have some kind of trick.” Warned Si Xingkong.

The Red Wish Emissary showed the whites of her eyes and said, “It’s just a Poison Blood Mind Control Pill.”

Zhang Ruochen’s face changed. “There’s no antidote for the Poison Blood Mind Control Pill. Once it’s inside the body, you can’t refine the poisonous insect even if you are a Half-Saint. You have to take a Blood Pill from the person who gave it to you. Otherwise, the poison will show its effect.”

“When the poison begins to work, the warrior’s brain is slowly eaten by the poisonous insect if the warrior doesn’t take Blood Pills. What’s worse, if the warrior doesn’t take Blood Pills for three months, the poisonous insect will eat his brain.”

She was worthy to be one of the Seven Kills Emissaries. You couldn’t tempt her easily, even with an emotionally moving and profitably enticing deal.

With the Poison Blood Mind Control Pill inside his body, Zhang Ruochen would be under her control, even if he escaped today.

Chang Qiqi turned pale. “How peculiar! Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, you cannot take her Poison Blood Mind Control Pill.”

Softly touching her hair, the Red Wish Emissary stared at Zhang Ruochen with a sophisticated look. She smiled, “Either all three of you die here, or you take the Poison Blood Mind

Control Pill. Because of your talent I will grant you the Poison Blood Mind Control Pill. As for the two craps, I am hungry. They have no chance.”

“Who are you calling crap?”

Of course, unwilling to submit, Chang Qiqi stood up suddenly.

After all, he was a Two-realm Fighting Genius, top-ranked in the School of the Martial Market. How could he be crap?

CLAP!

Using her palm, the Red Wish Emissary blew Chang Qiqi away.

“You are not entitled to talk to me.”

The Red Wish Emissary restored her eyes and gazed at Zhang Ruochen again. “Better a living dog than a dead lion. You have two choices: be my poison slave or be killed. I will count to three and you must make a choice. If you don’t, no matter how much I admire you, you are going to be dead.”

“ONE.”

“TWO.”

With her eyes growing cold, the Red Wish Emissary said, “I gave you a chance, but you gave up.”

The moment she was about to say “three”, Spiritual Qi in the space roared. Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul flew out from his head and formed a thunderbolt spear with the help of the universal power striking towards the Red Wish Emissary’s glabella.

She had thought that once she sealed all his Meridians, it would be impossible for him to fight back.

But she didn’t realize that there was another Meridian she couldn’t seal.

It was the Vessel of Spirit!

Invisible and intangible as the Vessel of Spirit was, it existed and connected his Qi Sea and Martial Soul.

Under such a circumstance, Zhang Ruochen had no other choice except to reveal the secret of Martial Soul.

“You... You practiced the Martial Soul...”

Shocked, the Red Wish Emissary set up her Celestial Bodyshield immediately. She removed the Genuine Qi that was cutting Zhang Ruochen’s neck.

**SWOOSH!**

The power of Heart of the Sword blew out from Zhang Ruochen’s glabella.

The Abyss Ancient Sword cut off the Red Wish Emissary’s hair.

He turned over and up. He caught the hilt and chopped at her waist.

At the same time, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi seized the chance to attack Red Wish Emissary from two different directions.

...

# Chapter 324 - Another Stunner

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Raging Sea Stomp.”

Si Xingkong suddenly stepped in the sand to form a half-meter deep pit. He curvetted and performed a mid-class Spiritual Stage fist technique.

He performed smoothly. His fist technique was like running rivers and seas.

“Furious Knife Slash!”

Chang Qiqi crouched down with his knife in hand. He chopped at the Red Wish Emissary’s legs.

The Red Wish Emissary hit the flying weapon of thunderbolt with one finger to crash against the dragger-ax. It condensed with a beam of lightning into several separate bolts of lightning.

Seeing the three attackers, she gave a scornful smile and clapped her hands.

“Impure Essence Qi.”

A circle of red Genuine Qi poured out from her body with a roar. It zapped Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi at the same time.

Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi, who were already injured, were hurt even worse. They fell to the ground and nearly passed out with blood gushing from the seven orifices of their heads.

Zhang Ruochen fell 33 meters away. His whole body hurt and his vision was blurred. If his physical quality had not been so strong, he would have already passed out.

“The difference in their cultivations is quite large... We are not at the same level... Eh-hem...”

Zhang Ruochen straightened his waist and turned to grasp the Abyss Ancient Sword firmly. With eyes full of intent, he glared coldly at the distant Red Wish Emissary. He lifted his sword up again.

“To be in the Earth Realm means that one has cultivated to Heart Integrated into Sword and refined their Martial Soul. How can you have achieved it when even Di Yi may never be able to?”

With an unusual fluctuation in her eyes, the Red Wish Emissary exclaimed, “Zhang Ruochen, you are indeed an once-in-a-lifetime genius. If you are willing to take a Poison Blood Mind Control Pill, I will not kill you. I’ll even let you be my man. Are you sure you won’t consider it?”

“Save it! Let’s fight!”

Zhang Ruochen secretly released Space Domain to envelop the whole island. He stood majestically as sword Qi circulated around his body.

The Red Wish Emissary shook her head lightly. Since Zhang Ruochen was unwilling to subject to her, she could only kill him.

The Red Wish Emissary clasped her hands and her Genuine Qi turned into Impure Essence Qi. It formed a raging wind that swept silt and gravel from the beach.

As Red Wish Emissary was preparing to launch a deadly attack against Zhang Ruochen...

Suddenly, a wonderful woman’s laughter came from the dark.

“Ho-ho!”

The laughter was very clear and spread throughout the night sky.

The Red Wish Emissary's face sank. She looked up into the sky, saying, "Who's there?"

BOOM!

A Genuine Qi handprint fell from the sky above the island onto the Red Wish Emissary's head.

The Red Wish Emissary pupils shrank. She retreated rapidly. She receded 33 meters to the water in the distance.

BOOM!

The Genuine Qi handprint landed on the ground causing the whole island to shake fiercely.

A seven-meter-long handprint appeared on the ground. It looked like the handprint of a giant.

As the handprint dropped, a shapely enchantress in a white dress fell to the ground, sending out an alluring delicate fragrance. Slender white legs could be seen peeking out from her long ivory dress. She was very seductive.

She was quite the marvel, very charming with her plump behind and large firm breasts. Just a glimpse of her was enough to make any man's blood boil in excitement.

Zhang Ruochen showed a gleam of joy on his face.

He recognized her. It was Qin Ya, Duanmu Xingling's aunt, the owner of the Qingxuan Pavilion.

Zhang Ruochen had known that Qin Ya's cultivation was strong, but he had not known she was so strong that her mere handprint could push the Red Wish Emissary back.

Both Qin Ya and the Red Wish Emissary were enchanting sexy women. However, Qin Ya was more mature, seductive, and full of strong femininity. She was even more voluptuous and coquettish than the Red Wish Emissary. Her ample curves were flawless.

The Red Wish Emissary was very sexy and seductive, but she was a little green in comparison with Qin Ya. She was less feminine, more icy evil spirit and arrogant.



Qin Ya fell lightly near Zhang Ruochen and gazed at him seductively. Gently, she said, “Zhang Ruochen, you are truly hopeless in the romantic department! Do you not know how noble and beautiful the Red Wish Emissary is? Countless men have begged to be her slave with not a chance in sight. Moreover, she just agreed to be your woman from now on. How can you refuse her? Even I, your sister, feel pity for you.”

Zhang Ruochen just smiled. He did not take her words seriously.

The Red Wish Emissary stood on the water’s surface in the distance. As her eyes grew cold, two red flames condensed in the center of her palms, like flashing sparks. She said, “Who on earth are you? Why are you saving Zhang Ruochen? Do you not know the consequences of offending the Black Market?”

“Whoops! Little sister, how can I answer when you ask so many questions?” Qin Ya said. She was exceedingly fascinating.

Her enchanting figure and meaningful glance overshadowed those of the Red Wish Emissary.

“Well then, I guess I can only find answers by myself.”

The Red Wish Emissary’s eyes grew even colder. She turned into a red shadow and charged out. The shadow transformed into eight beautiful women. They each performed one finger technique and attacked Qin Ya at the same time.

The Red Wish Emissary was so fast that every movement was displayed with a quick pop.

Furthermore, the movements she displayed were very mysterious. Each finger technique had eight variants.

Eight finger techniques actually had 64 variants.

It was as if there were 64 movements in the attack and each had a powerful strength. Fingertips were like sword tips. /  
update by

The Red Wish Emissary was really exerting all her strength now. Previously when she fought with three people including

Zhang Ruochen, she had only been using 10-20% of her cultivation.

Qin Ya had been smiling before the eight red figures rushed into the three meter space surrounding her.

Suddenly, a strong Spiritual Blood poured out from her body, forming a Blood Wave at her feet. The Blood Wave quickly rotated to form a circular array light and sweep all eight figures at the same time.

With the Power of Animal Spirits, all of the Red Wish Emissary's attacks were easily destroyed.

Until this day, Zhang Ruochen had never witnessed Qin Ya's power.

All warriors at the Black Realm could use Blood Qi Convergence, but those with such powerful Blood Wave were absolutely not ordinary people.

Zhang Ruochen was suspicious. How could such a master like Qin Ya stay in Yunwu Commandery?

He doubted that the top superior of Yunwu Commandery could not gain the advantage over her.

The eight beautiful red figures, which had been swept back by the Blood Wave, solidified together to form the Red Wish Emissary's tender body.

Red Wish Emissary retreated 33 meters. She looked pale and evidently had an internal injury.

She stared somewhat fearfully at Qin Ya. With a pale face she asked, "Has your martial cultivation reached the Fish-dragon Realm?"

Qin Ya squinted and smiled, without answering. "You can go. Today, I will make it easy on you for your Master Phantom Saint's sake. However, you will not get another opportunity."

"It is strange that she knows my Master is a Phantom Saint."

The Red Wish Emissary was slightly surprised. She looked Qin Ya up and down once again.

Since Qin Ya had agreed to let her go, it meant that she was not from the Martial Market Bank. But, who was she?

It was a secret that the Red Wish Emissary had taken the Phantom Saint as her Master to practice sorcery. Thus, very little was known about the relationship between them.

How could she know that?

“I must know your identity.”

Red Wish Emissary took a deep look at Qin Ya. Without further questioning, she swiftly turned into a wisp of red smoke and disappeared into the water.

“She is actually a disciple of the Phantom Saint. No wonder she has practiced sorcery to such a profound level at a young age.”

Looking at where Red Wish Emissary was going, Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. His mind was clouded with worry.

Zhang Ruochen had not known that Red Wish Emissary was a disciple of the Phantom Saint; he had revealed his secrets, both Heart Integrated into Sword and Martial Soul.

With her incredible aptitude, how else could he defeat the Red Wish Emissary?

He was afraid that he would fight with her again in the future.

Qin Ya was very close to Zhang Ruochen, half a meter away. Her bright face shone like jade.

Her beautiful eyes were fixed on Zhang Ruochen with a smile. She said, “You are really strong. Even with her sorcery as the disciple of the Phantom Saint, she cannot defeat you. As your sister, I am really curious about the extent of your Spiritual Power. And your willpower.”

With this, Qin Ya stretched her delicate hands to Zhang Ruochen’s shoulders. Then, she got closer to him with her soft and tender body.

Her fingers slid from his shoulders to his chest, then to his abdomen, and continued to move down...

Zhang Ruochen pinched her wrist and said, "Owner of the Pavilion, do not tempt me any further. My willpower may not be strong. If I am aroused by you, it will cause trouble."

Qin Ya fluttered her eyes at him and said faintly, "I don't care, what are you worried about?"

The voice of Duanmu Xingling came from the distance, "Aunt."

Hearing this, Qin Ya sighed and quickly drew her hands back.

A moment later, Duanmu Xingling, Huang Yanchen, and Chen Xier came towards them driving a warship. They stopped near the island.

"Sister Chen, I told you not to be afraid. As long as my aunt is about, Zhang Ruochen will definitely head off any danger."

Duanmu Xingling laughed.

Huang Yanchen held her combat sword. She stood still with a cold smile on her face.

"Just now, your aunt was obviously trying to seduce Zhang Ruochen. Do you think I didn't see it?"

However, Qin Ya had indeed saved Zhang Ruochen, so Huang Yanchen just threw a cold stare at Qin Ya, as if she hadn't seen anything.

Qin Ya felt Huang Yanchen's cold eyes, but she did not take it seriously. She smiled faintly and slowly boarded the warship to leave with grace.

Her fragrance still lingered on Zhang Ruochen's body.

# Chapter 325 - Duanmu Family

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The warship was 333 meters long and made of dark steel. Its power was provided by Spiritual Crystals. It was larger than the Black Market's Red Spider Vessel.

Hundreds of warriors stood on the warship, wearing martial robes embroidered with the characters "Duanmu". Obviously, all of them were masters of Martial Arts, because they were full of energy and looking ahead with wisdom.

Were all of them followers of the Duanmu family?

Seeing the warship, Zhang Ruochen was doubtful. The forces of the Duanmu family was not in Omen Ridge. How could they call so many masters together to the death reach in such a short time?

Even for the top local sects like the Yuntai Suzerain and Tai Qing Palace, it was very hard to do in such a short time.

At the moment, warriors were carrying the comatose Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi up to the warship under the order of the leader of Duanmu family.

Zhang Ruochen and Huang Yanchen boarded the warship and found a quiet spot. When there was no one around, Zhang Ruochen asked with sound wave, "Senior sister apprentice Huang, how did you find senior sister apprentice Duanmu's aunt after leaving the Death City?"

Huang Yanchen stared at Zhang Ruochen with doubt in her eyes. She had no idea about why he was transmitting sound instead of talking. "The five of us ran away in two groups after

we left the Death City. Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi were in one group, Chen Xier and I were in the other group. On the way, I met Miss Qin, and she saved us. What's the matter? Are you suspicious of Xingling?"

"I was just asking." Zhang Ruochen replied as if absorbed in thought.

Huang Yanchen said, "Xingling was sent to the School of the Martial Market by a Half-Saint from the Duanmu family. If she was suspicious, the High-level from the School of the Martial Market would certainly know it."

"Maybe." Zhang Ruochen said.

On the warship, there was accompanied by physicians who were said to be medical masters of the Duanmu family.

Under the treatment of a medical master, Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong had half recovered from their injuries and woken up from their comas.

In the cabin, Chang Qiqi wore a sad look as if his wife had died. He said, "Although we got away successfully, we lost Guoguo. We don't know if he is alive or not."

The rabbit ate a lot, but it was very intelligent and adorable. Chang Qiqi was really sad.

With a bursting voice, Zhang Ruochen walked in and said with a smile, "Who said that Guoguo is lost?"

The crimson rabbit walked in stealthily behind Zhang Ruochen. It was gnawing away at a Spiritual Brawn in its hands.

It raised its head, looked at Chang Qiqi and blinked.

Since it had taken two Blackwind Python Spiritual Brawns, its cultivation had improved considerably.

Zhang Ruochen had just given it another Spiritual Brawn. It no longer froze from the Icing air in Spiritual Brawn, but ate with great enjoyment.

"Guoguo!"

Seeing the rabbit, Chang Qiqi immediately brought Guoguo down like a fierce tiger springing on its prey and caressed its hair. He laughed and said, “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, how come it was with you?”

Before, Guoguo had been staying inside the Time and Space Spinel. Zhang Ruochen had not let it out until they were on the Duanmu family warship and safe for the time being.

Zhang Ruochen did not want to reveal the secret of Time and Space Spinel. He said, “You can ask it!”

“Ask it? It can’t speak.” Chang Qiqi said.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Guoguo is very smart. If you taught him more, he would be able to learn to speak.”

Zhang Ruochen did not want Chang Qiqi to ask further questions, so he quickly changed the subject. He said, “I got a special type of Spiritual Dose for cultivation improvement in the Death Reach. I want to give it to you.”

Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi already knew that Zhang Ruochen had the Spatial Ring, so he had nothing to hide. He took two petals of the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower out from the Spatial Ring and gave them to his friends.

Si Xingkong was experienced and knowledgeable. After taking a deep sniff, he said with surprise, “These are petals of Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower. And, they are at least 1,000 years old. Such a treasure is rare in Omen Ridge. Junior fellow apprentice Zhang you are really so lucky to find such a treasure.”

“1,000-year-old...Spiritual Dose...”

Chang Qiqi opened his mouth wide out of surprise. He was very excited.

In Omen Ridge, if a 1,000-year-old Spiritual Dose was found, the top influential forces such as the School of the Martial Market, Yuntai Suzerain and Tai Qing Palace, would try desperately to get it.

It seemed so unbelievable that Zhang Ruochen had gotten a Spiritual Dose of this level just walking around the Death

Reach.

Wasn't it a great destiny?

Chang Qiqi said, "If I refine this petal, my cultivation will immediately break through the level of the Heaven Realm!"

"Definitely."

Si Xingkong thought a while and put away the Spirit Flower Petal, saying, "I think, we can refine the Spirit Flower Petal into liquid and carry it. It will be better to break through the level of the Heaven Realm once we enter the Underwater Dragon Palace."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, "Yes! Having a cultivation under the level of the Heaven Realm is essential for people entering into the Underwater Dragon Palace. However, warriors can make a breakthrough after they enter."

Chang Qiqi also nodded. If the level of the Heaven Realm could be broken through, he would advance rapidly and become a real martial arts legend.

If warriors of the Black Market dared to chase after him, he could slap them to death.

In Omen Ridge, there were loads of warriors at the Earth Realm, but very few warriors had reached the Heaven Realm. All of them were dominators and Masters of Martial Arts with extremely high status.

The Heaven Realm was highly desirable.

Subsequently, Zhang Ruochen took out another three petals and gave them to Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, and Qin Ya.

After all, it was Qin Ya who had defeated the Red Wish Emissary. It was because of her help that the three, including Zhang Ruochen, had been able to escape so easily.

Therefore, it was necessary to repay her kindness.

Receiving a petal of Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower, Qin Ya squinted her eyes and put it away. She said, "Zhang Ruochen, Duanmu Xingling told me that you plan to enter the



Underwater Dragon Palace and compete with Black Market warriors for the Dragon Sarira. How sure are you that you can succeed?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Not sure.”

Qin Ya laughed and said, “Well, the Duanmu family can help you do it.”

“Oh?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Qin Ya continued, “More than 1,000 martial masters at the Completion of the Earth Realm have gathered in the Black Market. Di Yi will definitely give them panacea to help them break through. Once they enter the Underwater Dragon Palace, at least dozens of them will be able to break through to the Heaven Realm.”

“This is a very frightening power. Although you have deep cultivation, it is not certain that you can resist their Combined Attack.”

“The Duanmu family has brought a total of 280 warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm. This was all we could gather together in such a short time. Although we have less people than the Black Market, they are very loyal.”

“When necessary, they can sacrifice their own lives to open a way for you and Xingling.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Are they really warriors of the Duanmu family?”

“Of course.”

Qin Ya remained calm and smiled.

“Ok! It will be a great help to have Duanmu family warriors.” Zhang Ruochen said.

After Zhang Ruochen left, Duanmu Xingling walked out, close to Qin Ya. She said, “Aunt, you are using him.”

Qin Ya said, “Do you think he doesn’t know? He has his doubts. I am indeed taking advantage of him, but he is also using us to deal with warriors of the Black Market.”

“Does he know?”

Duanmu Xingling frowned and felt a little fearful for no real reason. She was very worried that she and Zhang Ruochen would become opponents in the future due to her deceit.

Qin Ya said seriously, “Xingling, you are the Saintness of Demonic Sect. You need to learn to hide your emotions. Otherwise, you will suffer a fatal disaster, especially if you continue to lurk in the School of the Martial Market. You must tell yourself at every moment that you and Zhang Ruochen are enemies. Or else, you will surely die if you fight to the death in the future.”

“Probably!” Duanming Xingling replied.

Qin Ya shook her head slightly and heaved a sigh. She knew that Duanmu Xingling wasn't going to listen to her.

When the warship reached the center of the Death Reach, a strong blood smell arose.

Bones of the dead and skeletons of savage beasts floated on the water.

The black river had become blood-red.

The remains of damaged warships, masts, canvases, boards, and so on were floating in the water.

Zhang Ruochen could see that at least two Red Spider Vessels were damaged and hundreds of warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm had died in the water, with incomplete skeletons.

“The Three-clawed Flood Dragon really is the dominator of the Death Reach. It caused severe damage to the Black Market. It seemed to be the right step to inform it by sending the Silverlight Shark.”

Zhang Ruochen thought to himself.

When it came to the Silverlight Shark, Zhang Ruochen discovered that its Martial Soul inside the Yin Yang Wooden Graph had disappeared, signifying that it had died.

“The Silverlight Shark had been severely injured, and its martial soul had been left with Zhang Rouchen so its strength was largely weakened. If Jin Chuan had discovered the

Silverlight Shark's weak points, it would most certainly not have been able to escape. Jin Chuan would have killed it.”

Even though the Silverlight Shark had died, it had little influence on Zhang Ruochen.

Although the shark was very strong, once he broke through the level of the Heaven Realm, its role was minimal.

At present, he was not far from reaching the Heaven Realm.

“How terrible it is! So many top masters have died. Massive changes are happening in the Martial World of Omen Ridge.”  
Si Xingkong said.

Everyone was stunned by this scene.

“It saves us a lot of trouble. The Black Market cleaned out the savage beasts.”

Qin Ya gave an order. The warship initiated Vessel-defending Formation.

Many halos appeared forming a white light screen that enveloped the warship tightly.

The warship sank down and finally went to the very bottom of the water. It moved continuously toward Underwater Dragon Palace. It got closer and closer to the palace. The shadow of the Red Spider Vessel in front could be seen faintly.

# Chapter 326 - Life Gate of Dragon Palace

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Black Market warriors arrived at the boundary of Underwater Dragon Palace on four Red Spider Vessels.

Each Red Spider Vessel was equipped with a 433-meter-long light ball used to cruise through the river and was covered by the Vessel-defending Formation.

Wearing a metal mask, Di Yi stood majestically at the edge of the warship, resting his hands on the railings. He observed the majestic crystal Dragon Palace in the distance with a fiery look in his eyes.

It was very likely that the Dragon Sarira was in the Dragon Palace. Once he got it, Di Yi was confident that he would be able to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm.

In the future, he might even become a Nine-realm Fighting Genius and possess a physical quality comparable to that of great ancient emperors.

Di Yi had always been gifted ever since he was young.

When Di Yi was just a fetus, his mark of Martial Arts opened. At birth, his body shined with thousands of golden rays, stunning the whole family with his inner Saintly Being. Everyone considered him as a reincarnated Saint.

Ever since then, he was chosen to be the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall.

Having an innate Saintly Being also meant that he had been a Seven-realm Fighting Genius from the day he was born.

Moreover, when he was born, his cultivation had reached the Dawn State of the Yellow Realm, and his Spiritual Power had reached the twentieth level. Needless to say, Di Yi was born at a starting point higher than everyone else.

Even great ancient emperors and great saints did not necessarily have congenital conditions like Di Yi's.

There were rumors saying that he had reached the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm. However, he was actually still a step away from reaching the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm.

Since Di Yi wanted to break through the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm, he suppressed the realm and made no breakthroughs to the Heaven Realm.

If he hadn't done that, he would have already reached the Heaven Realm, especially given the talent he has.

"I must get Buddha Sarira and reach the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm to strike a Chord of Gods. While others might not make it, I, Di Yi, can make it."

Di Yi cracked his knuckles.

There was an invisible formation on the boundary of the Underwater Dragon Palace. With its power, the formation could crush any warrior above the Earth Realm and turn them into a cloud of blood fog.

The formation was known as the "Eight-point Formation," and it was arranged five hundred years ago by the Four-winged Earth Dragon to guard the Dragon Palace.

The Four-winged Earth Dragon had left plenty of treasures in the Dragon Palace. Every year, many third-level savage beasts and Earth Realm warriors rushed across the Eight-point Formation and entered the Dragon Palace to look for treasures.

The possibility of finding treasures caused a large number of warriors and savage beasts to die in the Dragon Palace every year, left to become mere bones.

The bones of the dead could be seen in the underwater square outside the Dragon Palace, making it look like an infernal

underwater battlefield.

At the time, martial masters of the Black Market on the boundary of the Eight-point Formation restrained warriors of the Earth Realm to the formation by using chains and fetters.

“That is the Dragon Palace of Four-winged Earth Dragon. It is very dangerous, and I will not go in there.”

An elder with white beard and hair said that although he had been bounded with fetters, he was stubborn and refused to enter the Eight-point Formation.

“Really?”

Zhang Tiangui walked over with a black knife while sneering, “If you enter Eight-point Formation, you might be able to survive and even find treasures in the Dragon Palace that you can use to break through the Heaven Realm. However, if you don’t enter, you are doomed to die.”

An old man looked at Zhang Tiangui with disdain, sneered and said, “Don’t think that I don’t know what you’re trying to do. I know that since you have trapped us here, you will force us to explore a new way or else you will kill us...”

Pfft!

Zhang Tiangui beheaded the elder with a slash.

In a blink of an eye, the surrounding water turned completely red.

His corpse was crushed by the strong water pressure causing it to burst into pieces of meat.

“He was doomed to die for his stubbornness.”

Zhang Tiangui gently touched the knife in his hand and looked at the Earth Realm warriors who were caught by the Black Market with a cruel smile.

The prisoners of the Earth Realm were reluctant to obey the Black Market, but terror struck them after witnessing this scene.

Without further threats from Zhang Tiangui, they strode forward one after another and rushed to Eight-point

Formation.

They would prefer to enter the formation and fight, rather than be killed by Zhang Tiangui. Perhaps they might find some treasures, break the shackles of the Earth Realm, and become legends of Martial Arts.

Di Yi stood on the Red Spider Vessel, and a small smile appeared on his lips. He said, "Zhang Tiangui is talented, he is gifted in means and strategies. He shall be given an important position. It is said that he is Zhang Ruochen's brother, so we can train him to deal with Zhang Ruochen."

Red Wish Emissary stood behind Di Yi and said, "I am afraid that Zhang Tiangui is not a well-matched opponent to Zhang Ruochen."

Di Yi shook his head and said, "His strength alone is not enough to face Zhang Ruochen. However, with the support of our Black Market, Zhang Tiangui will become a sharp weapon against Zhang Ruochen."

"Young master, you are absolutely right."

Red Wish Emissary did not mean what she just said because Di Yi did not know that Zhang Ruochen had practiced Martial Soul and reached the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword.

If Di Yi had known this, he would not look down on Zhang Ruochen.

Red Wish Emissary had her own plan, so she did not reveal Zhang Ruochen's secrets.

Swoosh!

An orange figure swiftly flew from afar.

When in water, she moved at the speed of sound without using any foreign objects.

In a split second, the orange figure boarded the Red Spider Vessel and stood behind Di Yi. The figure turned out to be a beautiful girl in orange clothes.

She was tall, graceful, and was wearing a veil. She seemed like she was weightless as she floated mid-air about three feet

above the ground. She slightly bowed to Di Yi and said, "Greetings, young master."

"Orange Star Emissary, have your six Emissaries beheaded Three-clawed Flood Dragon?" Di Yi asked.

The veiled girl in orange clothes was Orange Star Emissary, the sixth emissary of the Seven Kills Emissary. Her martial ability was better than Red Wish Emissary.

With a dreamy, sweet, and moving voice, Orange Star Emissary said, "The Three-clawed Flood Dragon was so powerful that our six Emissaries could barely suppress it."

"The loathsome Three-clawed Flood Dragon had cost us nearly half of our Black Market masters." Di Yi clenched his fists and had an angry look in his eyes.

Orange Star Emissary continued, "Just now, Purple Wind Emissary found out that a lot of masters hurried to the Underwater Dragon Palace. He was worried about your safety, so he sent me back first to protect you."

"A lot of masters? They must be from the Martial Market Bank and Moon Worship Demonic Sect!"

Di Yi took a deep breath and said, "We must find the Life Gate of the Dragon Palace as soon as possible. We must enter the Underwater Dragon Palace first, before the Martial Market Bank and the Moon Worship Demonic Sect do."

In the distance, a hundred and twenty prisoners of the Earth Realm were forced onto the Eight-point Formation by masters of the Black Market.

After entering the formation, those prisoners of the Earth Realm desperately rushed to the Dragon Palace.

Suddenly, someone touched an inscription of the array.

Boom!

Purple bolts of lightning glowed in the formation.

In the water, flashes of lightning were striking back and forth.

A desperate cry was heard from the formation.



Almost twenty people were pierced by lightning and died in the formation, and more than ten were injured.

The Eight-point Formation mainly aimed at warriors above the Earth Realm, but if the warriors touched some inscriptions in the formation, the formation would generate a terrible attack.

After passing through Eight-point Formation, the prisoners of the Earth Realm thought they were safe and felt relief.

However, all of a sudden an enormous vortex formed in the water and drowned a dozen prisoners.

“Help...”

“Hel...”

...

After the vortex dispersed, the prisoners of the Earth Realm became a bloody mud and crushed bones.

After witnessing the scene, the prisoners of the Earth Realm who survived were terrified. No one expected how dreadful the next moment will be.

Everyone desperately rushed to the gates of the Dragon Palace. They wanted to enter and find treasures to break through the Heaven Realm. If one can reach the Heaven Realm, his strength would increase exponentially. Until then, there would be more chances to live.

The Dragon Palace was vast and had thousands of gates. All of the gates had entrances, but most of them will lead to death.

It was said that the Dragon Palace had a total of 3,750 gates but only eight were Life Gates, and the others were death gates.

Upon entering a death gate, you were doomed to die even with a high level of cultivation.

After fifteen minutes, all warriors of the Earth Realm that rushed to the Dragon Palace had died.

Di Yi frowned and ordered, “Send the second group of prisoners.”

This time, Di Yi was well prepared. Before going to Underwater Dragon Palace, not only did he bring a lot of masters of the Black Market, but also caught hundreds of prisoners of the Earth Realm.

He planned to sacrifice the lives of the prisoners to find a path to the entrance of Life Gate.

You could imagine that after this incident, the Martial World of Omen Ridge would be compromised due to the loss of plenty of martial masters.

Each time, the Black Market would send a hundred and twenty warriors of the Earth Realm to rush to the Dragon Palace.

The first three groups of warriors were annihilated.

Finally, in the fourth group, someone discovered the Life Gate and successfully entered the Dragon Palace. Everyone in the group rushed into its heartland and disappeared in a black mist.

“The Life Gate appeared!”

“Everybody, let’s rush into the gate and enter the Dragon Palace so that we can find Spiritual Quenching for the breakthrough.”

Other warriors saw the Life Gate and were excited as they rushed in one after another.

“Warriors of the Black Market, please follow me to seek for Dragon Sarira, since a Life Gate has appeared.”

Di Yi let out a shout and ran away from the waterway. In an instant, he broke free from the Eight-point Formation, entered the Life Gate, and went to the heartland of the Dragon Palace.

“Everyone, please catch up. In fifteen minutes 3,750 gates of the Dragon Palace will move again. We must enter the Dragon Palace before the Life Gate moves.”

Zhang Tiangui was ecstatic. His eyes shined with a strange splendor. For him, it was more than just a lucky chance, but also an opportunity to surpass Zhang Ruochen.

# Chapter 327 - Blood Magic Shadow

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Black Market warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm rushed out of the Red Spider Vessel one after another. They followed Zhang Tiangu into an Eight-point Formation of more than 600 people.

These people were the main force of the Black Market. The prisoners had merely been tools for getting through.

After passing through the array, some of the Black Market warriors stopped, instead of entering through the Life Gate.

Each warrior took out a cyan Pill from his bosom. They swallowed the pills and began to refine them immediately.

It was the Sacred Pool Pill, a fifth-class pill.

It could help a warrior at the Completion of the Earth Realm get to the Heaven Realm.

All the selected warriors had reached the Completion of the Earth Realm. Moreover, a total of 84 of them had Spiritual Power beyond twenty level.

Many of them had been at the Completion of the Earth Realm for more than a decade. They only needed one opportunity to could break through the Realm and become martial arts legends.

Suddenly, light spots started coming out of the glabella of a big guy in his forties. His Sacred Mark appeared and began to absorb the surrounding Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi unbridled.

BANG!

He was the first to break through and reach the Heaven Realm.

“Haha! I’ve finally reached the Heaven Realm. From this day forward, I am a top ranked martial arts legend among the people of Omen Ridge.”

He was very excited, jumping about joyfully.

However, he quickly curbed his ecstasy and went into the Life Gate to guard it.

As long as it was guarded, others could easily find it, even if it shifted.

In a short period of time, several warriors had broken through and reached the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

In the end, 26 warriors had successfully broken through the realm.

The other 58 people failed, even though they had solid cultivation, Spiritual Power over twenty level, and assistance from the Pill.

So unless they had incredible luck, the other 58 people would never reach the Heaven Realm, even if they practiced their whole life.

There was actually a huge barrier between the Earth Realm and the Heaven Realm. On average, only one in ten warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm was able to break through the realm.

The 86 warriors had been carefully chosen by the Black Market as the most likely candidates to reach the Heaven Realm. Each of them had been given a Sacred Pool Pill, yet still, less than a third of them had broken through the realm.

The possession of practice resources did not guarantee that one would become a martial arts legend. It also depended upon one’s personal potential.

With the exception of the 26 warriors who had reached the Heaven Realm, the other Black Market warriors all passed

through the Life Gate and entered the Dragon Palace in search of the Dragon Sarira and other treasures.

Di Yi had promised them that aside from the Dragon Sarira, they could take whatever they found in the Dragon Palace.

Their failure to reach the Heaven Realm was disappointing. However, after entering the Dragon Palace they were optimistic that they would find precious Spiritual Doses. They could then change their destinies, in defiance of nature, and break through the shackles of the Earth Realm.

Even if there was only a slight chance, they still had to try.

The 26 warriors who had reached the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm stayed behind to guard the Life Gate and prevent outsiders from entering the Dragon Palace.

Soon after, a warship sailed rapidly from afar and stopped outside the Eight-point Formation.

Qin Ya, Duanmu Xingling, Zhang Ruochen, and warriors of the Duanmu family were on the warship.

“The young master just entered the Dragon Palace, we must stop them! Arrange the array, stop them!” A Black Market warrior called out.

The four masters of the Black Market in Omen Ridge; the Master of the Shadow Sword; the Overseer of Hell; the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club, and the Owner of the Rosefinch Tower, each took out a piece of jade stone at the same time.

They injected Genuine Qi into the jade stone in their hands; 36 inscriptions appeared on each stone.

The inscriptions flew out and turned into a light column that shot upwards.

108 inscriptions gathered together to form the Circulation Array.

Giant illusory images of 108 savage beasts stood on the outer edge of the array. Each image was 18 meters high. They were vivid and fierce. They roared and shook the undercurrent, rolling over and over.

“The Beasts Array.”

Staring at the array ahead, the coquetry expression on Qin Ya’s face disappeared. Her eyes grew cold.

The Shadow Sword Sect, Hades Department, Poisonous Spider Club, and Rosefinch Tower were the four largest forces in the black market of Omen Ridge. Therefore, their leaders were naturally the best of the best.

Any one of them could cause unimaginable damage on their own, not to mention when they joined hands.

“Let an old fellow like me break the formation!”

A resounding shout came from somewhere above the water surface.

A tall man, strong as an iron tower, sailed through wind and waves with great momentum, and suspended above the Beasts Array.

Wearing a loose silver robe, he looked to be in his fifties. Actually, he was 94.

It was Lei Jing, the Hall Master of the Silver Gowned Elder’s Hall.

“The Hall Master is here!” Chang Qiqi cried out happily.

Zhang Ruochen saluted with his hands together, “Master.”

Lei Jing nodded. “The Palace Master and internal students of the School of the Martial Market will arrive soon. Let me break the Beast Array first.”

The chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club, stood in the array. He sneered and said, “Lei Jing, you are so arrogant! It is impossible for you to break the Beasts Array the four of us put together.”

“Just wait and see. You will know if I am arrogant.” Lei Jing replied.

Genuine Qi surged rapidly inside Lei Jing and many red Lines appeared on his skin. The Lines covered his whole body, like a spider web.

SWOOSH!

Behind Lei Jing, a 30-meter-high blood-red Giant God shadow with an ox head appeared. It broke out a powerful momentum that covered the water for 100 kilometers.

All the savage beasts felt the momentum. Frightened, they fainted, sinking into the water.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Lei Jing with a twinkle in his eyes, “Blood Magic Shadow.”

Lei Jing used to practice Blood Cloud Scripture, an Inferior-Class Ghost-Level exercise. Zhang Ruochen had given him a better method, Blood and God Classics, a Superior-Class Ghost-Level martial technique.

Lei Jing performing Blood Magic Shadow indicated that he had completed the transformation of exercises, and his martial cultivation had reached a higher level.

“How horrible his momentum is! When did Lei Jing’s cultivation become so formidable?”

The Square Commandery Prince standing in the distance suddenly changed his facial expression. Promptly he led a dozen Heaven Realm warriors, including Jin Chuan and Guo Shisan, to retreat towards the distance.

It was a battle beyond the Heaven Realm, even beyond mortals.

Even so-called “martial arts legends” were doomed to die if they got close.

“Lei Jing is so amazing. No wonder he was able to enter the Saint Academy.”

Seeing Lei Jing’s strong momentum, Qin Ya was surprised.

BANG!

Lei Jing shouted and held up his fists to attack the Beasts Array.

As he punched out, the Giant Ox-headed God behind him also put up its fists.

POW!

The illusory Beast images could only ward him off for a moment. They quickly broke up, flying apart into wisps of Genuine Qi.

Almost at the same time, the four Black Market masters spit out blood. They flew backwards in four different directions, severely injured.

The combination of the four masters had collapsed in one blow.

“Run! Lei Jing’s cultivation has probably broken through. We are no match for him!” The Owner of Rosefinch Tower performed a bodily movement to parcel his body in the illusory image of a rosefinch, and quickly ran away.

The other three were also injured. They did not dare continue the fight with Lei Jing, thus they ran off in three different directions.

Lei Jing collected the Blood Magic Shadow and landed on the warship.

Qin Ya promptly rushed up with an unchanged facial expression, laughing. “Meet Master Lei.”

Lei Jing gazed at her. “I’ve met you before. When Half-Saint Duanmu visited the School of the Martial Market, you were with him.”

Qin Ya said respectfully, “Hall Master, you have a good memory.”

Lei Jing looked at the Earth Realm warriors on the warship. Indifferently, he said, “The Duanmu family looks very ambitious, so many secret masters in Omen Ridge. Are you planning to unify the 36 commanderies and build Omen Ridge into a superior class commandery?”

Qin Ya smiled. “Everything is arranged by the ancestor. We just follow the orders. If you have questions, you can ask the ancestor in person.”

Although Lei Jing was dissatisfied with the Duanmu family’s conduct, the family had powerful forces and lots of masters.



Not to mention the forefather at the Half-Saint level. He did not want to offend them for such trifles.

Lei Jing turned to Zhang Ruochen with a soft look. “Zhang Ruochen, the Dragon Palace is very dangerous. Are you sure you want to go there?”

Lei Jing was very concerned for Zhang Ruochen’s safety. He was an outstanding warrior and would have a promising future.

It was not worth risking an accident in the Dragon Palace.

Zhang Ruochen said, “The path of cultivation is inherently full of danger. Warriors must constantly challenge themselves and overcome difficulties.”

“Alright! Under the circumstances, just go and try.” Lei Jing said. “I’ve repelled the Black Market masters in the boundary area of the Dragon Palace. Once you enter the Dragon Palace, you are on your own.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded with a firm expression. Then, with the Abyss Ancient Sword and Flying Fish Armor, he quickly charged toward the Eight-point Formation.

Soon afterwards, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, Huang Yanchen, Chen Xier, and hundreds of Earth Realm warriors from the Duanmu family all rushed out of the warship to follow him.

Both the Red Wish Emissary and the Orange Star Emissary were disciples of Saints. They would not run away, even if Lei Jing burst out incredible power.

They had both mastered Holy Weapons. Even if they were inferior to Lei Jing in actual strength, they were confident they could escape unscathed.

The Square Commandery warriors had not gone far either. They stopped just behind the two Emissaries.

Jin Chuan looked back and saw that Zhang Ruochen had charged the Eight-point Formation. He looked ferocious. In an icy voice he said, “That loathsome Zhang Ruochen! He is lucky to be alive.”

The Square Commandery Prince tapped Jin Chuan's shoulder, saying, "Take it easy! 26 Heaven Realm warriors are guarding the Dragon Palace. No matter how strong Zhang Ruochen's cultivation is, he cannot defeat them."

"I only hate that I cannot kill him myself." Jin Chuan said.

The Square Commandery Prince had hate in his eyes. "Zhang Ruochen destroyed our Square Commandery. I will not forgive him so easily. When the young master gets Dragon Sarira, I will go to Yunwu Commandery and kill all his family."

"Count me in." Jin Chuan clenched his teeth.

Hearing the conversation between the Square Commandery Prince and Jin Chuan, the Red Wish Emissary standing in front sneered, secretly thinking,

"You guys are so over-confident. How could you craps equate yourselves with Zhang Ruochen? In the Dragon Palace, he will break through to the Heaven Realm. When he succeeds, all the warriors of the Square Commandery together cannot defeat him."

# Chapter 328 - Thousand Foot Gravity Dungeon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen first passed the Eight-point Formation and then directly rushed toward the Life Gate.

A man, who looked to be in his early 20s, went out of the Life Gate and met Zhang Ruochen with a heavy knife in his hand. “Zhang Ruochen, I am ordered by the young master to kill you.”

Zhang Ruochen gazed at him for an instant, asking, “Can you block me?”

“If I had not broken through to the Heaven Realm, I would not be your opponent. But now, I am afraid that we are not at the same level!” That man was obviously overconfident in his strength.

Si Xingkong also rushed out of the Eight-point Formation and went up to Zhang Ruochen. He warned him, “Zhang Ruochen, he is Murong Bairen, one of the seven young masters of the Black Market and a disciple of the Shadow Sword Sect. I will deal with him after taking the petals of the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower and breaking through to the Heaven Realm.”

“Si Xingkong, do you think that you have an opportunity to break through into the realm?”

Murong Bairen looked at the rest of the 25 warriors at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm, saying, “Everyone, listen to me. Anyone who passes through the Eight-point Formation must be killed immediately. I will deal with Zhang Ruochen.”

A short time ago, Si Xingkong had taken the liquid refined from the petals of the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower and performed his exercises to fully absorb its efficacy and break through to the Heaven Realm.

By Si Xingkong's side, Zhang Ruochen waved his sword sideways and glanced at Murong Bairen. He said, "Murong Bairen, you are not my opponent, even if you have broken through to the Heaven Realm. Pitting yourself against me is a losing game."

Murong Bairen laughed and said, "Zhang Ruochen, you are so complacent! Even if you are in the top 100 on the Earth Board, how can you belittle other geniuses? If you are so skilled, show me what you've got."

Murong Bairen moved laterally and performed the "Eight Step Cicada Catching", a mid-class martial technique of the Spiritual Stage. He thrust forward a single step to form a figure. Subsequently, he formed the other figure 10 meters away.

When he took the fifth step, five figures had been left behind.

At that moment, he appeared behind Zhang Ruochen and slashed obliquely with his knife.

As one of the seven young masters of the Black Market, Murong Bairen had to be a top-notch person. When he was in the Earth Realm, he had the power to fight against warriors in the Heaven Realm.

Now that he had reached the Heaven Realm, he was even more extraordinary.

Strong men, such as Guo Shisan and Jin Yeyun, could not be counted as his opponent.

For this reason, Murong Bairen was overconfident after reaching the Heaven Realm. He thought that he had ranked on the list of first-class masters, so he belittled Zhang Ruochen, who was in the Earth Realm.

Without turning around, Zhang Ruochen stood there and directly backhanded his palm.

Urged by the Genuine Qi, Zhang Ruochen's arms looked like dragon's arms.

“Dragon and Elephant Returning to Earth!”

Zhang Ruochen slapped Murong Bairen's lower abdomen with massive hand strength pouring out.

“He reacted so quickly that, without it even touching his body, my knife was struck and flung away by the strength of his hand.”

Murong Bairen remained calm, promptly performed exercises, and activated the Genuine Qi inside of him to support a half-meter-thick Celestial Bodyshield.

Zhang Ruochen pitted Murong Bairen's Celestial Bodyshield against his palm, which was the most masculine.

When the layer of Celestial Bodyshield would be destroyed soon, Murong Bairen promptly placed his knife transversally to ward him off. He held the hilt with his right hand and pressed the blade with his left. He lowered his legs and sank into the ground to burst out all of his strength.

“Bang!”

The Celestial Bodyshield was smashed by his palm strength and collided with the saber.

A mounting momentum poured out of the saber into Murong Bairen's arms, which shook him and forced him to slip backward, leaving a half-meter-deep fissure in the ground.

“What a powerful palm!”

As Murong Bairen's arms trembled with pain, he surprisingly stared at Zhang Ruochen with an incredible look.

“I have broken through to the Heaven Realm. How can I be defeated by him with one palm?”

A little stunned, Zhang Ruochen never thought that his all-out palm would ward him off.

“He has proven himself to be one of the seven young masters in the Black Market. If I had not broken through to the Completion of the Earth Realm, I would be unlikely to win a

fight against him. However, since I have already reached the Completion of the Earth Realm, it should not be difficult to cope with him.”

To defend him, Zhang Ruochen was still standing by Si Xingkong, rather than chasing Murong Bairen.

Meanwhile, two warriors at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm wanted to ambush him. However, Zhang Ruochen repelled them with his sword, so that no one could step any closer.

Murong Bairen snorted and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you really have some skill. Now, it seems that I must get serious!”

“I am also curious about how strong you will be when you are serious.” Zhang Ruochen looked at ease and faintly smiled.

“Thousand Foot Gravity Dungeon.”

Murong Bairen clapped his hands to release the tremendous Genuine Qi inside of his body, resulting in a vision of heaven and earth.

Affected by his Genuine Qi, all of the Spiritual Qi in the water gathered around him to form a gravity dungeon, covering an area of a thousand feet.

In the gravity dungeon, everyone had to bear tenfold gravity, so their speed and power were greatly restrained.

However, Murong Bairen could make an exception.

Because he had just broken through to the Heaven Realm, he could burst out tenfold gravity. If he broke through to the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, he would burst out twentyfold gravity.

Faced with an ordinary army, Murong Bairen would do nothing but perform the “Thousand Foot Gravity Dungeon”, which could cripple tens of thousands of soldiers.

After entering the Heaven Realm, a top genius could be considered to have gained the mastery of martial arts and reached a higher level in martial arts.

What Murong Bairen initiated was the Sixth-level Gravity Sacred Mark, which had gravitational property in Genuine Qi.

Thus, he was so mighty that he could ward off one move of Zhang Ruochen's Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

“Zhang Ruochen, how much more power can you unleash under tenfold gravity?”

Murong Bairen laughed loudly, lifted his heavy knife, and attacked Zhang Ruochen once again.

Murong Bairen was not affected and kept a surprising speed. In an instant, it broke through the sound barrier.

“Bang!”

There was a loud cracking sound.

Murong Bairen rushed at Zhang Ruochen and a grim smile appeared on his face. He held the knife with both hands and thrust forward toward Zhang Ruochen's heart with its tip.

Tenfold gravity indeed had some influence on Zhang Ruochen. However, Zhang Ruochen had practiced the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm under thirtyfold gravity. Thus, the “Thousand Foot Gravity Dungeon” performed by Murong Bairen had only a minor influence on Zhang Ruochen.

Murong Bairen was faster than Zhang Ruochen, so Zhang Ruochen could not avoid his knife, but could only take it.

Zhang Ruochen gained mastery by striking only after his enemy had struck. He chopped with one stroke and Murong Bairen's saber broke apart in his hands and dropped to the ground.

Then, Zhang Ruochen slapped Murong Bairen's chest, which shattered his Celestial Bodyshield and sent him flying away again.

“How could it be possible...”

Murong Bairen could not figure out how Zhang Ruochen could be so fast and so strong under tenfold gravity.

Zhang Ruochen left no chance for Murong Bairen to fight back.

Moving forward two steps, he held the blade with both hands, mobilized the Genuine Qi in his entire body, and swung his sword to chop down.

Although Murong Bairen flew through the air and could not borrow any force, cyan beams appeared on his body.

“Swoosh!”

Cyan beams gathered to form a big clock, four-meters high, to guard him.

“Bang!”

After the Abyss Ancient Sword chopped at the big clock, a layer of ripples appeared on the surface of the big clock of Genuine Qi.

A strong impact force erupted to burst apart the big clock, which smashed into the crystal wall of the Dragon Palace along with Murong Bairen.

After the big clock of Genuine Qi had dispersed, Murong Bairen and his heavy broken knife dropped to the ground.

“He has an amulet treasure on his body.”

Zhang Ruochen rushed out once again and chopped at Murong Bairen’s neck with his sword.

Half kneeling on the ground, Murong Bairen quickly drew out a golden dagger and held it up, intending to ward off Zhang Ruochen’s sword.

With a bang, the Abyss Ancient Sword chopped at the golden dagger. Under the inverted power, the back of the dagger got directly close to Murong Bairen’s neck.

Like a thunderstrike, Murong Bairen’s right knee crashed into the flagstone with a loud bang. A big pit centered on his body with a seven-meter diameter was formed in the ground.

“Boom!”

Under the impact of Genuine Qi, a torrent of water poured out in all directions. More than 20 masters at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm in the Black Market walked unsteadily and continually retreated.



That meant that the power of Zhang Ruochen's blow was quite strong.

Obviously, the golden dagger drawn out by Murong Bairen later was of a very high grade because it could withstand a strike of the Abyss Ancient Sword without fracturing.

Holding the hilt with both hands, Murong Bairen was still struggling to ward off Zhang Ruochen's sword.

If he failed to ward it off, his neck would be chopped off.

Qin Ya stood on the warship and overlooked the Dragon Palace, telling herself, "Zhang Ruochen is really a genius. Without breaking through to the Heaven Realm, he is capable of beating Murong Bairen. It seems like Di Yi can be suppressed only by Zhang Ruochen cooperating with Xingling."

At present, she was most concerned that Di Yi would slaughter people in the Dragon Palace. Considering Di Yi's cultivation, Duanmu Xingling would not be able to defeat Di Yi, even if Duanmu Xingling unlocked the seal inside.

However, it would not be difficult to deal with Di Yi if Zhang Ruochen were to team up with Duanmu Xingling.

At that moment, Duanmu Xingling, Huang Yanchen, Chen Xier, Chang Qiqi, and warriors of the Duanmu family successively passed through the Eight-point Formation and arrived at the square in front of the Dragon Palace to join Si Xingkong, who was breaking through to the Heaven Realm.

"All of them have only reached the Earth Realm, so the 10 of us can kill them. The others should go to help the young master deal with Zhang Ruochen," said an elder just at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

25 warriors at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm in the Black Market were divided into three groups. The five strongest warriors were responsible for guarding the Life Gate; 10 warriors went to kill the warriors of the Duanmu family; and the remaining 10 people rushed toward Zhang Ruochen and Murong Bairen.

# Chapter 329 - Nine Palaces and Seventy-Two Mansions

Chapter 329: Nine Palaces and Seventy-Two Mansions

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

As Zhang Ruochen, holding his sword with both hands, was fiercely suppressing Murong Bairen, he glanced at Huang Yanchen and Duanmu Xingling.

10 masters of the Black Market at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm turned into 10 shadows and dashed into the crowd. Just like wolves among sheep, they took down those 10 warriors who were from the Duanmu family in a flash.

“Swish!”

It was a night of swords and sabers, with the aura of death in the air.

A warrior in the Completion of the Earth Realm fighting with a warrior in the Heaven Realm was just like a kid fighting with a well-armed soldier. It was simply an overwhelming landslide.

Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, and Chen Xier, all Three-realm Fighting Geniuses, whose martial cultivation had reached the Completion of the Earth Realm, could content against warriors at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

“Zhang Ruochen, you... cannot kill me...”

Seeing the 10 rushing warriors, Murong Bairen smiled with his pale face.” As long as they come, the situation will change.”

Of course, he had to save himself before their arrival.

Murong Bairen circulated all the Genuine Qi into his arms, which then turned into cyan with copper-pipe-like meridians winding on. Then, his arms became stronger to get free from the control of Zhang Ruochen.

“I can’t kill you? You are so overconfident!”

Zhang Ruochen attacked Murong Bairen’s head as his hand was forming a palm print.

This was not good!

Under the threat of death, Murong Bairen broke out with unprecedented potential. He pushed up with his legs kicking backward so that he narrowly avoid the palm of Zhang Ruochen.

“Shing!”

At the moment, a sword light flew past Murong Bairen’s eyes, leaving a line of blood on them.

His golden knife fell on the ground while his hands were covering his bloody eyes. He screeched, saying, “My eyes... Zhang Ruochen, you dared to ruin my eyes. The Dark Shadow Sect will not let you off...”

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen hacked again with his sword, which streaked across Murong Bairen’s neck, cutting through his throat and stopping his voice abruptly.

Losing the protection of the Celestial Bodyshield, Murong Bairen broke into pieces of a dismembered corpse under the strong hydraulic pressure.

The surrounding water turned completely red.

A young legend had fallen.

Murong Bairen’s talent could have made him an overlord of Omen Ridge, but when he had just reached the Heaven Realm and had yet to show his ability, he died in the water—even a complete skeleton could not be found.

Under that bloody fog, a golden light was shining.

A knife was wrapped up by the golden light.

It soon flew and rushed into Zhang Ruochen’s palm as his fingers stretched out.

This golden knife, which could ward off the skill of the Abyss Ancient Sword without cracking, could not be an ordinary one.

Zhang Ruochen infused Genuine Qi into the knife. And after scrutiny, joy arose in his heart. There were 74 inscriptions on the blade, four of which had the medium level inscription “Fire”.

“It’s a... 10th-level Genuine Martial Arm.”

The strongest soldiers in the Yunwu Commandery only had ninth-level Genuine Martial Arms.

“Why was Murong Bairen able to have a 10th-level Genuine Martial Arm?”

Zhang Ruochen was a little puzzled that the force of a soldier with a 10th-level Genuine Martial Arm could be somewhat exerted by a warrior in the Heaven Realm.

Murong Bairen had just broken through to the Heaven Realm, so he probably did not know how to exert the full power of the knife. Otherwise, it would not have been such an easy thing for Zhang Ruochen to kill him.

Although the Abyss Ancient Sword was sharp, it was a ruined weapon with the power equal to a ninth-level Genuine Martial Arm.

“Howl!”

A roar, coming from not far away, turned into a harsh sound wave.

It was not from the enemies, but from Si Xingkong, who had broken through to the Heaven Realm.

Si Xingkong stood up and a formidable vigor from his opening arms swept away the three masters in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm who wanted to kill him.

Si Xingkong formally stepped into the list of martial arts legends as his realm breaking and cultivation increased.

Si Xingkong rushed out like a streaming light at a rapid pace, throwing three punches in succession.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

The heads of all three warriors burst into three clouds of bloody fog.

Si Xingkong killed the three warriors in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm instantly.

“Si Xingkong was once the top young master in Omen Ridge, and now he has broken through to the Heaven Realm. Nobody can ward off him.”

The warriors from the Black Market all felt scared after seeing the mighty Si Xingkong.

“Zhang Tiangui could defeat Si Xingkong, right? If he reaches the Heaven Realm, Si Xingkong will lose again,” one of the warriors of the Black Market said.

“Zhang Tiangui has entered the Life Gate to find treasures in the Dragon Palace.”

“Both Zhang Ruochen and Si Xingkong are fierce among the young generation. Don’t you see that Murong Bairen has died? Let’s run!”

...

Those remaining warriors from the Black Market all retreated and rushed into the Life Gate.

Because most of the warriors had been slaughtered by Zhang Ruochen and Si Xingkong, only 12 warriors at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm escaped.

With not even a quarter of an hour having elapsed, it was a shocking fact that 14 warriors in the Heaven Realm died outside of the Dragon Palace.

Huang Yanchen and Chang Qiqi took out the liquid refined from the petals of the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower and drank it, being ready to break into the Heaven Realm.

Chen Xier did not have any petals of the Nirvana Fire Spirit Flower, but she owned another Spiritual Dose. After using it, she also began to practice to break through realm.

Only Duanmu Xingling hesitated a little before drinking the liquid.

She had almost reached the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm, and she also wanted to find the Dragon Sarira to

increase her cultivation. Thus, she did not plan to break through the realm now.

Though she used the liquid, she suppressed the efficacy of the petal rather than refining and absorbing it.

“Eldest Brother, you deal with this. I’ll go first to open a way to the Life Gate.”

Zhang Ruochen rushed into the Life Gate in a flash.

As Guoguo saw Zhang Ruochen entering the Life Gate, its big eyes blinked and quickly it went after him.

If Guoguo had a choice, it had to choose Zhang Ruochen because Chang Qiqi would only support it with carrots while Zhang Ruochen could give it meat.

“Zhang Ruochen, go to hell!”

As Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the Life Gate, a cold light came from his left.

A murderer wrapped in purple clothes with a flashing long spear dashed out from the corner, stabbing at Zhang Ruochen’s heart.

“There’s really an ambush here.”

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have discovered that someone was hiding behind the gate. At the instant of the long spear thrusting forward, his finger pointed out and struck out a Sword Wave.

“Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

The location that the wave passed immediately became glaciated.

The killer who hid behind the Life Gate and wanted to ambush Zhang Ruochen was frozen in the ice. He remained in the same posture as he had been while stabbing with the spear.

However, his body had already been cut to pieces by the Sword Breath.

Just a snap of Zhang Ruochen’s fingers shattered the giant ice immediately.

Even the killer inside it was broken apart.

People could only perceive the magnificence of the Dragon Palace by entering it. The palace was a hundred times more massive than a human's palace, and each of the buildings was as high as a mountain, emitting colorful light.

Zhang Ruochen walked at a high speed. The road forward suddenly vanished, and a bitterly cold black fog appeared.

It was the only way to the center of the Dragon Palace.

Zhang Ruochen rushed in without hesitation. As he entered the fog, a strong suction from his feet constantly drew him down as if he was walking into a mire.

“There is so much danger in the Dragon Palace. I should not take it lightly.”

Zhang Ruochen breathed deeply and his Genuine Qi flowed into his feet. His palms slapped on the surface of the mire. Then, his body soared over the mire immediately.

After escaping, Zhang Ruochen looked back.

This was not a mire.

It was clearly a Blood Pit.

The surface of the Blood Pit was bubbling up—bones were floating as the minced meat of human beings and savages was boiling in it.

Luckily, Zhang Ruochen possessed a profound cultivation. That would have been fatal for other warriors in the Earth Realm.

Guoguo was luckier than Zhang Ruochen. It easily avoided the Blood Pit and caught up to him.

“Guoguo, why are you coming after me?”

Zhang Ruochen saw the big rabbit as a smile appeared on his face.

Guoguo walked up to him with its eyes blinking. It stretched out its hands and expectantly stared at Zhang Ruochen.

“It is OK to eat, but you have to help me.”

Zhang Ruochen took out a jade box, which contained the Spiritual Brawn, from the Spatial Ring and held it in his hand. But he deliberately did not hand it over.

As soon as Guoguo saw the jade box, its eyes lighted up. It nodded eagerly, which seemed to say: "I promise you anything!"

Giving it the box, Zhang Ruochen said, "You stay here to alert people that there is a Blood Pit, lest they fall into it."

Guoguo nodded and opened the jade box, holding the Spiritual Brawn to eat.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head with a smile. "Chang Qiqi was so unreliable that even he brought Guoguo into the Dragon Palace."

Having undergone that danger, Zhang Ruochen became more careful. He released the Time and Space Domain and continued forward.

After crossing through that black fog, a graceful purple figure with a Fish Intestine Sword stepped out from the piles of colorful coral and intentionally waited for Zhang Ruochen.

"Zhang Ruochen."

The purple figure was wearing a veil that wrapped her head and face, all that showed were her cold eyes.

Even so, Zhang Ruochen recognized her in an instant and said, "Sister Zi, are you here to impede me?"

After Zi Qian dropped her veil, her beautiful face was revealed. She said coldly, "It is meaningless to stop you since you have already entered the Dragon Palace. I just came to warn you that Di Yi has arrived at the central Divine Dragon Temple, so you'd better not go there. Nobody will be a threat to you if you don't fight with them."

Before entering the Underwater Dragon Palace, Zhang Ruochen had heard that the Dragon Palace contained nine halls and 72 abodes in total.

The nine halls centered on the "Divine Dragon Temple", in which the Four-winged Earth Dragon had lived.



If the Dragon Sarira was really inside the Dragon Palace, it was likely placed in the Divine Dragon Temple.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I have to get the Dragon Sarira, so the Divine Dragon Temple is the place that I must go. I hope you won't hold me back."

"Zhang Ruochen, please wait."

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen wanted to enter the Divine Dragon Temple, Zi Qian immediately stretched out a hand to hold his arm.

Zhang Ruochen stopped to turn back and gave her a glance.

Zi Qian felt a little awkward, and she withdrew her hand to behind her back and said, "Have you forgotten that we got a dragon horn in the Chikong Secret Mansion? It may have some important function. We don't have to go to the Divine Dragon Temple."

...

# Chapter 330 - Treasure Mountain

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen put the dragon horn in his palm and mused, saying, “The Four-winged Earth Dragon refined its dragon horn into a key, so it must lock up some kind of treasure. Is there anything more important than the Dragon Sarira?”

Zi Qian nodded and said, “Right, I think so. So, even if Di Yi entered into the Divine Dragon Temple, without the dragon horn, he couldn’t get the Dragon Sarira. In that case, we don’t have to confront him.

“Besides, the Dragon Sarira is not necessarily located in the Divine Dragon Temple.”

At that time, a faint light emerged on the dragon horn, and then, the light twinkled and light spots flew out.

Zhang Ruochen and Zi Qian were bewildered, both saying, “Huh?” at almost the same time.

What happened?

“Does... the dragon horn feel something?” Zi Qian stared at the horn as her pupils constantly dilated.

A moment later, the dragon horn twinkled again and the light became stronger.

Zhang Ruochen mused and said, “If we go after the light of the dragon horn, maybe we could find something. But, we should wait for my friends.”

After a while, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Chen Xier, and Guoguo passed through the

black fog and caught up with them. After seeing that Zhang Ruochen was still waiting for them, they were all touched.

All of them knew that Zhang Ruochen had a dragon horn that could open an important treasure in the Dragon Palace.

They had originally thought that the reason that Zhang Ruochen had stolen a march on them was that he wanted to keep the treasure for himself.

But now, they realized that Zhang Ruochen had actually paved the way for them and helped them to eliminate risks rather than having abandoned them.

Chang Qiqi sighed and said, "I'm so ashamed. I just told them that you had surely gone for the treasure and certainly left us behind!"

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "Now that the six of us have come here together, naturally we'll find the treasure together. Only when all of us go back with fruitful results can this exploration be regarded as a success." U.p..dated by .com

Chang Qiqi felt even more abashed and gave himself a hard slap, leaving a hand print on his face. Meanwhile, he bowed to Zhang Ruochen three times in great admiration of him.

Before today, he had only admired Si Xingkong, but now Zhang Ruochen had also become someone that he worshiped.

Chang Qiqi used to see Zhang Ruochen as a good friend. Now, he regarded him as a brother who could go through thick and thin together.

Just a word from Zhang Ruochen could send Chang Qiqi to undergo the most severe trials without any refusal.

When Chen Xier saw Zi Qian standing beside Zhang Ruochen, she immediately pulled out a double-edged sword and stabbed at her.

Chen Xier's cultivation had broken through to the Heaven Realm, and with more power, the speed of her sword was as quick as lightning. In a flash, it touched between Zi Qian's eyebrows.

Zhang Ruochen attacked with a palm and made her sword turn in another direction.

At the same time, he stood in front of Zi Qian.

The light from the sword became brighter. With the same homicidal intention, Chen Xier said, “Zhang Ruochen, she is a killer of the Black Market, why do you protect her?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I know where she’s from. But it was she who found the dragon horn in the Chikong Secret Mansion. I promised that I would take her to find the treasure.”

Chen Xier frowned and gazed at Huang Yanchen, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi. She asked them, “Do you agree that a killer of the Black Market should come with us?”

Chang Qiqi said, “I believe in junior fellow apprentice Zhang, and I support him.”

Although Huang Yanchen disliked Zi Qian, she still said, “The dragon horn was indeed found by Zi Qian.”

“But she is from the Black Market...” Chen Xier said.

Zhang Ruochen said to confirm, “It’s been decided. Anyone who disagrees with that can withdraw. Senior sister apprentice Chen, if you think that I’m colluding with the Black Market, you can report it to the Palace Master.”

Chen Xier stared at Zhang Ruochen’s eyes and felt an unprecedented overwhelming vigor from him that made her put her head down and her legs shiver. She did not dare to look directly at Zhang Ruochen again.

Finally, she compromised because all of the people looked at Zhang Ruochen as their leader. Nobody would stand on her side even if she strongly opposed.

These were true friends that shared joy and sorrow together. Even though they knew there was something inappropriate in Zhang Ruochen’s actions, they still supported him and stood by him without hesitation.

If it were in the past, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi would have definitely drawn their swords against Zi Qian once they

learned her identity. And there would have been no room for negotiation.

“Let’s go!”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Zi Qian. He grabbed the dragon horn and rapidly walked toward the northwest corner of the Dragon Palace according to the guidance of the dragon horn.

There were many killing arrays arranged in the Dragon Palace.

Any carelessness would make those killing arrays a road to death.

Zhang Ruochen knew something about the arrays. So when they met with any killing arrays, they immediately took a detour.

About half an hour later, the seven of them arrived below an underwater hill.

The light from the dragon horn became stronger and stronger, and it even began to shake slightly. If they put it near their ears, they would have even heard a deep dragon howl.

“It should be there.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped and faced that underwater hill.

The hill, reaching a height of 800 meters, was filled with dark stones and clay.

Many Spiritual Doses were growing on the hill and they exuded a colorful light that gave one the impression of jewelry.

“Oh my god! It is an underwater treasure mountain. Look at the Crimson Coral, it is almost 333 centimeters high. At least it is 1000 years old. If I can refine it, I will absolutely break through two realms and reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.”

Thrilled, Chang Qiqi kept his rubbing hands and was ready to rush to the hill.

Amazement could be seen in Zi Qian’s eyes, she said, “There are 14 Purple Qi Dragon Plants growing on the hill. If I get one of them, my Divine Purple Light Skill will reach the

seventh stage and my cultivation will break into the Heaven Realm. All of those Purple Qi Dragon Plants could help me reach the eighth stage.”

Even one Purple Qi Dragon Plant could not be found in Omen Ridge. But here, 14 of them were growing on the hill. How could Zi Qian not be excited?

Zhang Ruochen stopped Zi Qian and Chang Qiqi from getting close to the hill. He said seriously, “Take it easy, look at the ground.”

Everyone looked at the bottom part of the hill, where the skeletons of human beings and savage beasts were piled up.

Among them were some fresh skeletons, which obviously belonged to those warriors of the Black Market who had rushed toward the hill.

It was so strange!

All of them calmed down after seeing those bodies and they all had panicked expressions on their faces.

“Some kind of killing array must be set up in the boundary of the hill. Once someone gets close, he will be killed by it,” Huang Yanchen surmised.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “I just looked around and there is no Inscription of Array in the boundary.”

“How can that be possible? Were those warriors and savage beasts beaten to death?” Chang Qiqi worriedly touched his chin.

“This is the strangest thing. How did those humans and savage beasts die?” Zhang Ruochen frowned.

It was so terrible for them that they could only look at the hill but they could not do anything.

Chang Qiqi had recklessly rushed toward the hill several times, but he was drawn back by Zhang Ruochen and Si Xingkong.

“Maybe a Martial Soul can be used,” Zhang Ruochen thought in his heart.

Zhang Ruochen immediately sat cross-legged and secretly unleashed his Martial Soul. He made it cautiously get closer to the hill.

“Awoo!”

The Martial Soul had walked forward just 10 steps, then suddenly, a dragon’s roar rang out from the interior part of the hill that almost shattered his soul.

Zhang Ruochen took back the Martial Soul immediately. His brain was damaged and he spat out blood.

What a grisly power!

Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul was seriously hurt and he got a severe headache. It was so lucky that he had attracted two Chord of Gods and the illusory image of gods in his Qi Lake helped him ward off part of that power. Otherwise, it would not have been as simple for him as just spitting out some blood.

“Zhang Ruochen, what happened to you?”

Zi Qian put her palm on Zhang Ruochen’s back and transferred some of her Genuine Qi into his body.

Huang Yanchen had run over to him but Zi Qian remained a step ahead.

Huang Yanchen felt unhappy as she saw their apparent intimacy. She walked up and grasped Zi Qian’s wrist with cold eyes. She pulled her palm away from Zhang Ruochen’s back and pushed Zi Qian away, and said, “Your cultivation is insufficient. I’ll help him.”

Then, Huang Yanchen sat cross-legged behind Zhang Ruochen. Her Strong Genuine Qi flowed from her Qi Sea into her palms, and then she put her palms on Zhang Ruochen’s back.

Zi Qian’s hands clenched, she felt angry

. “How could Huang Yanchen be so brutal?”

However, she put away her anger as she thought that Huang Yanchen was Zhang Ruochen’s fiancée.

“She is his fiancée, who are you?”

Besides, Huang Yanchen had reached the Heaven Realm and her martial cultivation was higher than hers. So she did not dare to provoke Huang Yanchen in any case.

Previously, they just saw Zhang Ruochen sitting on the ground, so they did not know that he had been unleashing his Martial Soul. They also did not know that Zhang Ruochen was not hurt in his body, but in his Martial Soul.

A damaged Martial Soul could only be rehabilitated slowly. Any Genuine Qi from outside was useless.

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes after he suppressed the trauma on his Martial Soul. Except for some stinging pain in his head, he did not feel any discomfort.

“It seems that the Martial Soul cannot be used again within a short time.”

Having no Martial Soul meant having no Spiritual Qi and no Space Domain. So, Zhang Ruochen’s power would be lessened.

Although his Martial Soul was damaged, Zhang Ruochen still had gained a lot. He now knew how to access to the hill.

“Senior sister apprentice Huang, I’m OK,” Zhang Ruochen said.

After seeing Zhang Ruochen had woken up, Huang Yanchen was very happy. She drew back her palms and asked him with concern, “Zhang Ruochen, what happened to you? Why did you spit up blood?”

Chang Qiqi looked around and said in a gloomy voice, “Are we haunted?”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and said with a smile, “There is no ghost in the world. I just used a secret method to search that hill. I got hurt because a strong power attacked me.”

Duanmu Xingling asked, “Did you find anything?”

“I have definitely found something.”



Zhang Ruochen stared at that high hill and his fingers constantly moved. After a while, he withdrew his hands and said with a nod, “The dragon cave symbolizes life, but it is full of a dead breath. If I’m not wrong, this is not a hill at all, it is a tomb.”

“A tomb? Who will build such a huge tomb?” Chang Qiqi asked.

“A dragon!”

Zhang Ruochen said again, “It’s the tomb of a dragon.”

(Monday)

# Chapter 331 - Battling Di Yi

Chapter 331: Battling Di Yi

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“A dragon’s tomb?”

Upon hearing Zhang Ruochen’s words, everyone’s gaze once again focused on the hill in the distance. Under closer inspection, it indeed looked like a dragon’s tomb from where they stood.

“If it’s a Dragon Tomb, maybe the Golden Dragon from 800 years ago is buried at the foot of it.” Duanmu Xingling’s eyes lit up and her eyelashes fluttered. It was impossible to guess what she was thinking.

Huang Yanchen said, “Even if we know for sure that Dragon Sarira is at the foot of the hill, so what? We can’t get even one step closer to the hill.”

“That might not be true.”

Zhang Ruochen looked at the dragon horn in his hand and said, “The humans and savage beasts died at the foot of the hill because they woke the dragon soul inside the hill. Their souls were shattered by the breath of the soul.”

Although the Golden Dragon had died, its soul had not dissipated.

Just a few hours earlier, Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul had almost been shattered from the dragon soul’s giant roar.

Si Xingkong asked, “How can we avoid the dragon soul?”

“Avoid?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “The Golden Dragon was once the steed of the Buddhist Emperor and later it swallowed the Buddhist Emperor’s Sarira. Its cultivation is terrifyingly powerful. It would be impossible for us, with our cultivation, to avoid the dragon soul. If we want to enter the hill, we can only do so by worshipping it.”

Zhang Ruochen placed his hands together and bowed deeply towards the hill.

At the same time, he extended his powerful Spiritual Power to communicate with the dragon soul in the hill. As he did so, he recited a passage of Soul-soothing Mantra.

The Soul-soothing Mantra was a basic scroll of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. It was not a martial technique, so it had spread widely. Almost every monk was able to recite it.

Naturally, the Emperor Ming’s Palace in those days had also had a copy of the Soul-soothing Mantra. Zhang Ruochen happened to have read through it once and memorized it.

The main purpose of the Soul-soothing Mantra was to calm a warrior’s miscellaneous thoughts, as well as evil and killing desires. It brought warriors peace of mind.

If one were to spend a large amount of time listening to monks reciting a Soul-soothing Mantra, it would help strengthen their Martial Soul.

Of course, the Soul-soothing Mantra also had some aggressive quality. If a high-level monk were to recite the mantra, it could freeze a warrior’s Martial Soul and lull it to sleep.

Rumor had it that when Empress Chi Yao first brought her soldiers to attack the Western Region, the Buddhist Emperor had recited the Soul-soothing Mantra and put Chi Yao’s army to sleep for seven days and nights. The Buddhist Emperor wanted to use this method to persuade the Empress Chi Yao to turn back.

It was unfortunate that the Buddhist Emperor had misjudged Empress Chi Yao’s determination. In the end, the army had entered into the Western Region and broken the Thousand Buddhas Sect.

And thus, a monastical order of countless generations was destroyed in a mere moment.

Although the Thousand Buddhas Sect was rebuilt later, it never again reached the level of its glorious past.

Zhang Ruochen was not an enlightened monk. He could only try and hope that his sincere recitation of the Soul-soothing Mantra would have some effect on the dragon soul.

Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Zi Qian, and Chen Xier also put their hands together and knelt on the ground to worship the dragon soul.

The dragon soul would not consider them enemies if they showed enough goodwill.

Zhang Ruochen felt the power of the dragon soul was gradually lessening. He slowly took a step in the direction of the hill. Updated b.y . com

The others also rose and followed behind him with great care.

Only once the power of the dragon soul had disappeared did Zhang Ruochen stop reciting the Soul-soothing Mantra. In a low voice, he said, "I am going to look for the entrance to the Dragon Tomb. You should hurry to gather Spiritual Dose from the hill. Remember, you must maintain sincerity in your heart, otherwise, you will enrage the dragon soul."

Hearing that they could gather Spiritual Dose, Chang Qiqi could not wait any longer. He quickly dashed up the hill.

Guoguo was quicker than Chang Qiqi and already on the hill. Seeing the Spiritual Dose, he began to eat and drink with relish.

With the exception of Zhang Ruochen, everyone went up the hill to gather Spiritual Dose.

The hill was full of rare treasures. The Spiritual Dose here could cure illness, heal injuries, raise cultivation, and increase longevity.

It was equivalent to a huge fortune.

"Crimson Coral, Crimson Coral, finally got you... haha..."

Chang Qiqi held a one-meter long blood red coral in his hands and stroked it continuously. He was very excited and quickly placed the Crimson Coral into the Spatial Ring Zhang Ruochen had given him.

He went to gather more Spiritual Dose.

Zhang Ruochen also climbed up the hill, but he didn't gather Spiritual Dose. He was looking everywhere for the entrance to the hill.

He soon found a stone wall in the center of the hill. It was very smooth but covered in vines. Many spots along the wall were covered with mud and sand.

Peeling aside the mud and sand, the skeleton of an ancient stone gate was gradually revealed. It was seven meters tall and carved with deep print.

**BANG!**

He hit the surface of the stone gate with one palm. The print immediately gave off a warm golden light and blocked his handprint.

A layer of rock on the stone gate crumbled down, revealing a small but deep indent. It looked like a keyhole.

Zhang Ruochen was very happy with this development and immediately called everyone over. "Everyone come here, I've found the stone gate entrance into the hill."

Just as everyone was rushing toward the stone gate, an ear-piercing laugh came from the foot of the hill. "Zhang Ruochen, thank you for helping me find the Dragon Sarira."

A man wearing a metal mask dissolved into a shadow and appeared at the foot of the hill. He pushed with both his feet and made his way quickly up the hill by stepping on the water waves. He was heading directly toward the stone gate.

"That's not good. It's the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Di Yi." Si Xingkong said.

Huang Yanchen was closest to him so she immediately executed the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon. She

dissolved into a dragon shadow and headed straight for Di Yi, intending to block him.

SHING!

Huang Yanchen drew out a eight level Genuine Martial Arms sword. She moved her arm summoning 13 attacks towards Di Yi's heart.

Having broken into the Heaven Realm, Huang Yanchen's speed was unbelievably fast. Her body blurred and nine shadows appeared. It looked like nine swords were striking out at the same time.

“You don't know your own limits.”

Di Yi sneered coldly. His stance did not change at all as he struck one palm towards Huang Yanchen's sword.

His handprint had not even made contact with the combat sword when Huang Yanchen was hit so hard that she spat out blood. She flew backwards near the stone gate.

Huang Yanchen was so dazed that she was not able to activate the defensive inscriptions in her Space Pendant. If she had actually slammed into the stone gate, her bones would have shattered, and she would have died instantly.

Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen was standing right next to the stone gate. When he saw Huang Yanchen fly back, he immediately rushed forward and used all his Genuine Qi to catch her.

It was not until both of them had backed up to the stone gate that Zhang Ruochen finally managed to dissipate the force in Huang Yanchen's body and stop.

“Zhang Ruochen, you dare to divert your attention to rescuing another when I am your enemy?”

Di Yi let out a cold laugh from behind Zhang Ruochen.

Without any hesitation, Zhang Ruochen immediately used his Genuine Qi to activate the defensive inscriptions on his Spatial Ring. A white light poured out of the Spatial Ring and formed a protective sphere around them.

Just as the protective sphere was completed, Di Yi pointed one finger. It shot out towards the main Meridian on his back, the Sacred Meridian.

**SWOOSH!**

Although there was a protective sphere around him, Di Yi's attack slowly pierced through it. It was getting closer and closer.

Di Yi's gloves were called the Blackdragon Ghost Claw. They were a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms. It was because of these that he was able to pierce through the defenses of the Spatial Ring layer by layer.

If Di Yi's attack hit Zhang Ruochen's Sacred Meridian, his martial cultivation would be destroyed.

An eye-piercing white light emerged from Zhang Ruochen's glabella. The Heart of the Sword floated within his Qi Sea emitting a bright white light.

The Abyss Ancient Sword immediately flew from its scabbard. It left behind a beautiful 10 meter arcs of sword radiance as it slashed towards Di Yi's arm.

“Royal Kill, Heart Integrated into Sword.”

Di Yi exclaimed. He drew back his finger. He struck with a palm towards the Abyss Ancient Sword.

Di Yi activated his gloves and struck out a giant 10-meter black dragon claw.

The giant claw looked like an enormous black cloud. Its power was terrifying and its strength was boundless.

**BANG!**

The Abyss Ancient Sword was sent flying. It slammed into the hill leaving a deep gaping hole.

Zhang Ruochen held out his arm and the Abyss Ancient Sword returned to him. It circled him once before striking towards Di Yi again.

“Haha! You've managed to reach Heart Integrated into Sword at the Earth Realm. It seems that I underestimated you. You

are better than Bu Qianfan when it comes to the sword technique.”

Although Di Yi knew that Zhang Ruochen had reached the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, he did not show fear. Rather, he laughed aloud and once again swept his arms to attack with another giant black dragon claw.

Power strong enough to flatten mountains and upturn seas pressed down against Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Normally, Zhang Ruochen would not go head to head with Di Yi. He would use Sword Defending Technique to battle against Di Yi from a distance. He would look for Di Yi’s flaws and defeat him with elegant swordsmanship.

But he could not do that right now. He had to protect Huang Yanchen. She had fainted at this point. He could only pit himself against Di Yi.

Di Yi had a Saintly Being and his physical quality was without comparison. Naturally, melees were his forte.

“Dragon Shape and Elephant Shadow.”

Zhang Ruochen’s body shifted. He pushed off with his legs and rushed forward.

His body separated into two. There appeared to be two Zhang Ruochens. One of them was enveloped by the dragon shadow; the other by the illusory image of an elephant.

The two Zhang Ruochens struck out from either side together, executing the dragon claw and elephant foot against Di Yi.

BOOM!

After a reckless clash, they both took a few steps back.

However, Zhang Ruochen took 13 steps back; Di Yi only took three.

“Interesting, Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm. No wonder it is the foremost palm technique of the Thousand Buddhas Sect.”

Di Yi knew, very clearly, that Zhang Ruochen’s palm technique was very ferocious. If he had not been wearing the



tenth level Genuine Martial Arms Blackdragon Ghost Claw  
Gloves, he might not have come out on top.

# Chapter 332 - Dragon and Elephant Prajna, Hell Ghost King

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Even Bu Qianfan, who was ranked first on the Earth Board, could only exchange three blows with him before being defeated.

Di Yi was curious, how many attacks could Zhang Ruochen take?

Di Yi steadied himself and raised his hands. He placed his palms face down and curled his fingers, making them into claw-shaped.

SNAP!

The claws of the Blackdragon Ghost Claw Gloves were as sharp as dragon claws.

He stopped battling Zhang Ruochen with his palms and switched to using claw techniques.

“Hell Ghost King Claw.”

Di Yi charged forward. His speed was twice that of before; it was close to approaching the speed velocity.

The Hell Ghost King Claw was a martial technique which was not completely understood. It originated from the Universe Dragon Claw of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. It was later modified by Saints in the Black Market and used as a martial technique of the Black Market.

The Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm was the most powerful palm technique of the Thousand Buddhas Sect; the Universe Dragon Claw was the most powerful claw technique.

The Universe Dragon Claw had nine attacks, and the Hell Ghost King Claw, which was derived from it, had 36 attacks.

Comparing the two, the latter was slightly less dominating and powerful than the former.

However, the latter was also more evil and sinister. With the additional changes, the latter was a much darker technique than the former.

Di Yi struck out his claws. A sinister wind picked up. The temperature plummeted.

The water in the surrounding environment froze.

WOOSH!

Countless claw-prints flew back and forth in the freezing air. One minute they were hands; the next dragon claws. They gave off a ghostly cry.

Zhang Ruochen, had one arm around the unconscious Huang Yanchen. Gradually he slowed his speed.

BOOM!

Caught off guard, Di Yi scratched his chest with a claw. Even with the Flying Fish Armor, he still felt a deep pain in his chest, like his internal organs had been clawed at.

Another long howl came from the foot of the hill.

Zhang Tiangui flew a chariot a meter off the ground. It parted the waters and soared up the hill.

The power of the Feiyuan Chariot was shocking. As it passed rocks were crushed into fine powder.

Dozens of Black Market warriors followed. Weapons in hand, they arranged in a battle formation. They looked like a black tide swarming towards the stone gate.

“Zhang Ruochen, the day of your death has arrived!”

Zhang Tiangui stood proudly on the Feiyuan Chariot. He raised his hands and transformed his Genuine Qi into a beam of light that flew up from his head. He summoned a vision of heaven and earth.

Thousand Mile Lightning Sea.

CLAP!

With Zhang Tiangui's body at the center, all the Spiritual Qi within 333-kilometer surrounding area gathered together. It coalesced into rods of purple lightning. The lightning crossed and darted back and forth like a lightning sea below the water.

Zhang Ruochen's heart sank. He knew that Zhang Tiangui had broken into the Heaven Realm.

Such a powerful vision of heaven and the earth could only be summoned if one had broken into the Heaven Realm.

Even before Zhang Tiangui had broken into the Heaven Realm, he'd been a rare prodigy. Now his strength had increased exponentially; people like Si Xingkong and Chen Xier stood no chance against him.

However, Zhang Ruochen was more worried about the dragon soul in the hill. Once the dragon soul awakened, the future did not bear thinking about. It was likely that everyone here would die.

Just as Zhang Tiangui was executing the vision of Thousand Mile Thunder Sea, Zi Qian, who had the weakest cultivation, was struck by a streak of lightning. She flew back with a scream.

More than half of her body turned a charred black. Countless tiny threads of lightning flashed across her body. She was heavily injured.

Zhang Tiangui saw that Zi Qian was wearing the clothes of the Hades Department. He assumed that she was a warrior of the Black Market. The strike had not been purposely aimed at her.

If Zhang Tiangui had wanted to kill her, his strike would have incinerated her into ash.

Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong rushed to stop Zhang Tiangui from two different directions.

“Go away!”

Zhang Tiangui waved his arm and moved his Genuine Qi. Two thick rods of purple lightning flashed towards them. They fell back.

Zhang Tiangui only had one enemy, and that was Zhang Ruochen.

He knew that this was his only chance to kill Zhang Ruochen. Once Zhang Ruochen broke into the Heaven Realm, he would not have a chance.

Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong activated the defensive inscriptions on their Spatial Rings. Although they had been sent flying, they were not hurt.

They climbed to their feet and charged towards Zhang Tiangui again.

“We can’t let Zhang Tiangui join Di Yi. If they join forces, it will not be good for Zhang Ruochen.”

“Embattle!”

Si Xingkong leaped upwards. He landed on a high point on the hill. He took out a jade stone and immersed his Genuine Qi into it, activating the inscriptions.

Chen Xier, Duanmu Xingling, and Chang Qiqi did the same, activating the Inscriptions of Array. They created a Combined Attack.

Together they formed a Combined Attack.

**SWOOSH!**

A half-meter column of light burst out from their Combined Attack and struck towards Zhang Tiangui’s Feiyuan Chariot.

The chariot was an eighth level Genuine Martial Arms, but under their combined attack, it flipped over and rolled down the hill.

Zhang Tiangui looked quite pathetic as he followed his chariot down the hill.

The four's Combined Attack clashed with the array laid down by the Black Market warriors. They quickly destroyed the enemies' array.

More than half of the Black Market warriors were killed or injured. The remaining people quickly escaped to the bottom of the hill.

Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi were engaged in an intense battle.

“Ghost king's Anger!”

Di Yi executed the seventh attack of the Devil's Claw. His body grew half a meter, his muscles expanded, his bones stretched, and his fingers doubled in length.

He dissolved into a ghostly shadow and struck with a claw towards Zhang Ruochen's neck.

He planned to use this attack to pierce through Zhang Ruochen's Flying Fish Armor and completely finish him off.

“Blood-condensed Nine Swords.”

Zhang Ruochen spread his hands. The Spiritual Blood in his body flowed out. It transformed into blood fog and created a Blood Wave beneath his feet.

Nine sword shadows circled his body before combining into one and flying out.

Zhang Ruochen pushed out the sword Qi with both hands.

BAM!

The sword Qi gushed out. Countless streaks of sword Qi flew towards Di Yi forcing him to retreat.

Si Xingkong, Chen Xier, Duanmu Xingling, and Chang Qiqi rushed up the hill. They arrived at the stone gate and stood with Zhang Ruochen.

Duanmu Xingling held the injured Zi Qian in her arms.

Zhang Ruochen turned and placed the dragon horn into the hole in the stone gate.

The gate opened. A golden light shot out from within.

“SWOOSH!”

Not just the Dragon Palace but the entire river for thousands of kilometers was completely bathed in golden light. The indistinct sound of Buddhist music could be heard.

“The Buddha Sarira must be the heart of the hill.”

Light flashed through Di Yi’s eyes. He drew on all the power of his body. With his body as the center, water flowed out in all directions, sending all the Black Market warriors flying back.

Di Yi once again rushed towards the stone gate.

Si Xingkong, Duanmu Xingling, and the others had already entered. Zhang Ruochen pulled out the dragon horn and the stone gate began to close slowly.

Zhang Ruochen stood in the middle of the gate with his legs apart in a horse stance. The Genuine Qi in his body circulated rapidly and flowed towards his right arm, turning it golden.

“Zhang Ruochen, I was only using half of my power earlier. Do you really think I can’t kill you? If you try to stop me from taking the Dragon Sarira, you’re looking for death.”

A 33-meter human shape saint figure rose behind Di Yi. Its body radiated multi-colored light and its eyes burned like fire balls.

He appeared to be attaching himself to a Saint’s body. The power he displayed was indeed far more than before.

“Nine-folds of Elephant Power!”

Zhang Ruochen raised his right arm. He struck out nine handprints in a row. They overlapped resulting in a nine-fold increase in power.

“Human King Pushing Mountain.”

The holy light surrounding Di Yi flowed towards his fist. He brought it down like a mountain.

BAM!

Zhang Ruochen flew back.

He flew back more than 33 meters and landed on the ground. He felt like a mountain had crashed into him, his bones almost shattered. The skin of his right arm was cracked and bloody. He could see fresh blood, flesh and Blood Meridians.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen had also forced Di Yi to retreat. He could not get through the stone gate.

By the time Di Yi struck again, the gate had already closed.

“BANG!”

Di Yi’s fist slammed into the stone gate but was blocked by golden Lines. The strike rebounded and forced him back once again.

The entire hill shook.

“Damn.”

Di Yi retreated down the hill with his fists clenched tightly. He was furious.

Zhang Tiangui approached, bowed and asked, “Young master, what should we do now?”

Di Yi’s expression was dark. “Even if Zhang Ruochen manages to retrieve the Dragon Sarira, he has to come out. We can take it from him then.”

Zhang Tiangui was hesitant. “I’m worried that once Zhang Ruochen breaks into the Heaven Realm, it will be very difficult for us to defeat him.”

Di Yi’s eyes were cold, and his hands were clenched tightly, “So what if he reaches the Heaven Realm? As long as I reach the Heaven Realm, I will still defeat him. It is only a pity that if I do so, I will not be able to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm.”

Since ancient time, very few people had been able to reach the Ultimate Realm. Even with the aid of the Buddha Sarira, success was not guaranteed. Although Di Yi felt a slight regret, he did not dwell on it.



Furthermore, he believed that if he wasn't able to reach the Ultimate Realm, Zhang Ruochen had even less chance of reaching it. Thus, even if Zhang Ruochen broke into the Heaven Realm, he was still confident that he would be able to defeat him.

He had never failed, and he never would.

# Chapter 333 - Predecessor Golden Dragon

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Inside the stone gate, Zhang Ruochen steadied himself and performed an exercise to control his condition of the injury.

The Genuine Qi circled inside his body and formed a large circle of vital energy. It started to heal his wounds.

After a while, he took a long breath. He opened his eyes and said, "Di Yi was so impressive. No wonder he could defeat Bu Qianfian, first on the Earth Board, in only three moves."

PHHF!

The armor which had wrapped his right arm started to fade, revealing his bloody shoulder.

The Genuine Qi helped scabs form on his cracked skin, leaving horrible scar Lines.

Inside the stone gate, there was no water. It looked very dry.

The water in the Dragon Palace seemed to be blocked by a strange force from outside the stone gate.

Chang Qiqi stepped up in a hurry. "Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, you are already very excellent! You two fought just more than three moves. This means you are even more powerful than Bu Qianfan, the top warrior on the Earth Board!"

Hearing this, the others realized this fact. They were greatly shocked.

The battle between Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi was indeed awesome. They had fought over 10 moves. Although Zhang Ruochen was obviously dominated, he had indeed blocked Di Yi's attacks successfully.

If this spread out, Zhang Ruochen would be famous in the Eastern Region. He would even be published in the Eastern Region Report again.

When Zhang Ruochen entered the top 100 of the Earth Board, Chen Xier realized she had been underestimating his talent. She paid special attention to him after that, even wanting to steal him from Huang Yanchen.

A genius in the top 100 of the Earth Board was seen as a first-class warrior, even in Chen Xier's family.

But now, she realized how wrong she'd been before. The top 100 of the Earth Board was simply nothing for him.

She was even more jealous of Huang Yanchen.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Chang Qiqi. He shook his head and smiled, "You are underestimating Di Yi. In the beginning, he didn't go all-out. It wasn't until the very last strike that he exerted his full power. As you all know, it was that strike that wounded me so badly. Bu Qianfan blocked two of his moves and was only defeated after the third move, which was very impressive. I don't think I would win if I fought Bu Qianfan with my current power."

Zhang Ruochen's body was too weak, and he hadn't been practicing long enough. Fortunately, he had reached the Ultimate Realm in both the Yellow and Black Realm. This was why he could fight with top geniuses now.

There was still a gap between him and Di Yi's inborn Saintly Being. It could only be made up with the space power and the Martial Soul power.

Reaching the Ultimate Realm in both the Yellow and Black Realm meant that his Martial Arts foundation was solid

enough. With the deepening of his cultivation, his advantage would be gradually unveiled.

It was the same as building a tower. The stronger the foundation was, the higher the tower could be.

Di Yi's foundation was his inborn Saintly Being. It was like the tower's column. If the column didn't fall, the tower would never fall, and it could be built higher and higher.

Zhang Ruochen's foundation was his steadiness and perfection in every realm. It was like constructing a huge wide pedestal on the base floor.

Si Xingkong said, "Di Yi burst out the power of Saintly Being in the last strike. What's more, his martial technique was the Human King Fist, a Ghost Level Inferior Class martial technique! I'm horrified just thinking about it."

"Fortunately, he hasn't succeeded in the Human King Fist, or chances are that I couldn't have taken that strike." Said Zhang Ruochen.

He laughed and continued, "Of course, if I had succeeded in Divine Dragon's Steal, the sixth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, I wouldn't have gotten hurt."

Practicing martial techniques was not a short-term task. Zhang Ruochen had started practicing at the age of 16— 16 years later than Di Yi. He had done pretty well considering.

"Cousin-in-law, your wound is not yet healed! I found a healing Spiritual Dose, Worm Heart Grass. It can help with your recovery."

Chen Xier took out a white spiritual flower and handed to Zhang Ruochen. She stared at him with tenderness and love, as if she was ingratiating herself with him deliberately.

Zhang Ruochen didn't stand on ceremony. He looked the Worm Heart Grass over and sniffed the myrrh-like fragrance.

The Worm Heart Grass was 800 to 900 years old. Its leaves, petals and rhizome were all white as snow, as if Spiritual Fluid was flowing inside it.

“It is indeed a great healing treasure.” Zhang Ruochen glanced at Chen Xier. “Thanks.”

Chen Xier put on a shallow smile. “My dear cousin-in-law, we are family. There’s no need to thank me. Besides, I wouldn’t have even gotten this Worm Heart Grass if you hadn’t taken me here in the first place.”

Zhang Ruochen released Spiritual Fire Genuine Qi and refined the Worm Heart Grass in his hand.

Suspended on his palm, the Worm Heart Grass started to melt into a ball of white liquid.

Zhang Ruochen split it into three portions and handed two to Zi Qian and Huang Yanchen. He took the last one for himself.

The Worm Heart Grass was indeed a healing treasure. An hour later all three of them had fully recovered.

The scabs on Zhang Ruochen’s arm fell off, revealing flawless skin without any scars.

What’s more, he felt that even his Martial Soul had recovered a little bit. The dull throbbing in his head stopped.

They started to march on. They went through the long passage and entered the hinterland.

The passage became wider and wider. A beam of golden light appeared before them. They came to an underground square.

The square was as big as two football fields and surrounded by stone walls with golden carvings.

A golden fire ball suspended above. A small golden dragon appeared to be flying inside.

“It was so easy to get here! I thought we would have encountered many arrays and danger. I wonder, where was the Golden Dragon buried?”

Chang Qiqi rubbed his hands together and looked around.

Zhang Ruochen also felt it was a little odd.

Why was the Golden Dragon’s tomb so easy for them to break into?

Just then, Zhang Ruochen noticed something wrong. He looked at Chang Qiqi who was speaking a second ago, only to find that he wasn't moving and his body started to glow gold. It was as if he was turning into a golden statue.

And it wasn't just Chang Qiqi. Si Xingkong, Chen Xier, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Zi Qian and even Guoguo the rabbit had all stopped moving.

There was no sense of life coming from them.

“What happened? Senior sister apprentice Huang!”

Zhang Ruochen's expression changed. He walked up to Huang Yanchen and tried to touch her hand.

The moment he touched her hand, he was flicked away by an electric current.

“Young man, don't panic. I've merely stopped them with my King-kong Buddhist doctrine. They aren't dead!” Came an ancient voice.

The voice was hoarse yet divine, like the voice of a saint from above the Nine Heavens.

“SWOOSH!”

A small golden dragon flew down from the fire ball and morphed into an old man covered in golden light. He stood in front of Zhang Ruochen.

The elder looked very kind. His face was full of wrinkles, and his long hair dropped to the ground. In his hand was a Buddha rod. A circle of Buddha's light could be seen behind his head.

Zhang Ruochen was extremely excited, even moved to tears. Immediately, he bowed and sobbed, “Predecessor Golden Dragon.”

The elder was confused. “Young man, do I know you?”

“800 years ago, I met you once at Ming Emperor Palace. You taught me some sword techniques at the time. I still remember your words, even today.” With misted eyes, Zhang Ruochen smiled.

800 years had passed. These two souls remained, but they were not the same men they once were. Almost everyone he had once known, his friends and family, all had died.

Seeing an old predecessor, Zhang Ruochen couldn't express his excitement and sorrow.

For the Golden Dragon, it had been 800 years.

But for Zhang Ruochen, it had only been two or three years.

It was like waking up from a dream, and everything had changed but you. No one could accept that easily.

The Golden Dragon's human image was exactly the same as he was 800 years ago. Zhang Ruochen recognized him immediately. For the past two years, Zhang Ruochen had been holding back his feelings. He finally let his emotions flow freely.

The Golden Dragon was astonished. He said, "Young man, if I am right, you are no more than 20 years old, aren't you?"

Zhang Ruochen explained, "800 years ago, during the martial competition between the Buddhist Emperor and Emperor Ming, you went to Ming Emperor Palace with the Buddhist Emperor. I was only nine years old then. One day, while Princess Chi Yao and I were practicing Yin-Yang Two Forms Sword Array in the garden, you passed by and watched us for a while. Then, you walked up to us and told us we had good talent, but that Yin-Yang Two Forms Sword Array wasn't suitable for us to practice."

"Princess Chi Yao slashed at you. She was very angry and asked you if you dared to say that again."

"You simply smiled and told us that Yin-Yang Two Forms Sword Array's full power could only be given out by two true lovers. We knew nothing about love, Yin-Yang or harmony. So, it was only a waste of time for us to practice it. We could only master the moves but not the essence. You suggested we practice it in 10 years time."

Hearing Zhang Ruochen repeating the exact same words he'd said 800 years ago, the Golden Dragon was incredibly shocked. "You... You are... Emperor Ming's son..."

When a warrior reached twenty level Spiritual Power, he would be gifted with an extraordinary retentive memory.

So, even though 800 years had passed, the Golden Dragon could still recall what had happened on that day.



# Chapter 334 - Sarira

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“I was Emperor Ming’s son. But now, I don’t think I am anymore.”

Zhang Ruochen continued, “800 years ago, I was killed by Chi Yao. But I don’t know why I reincarnated. And I don’t really know what exactly happened 800 years ago.”

“As far as I know, reincarnation is a Buddhist term. As a Buddhist Saint, you must know something about samsara and reincarnation. Does samsara really exist? Does reincarnation really exist?”

The Golden Dragon pondered for a while and shook his head. “Even a Monk has to become a saint first in order to have a possibility of reincarnating. Even if he reincarnates, he cannot keep his memory from the last life. I have never heard of anything like your situation.”

Suddenly, the Golden Dragon’s gaze sharpened. “But... in the Middle Ancient Times, there was an eminent monk. He had the power of time and could open the gate of time to the past and future.”

Zhang Ruochen thought of something and blurted out, “Saint Monk Xumi?”

The Golden Dragon nodded and replied, “What if you happened to meet Saint Monk Xumi when you died 800 years ago, and he sent your soul forward in time? Do you think it’s possible?”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and answered, “Saint Monk Xumi was an eminent monk in the Middle Ancient Times.

That was over a hundred thousand years ago. I'm afraid he had already reached Parinirvana. I don't think I've ever met him."

The Golden Dragon laughed. "You might be forgetting that Saint Monk Xumi had the power of time and could go into the future. He is called the Future Buddha. Throughout history, many monks claimed that they met Saint Monk Xumi. So it is not entirely impossible for you to have met him."

Zhang Ruochen's gaze sharpened and he thought to himself, "Was it really Saint Monk Xumi who transported my soul 800 years and put it in the ninth prince of Yunwu Commandery who had just died and gave me another life? If he didn't, how come I have the Time and Space Spinel and the Mystery of Time and Space?"

Emperor Ming had given him the Time and Space Spinel. Did this mean Emperor Ming had already met Saint Monk Xumi and known he would have this kalpa?

But... that didn't make sense.

There were countless dead people in Kunlun's Field, why would Saint Monk Xumi have picked him?

Even if he had the power of time, he couldn't interfere with other people's lives at random.

The Golden Dragon said, "Of course, this is only a very small possibility. Don't pay too much attention to it. Fact is stranger than fiction. There might be some other reasons this happened. Take things as they come. Don't let it disturb your peace."

Zhang Ruochen nodded and replied, "It makes sense."

Golden Dragon smiled and said, "Just now, when you were fighting, I was a little confused when you performed the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, I thought you must be a disciple from the Thousand Buddhas Sect. It turns out to be an old friend. How wonderful the world is!"

Zhang Ruochen said, "Did you let me in on purpose because you thought I was a disciple from the Thousand Buddhas Sect?"

The Golden Dragon nodded and answered, "Of course! Otherwise how could you get here safe and sound? I designed many tricks in the Dragon Tomb. Without my permission, even a Saint can't get in, never mind you guys."

Zhang Ruochen was suddenly enlightened. The reason they could get in so easily was because the Golden Dragon had let them in.

Di Yi even wanted to steal the Dragon Sarira. The Golden Dragon could easily kill him.

The Golden Dragon sighed, "My dragon body died long ago, leaving only a dragon soul. It has been 800 years. My mind tries to stay conscious, but it is growing weaker and weaker. I think it will disappear entirely and become a dead spirit soon."

"So I must disperse my Divine Soul before I lose my mind completely, in case I leave a dead spirit and harm the world."

A Saint's Divine Soul couldn't stay in this world forever.

After a certain amount of time, the Divine Soul would lose its mind and turn into a dead spirit.

The Half-Saint's Divine Soul Zhang Ruochen met in the Chikong Secret Mansion had lost its mind and become a dead spirit. It had possessed Lu Han and turned her into a vampire.

Zhang Ruochen's heart did a complete somersault. He asked, "Are you going to disperse your Divine Soul?"

The Golden Dragon laughed. "My Divine Soul has been lingering in Kunlun's Field for 800 years. Actually, I am only waiting for the right person to whom I can leave the Buddhist Emperor's Sarira. At last, you are here. I think you are just the right person."

The Golden Dragon stretched out his arms and fingers.

The golden fire ball suspended in the air flew down onto the Golden Dragon's palm.

There was a smooth oval peanut-sized golden stone inside, giving off a dazzling light.

"This is the Buddhist Emperor's Sarira..."

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel the great power of the Sarira. Under its power, the surrounding people, stone and vessels all flew up into the air.

The Golden Dragon said, “I set four seals in this Sarira. Only when you unseal all of them can you refine this Sarira and inherit what was left by the Buddhist Emperor and me.”

“From now on, whenever you unseal one seal, it will give out a certain amount of power. And you will temporarily obtain the Sarira’s power.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Does this mean if I can unseal the first seal, I will obtain great power beyond my realm for a short time?”

Golden Dragon smiled and said, “Based on your current cultivation, you can’t unseal the first seal. Only when you reach the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm can you do so.”

“With the first seal, you can obtain the power of a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm for a short time. With the help of the second seal, you can obtain the power of a Half-Saint. And with the help of the third seal, you can obtain the power of a Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen was very excited. Even though he couldn’t refine the Sarira now, it would give him three chances to get great power. It could potentially save him three times.

In other words, the three seals gave him three lives.

The Golden Dragon suddenly became serious. “Zhang Ruochen, do you know why I set three seals in the Sarira?”

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Sorry, I don’t know.”

The Golden Dragon answered slowly, “First, based on your current cultivation, you can’t refine the Sarira at all.”

“Second, once you get this Sarira, you will face endless danger. Many people will try to kill you and steal it. So the three seals give you three chances to save your life. But, you will face more than three danger. You must be very careful each time you unseal a seal.”

“Third, the Sarira can only increase your power for two hours. After that, your cultivation will return. What’s more, it might hurt your principal Qi greatly. So try not to rely on the Sarira’s power.”

Zhang Ruochen replied, “I understand.”

Unsealing the first seal called for the cultivation of the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. It needed much more when it came to the second seal.

So, actually, Zhang Ruochen could unseal at most one seal in a short time.

Golden Dragon stared at Zhang Ruochen deeply. Curiously he asked, “Your Qi Sea is emitting divine light. Have you ever drawn the Chord of Gods?”

Zhang Ruochen answered frankly, “Yes. I reached the Ultimate Realm in both the Yellow Realm and the Black Realm. I have drawn the Chord of Gods twice. Thus, I obtained the Divine Light Qi Sea.”

“How impressive!” The Golden Dragon exclaimed. “The Buddhist Emperor only reached the Ultimate Realm in the Heaven Realm and drew the Chord of Gods just once. As far as I know, the Nine Emperors in the past and Empress Chi Yao now have all reached the Ultimate Realm only once.”

“Alright! Since that’s the case, I will help you to reach the Ultimate Realm in the Earth Realm and draw the Chord of Gods a third time!”

The Golden Dragon suddenly struck the Buddha rod hard against the ground, causing a wave of golden ripples. The ripples of light flowed in every direction.

A crack appeared on the ground and started to grow wider on both sides.

The crack grew to more than 30 meters wide.

Millions of light beams shot up from the bottom of the crack. Each beam was like a sharp knife that could pierce through a person’s body.

A strong and horrible energy came up from the underground. Fortunately, Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power was strong enough, or he would have been overwhelmed by the energy.

Zhang Ruochen looked down the crack. He could vaguely see a golden dragon. It was even longer than a mountain ridge.

The Golden Dragon stretched his arm, and a huge golden Dragon Pearl flew out from the dragon's body.

The golden Dragon Pearl grew smaller and smaller. By the time it reached the Golden Dragon's hand, it was only as big as a pigeon egg.

“Get ready, Zhang Ruochen!”

He pushed towards Zhang Ruochen's chest and stuck the Dragon Pearl into his heart.

“SWOOSH!”

Bright radiance went into his body.

All of a sudden, Zhang Ruochen felt that his heart was on fire and his blood was boiling.

His body was enveloped completely by the golden light. Even his hair and bones turned into gold.

The Golden Dragon's voice echoed in Zhang Ruochen's ears, “Quickly! Use your exercises and Genuine Qi to refine the Dragon Pearl.”

Zhang Ruochen hunkered on the ground and transferred all of his Genuine Qi to his heart. The Genuine Qi enveloped the Dragon Pearl and started to refine it.

The Golden Dragon continued, “This Dragon Pearl is my original one. 99% of the power was absorbed by the Sarira so there is only a little power left. Originally, I intended to take it with me to the underground after my death. But since I met you at the last moment, I will give it to you and help you to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm.”

# Chapter 335 - The Heaven Realm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“It’s difficult for other warriors to reach the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm even if they get the Dragon Pearl. However, you reached the Ultimate Realm of both the Yellow Realm and the Black Realm, so it will be easier for you.”

The Golden Dragon’s voice echoed constantly in Zhang Ruochen’s ears.

The 30-meter long hole in the ground slowly vanished with a squeak.

The giant skeleton of the Golden Dragon sank into the earth. It was about to disappear from the world.

The Golden Dragon’s body began to dissipate into golden light spots from its feet, legs, waist and abdomen.

The Golden Dragon didn’t feel sad about disappearing. Rather it said with an everlasting smile, “There are only seven drops of dragon blood, they’ve been given to your friends. As the Dragon’s Blood integrates with their blood, they will wake up. Also, their physical quality will be promoted when they completely absorb the blood!”

As he refined the Dragon Pearl, Zhang Ruochen felt desolation and sorrow for no apparent reason. A glittering and translucent tear fell from his eye.

“Zhang Ruochen, you don’t need to feel sad. All disappearances in the world are just new beginnings.”

After saying these words, the Divine Soul of the Golden Dragon completely dissolved into small fragments of light.

The whole world seemed silent.

Zhang Ruochen couldn't move. He couldn't even open his eyes. The Dragon Pearl weighted down his heart; its power could only be defended against with constant refinement.

Even though he was eager to exclaim and invoke the Golden Dragon not to leave, he could do nothing.

He had just met an Elder from eight hundred years ago. And in a heartbeat, he had to bid farewell to him.

The Golden Dragon had said that 99 percent of the power in the Dragon Pearl had been absorbed by the Sarira, but the remaining power was still formidable.

Zhang Ruochen's power was like a drop of water, whereas the power of the Dragon Pearl was a vast ocean.

The Golden Dragon had refined the Sarira and become as strong as the Buddhist Emperor. It was much more powerful than a normal Saint.

Just a drop of its blood was a treasure that Half-Saints and Saints would scramble for, let alone the Dragon Pearl.

The golden Dragon Pearl was suspending in Zhang Ruochen's heart. Every flow of blood washed against the Dragon Pearl, the power of which was carried to every cell.

And every operation of his Genuine Qi brought the power of the Dragon Pearl into every Meridian expanding his cultivation.

An hour later.

Zhang Ruochen's martial cultivation was at the peak of the Completion of the Earth Realm and all the Genuine Qi in his Qi Sea had attained perfect completeness.

Many god marks came out of his Qi Sea with shining light. A magnificent pattern appeared.

After another three days of refining and assimilating Zhang Ruochen's physical quality continued to strengthen. His blood



was like golden mercury, his flesh seemed to cast a golden glow and a dragon design seemed to appear on his skin.

Intensified by the Dragon Pearl, Zhang Ruochen's physical quality was high enough to contend with a warrior at the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

However, he still did not step into the Ultimate Realm. It seemed that there was a thin gap.

It was a very thin line, but perhaps one that he might never cross.

Throughout time, many people had been unable to reach the Ultimate Realm because of this obstructive gap.

"I must attain the Ultimate Realm, the most powerful realm in the Earth Realm."

Gritting his teeth, he made great effort to suppress his realm and continued to refine the Dragon Pearl, taking in the Divine Dragon Strength.

Another three days, with the help of the Divine Dragon Strength, Zhang Ruochen's injured Martial Soul was healed and enhanced.

His Martial Soul had turned golden and its power doubled after absorbing the Divine Dragon Strength. It rushed out of his body and suspended overhead as a golden soul.

His body began to float too, hanging in the air with a crackling sound.

Suddenly, there was a loud bang.

A great vigor burst from Zhang Rouchen. It swept across the entire underground square.

The power seemed to break a border between heaven and earth. It made all of the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi rush to Zhang Ruochen and condensed a light beam above his head.

The light column rose to the sky.

It seemed to rouse the ancient gods and illusory images were formed. A distant and divine voice could be heard.

Chord of Gods in the Ultimate Realm.

SWOOSH!

The illusory images of gods turned into fragments of light. They gathered at the light beam and flew into Zhang Rouchen's Qi Sea, leaving marks of gods on the wall of his Qi Sea.

With three Chords of Gods, the illusory images of gods overlapped. The marks went deeper and deeper as if gods were appearing in his Qi Sea.

Now, whenever Zhang Ruo Chen led his Genuine Qi to his Qi Sea, the power of Gods Mark would enhance it into the purest quality.

Purer Genuine Qi meant stronger martial technique power would be exerted.

The third Chord of Gods advanced Zhang Ruo Chen's Martial Soul and Spiritual Power.

Especially his Spiritual Power, it had reached level 39. One level higher could help him convert his Spiritual Power into his own power and attack enemies.

If he actually reached that stage, his power would enter into a new level.

“Now that I have reached the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm, I should continue to break through to the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.”

Among the 36 Meridians Zhang Ruo Chen had opened, there was one strange meridian, the Vessel of Spiritual Blood.

The Vessel of Spiritual Blood was the Meridian that linked to his blood.

This Meridian, same as the Vessel of Spirit, was invisible. He could only faintly feel it.

Zhang Ruo Chen could connect the Vessel of Spiritual Blood with the Dragon Pearl in his heart. And with the power of the Dragon Pearl, he would easily break through to the Heaven Realm.

Nearly four hours later, Zhang Ruochen successfully felt the Vessel of Spiritual Blood.

He cautiously controlled it to twine the Dragon Pearl and enveloped it.

After a short time, the Vessel of Spiritual Blood and the Dragon Pearl fused together.

Zhang Ruochen did exercises and began to assimilate the Divine Dragon Strength. His Genuine Qi became thicker.

After assimilating the Dragon Pearl for five days, the Genuine Qi in his Qi Sea began to shrink. It condensed into a golden drop of Vital Essence.

The gaseous Genuine Qi turned into liquid.

Then, a second drop, a third drop...

Zhang Ruochen transformed all his Genuine Qi into 12 drops of Vital Essence.

Once the Genuine Qi had completely turned into Vital Essence, it meant that Zhang Ruochen had stepped into the Heaven Realm.

The 12 drops of Vital Essence suspended in his Qi Sea like twelve bright liquid stars.

“Most warriors who reach the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm only have one or two drops of Vital Essence. But I gained 12 drops of Vital Essence at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen felt so happy. In his last lifetime, he had only gained eight drops of Vital Essence.

The more Vital Essence, the wider a warrior's Qi Sea.

When a warrior entered the Heaven Realm, his Qi Sea would be settled. There was no further expansion.

Zhang Ruocheng's entire Qi Sea was vacant, except for the the 12 drops of Vital Essence that were slowly assimilating Divine Dragon Strength from his Meridians. They were strengthening, and the thirteenth drop was about to be condensed.

Zhang Ruochen's Genuine Qi increased tenfold after his breakthrough.

The Genuine Qi contained within each of the drops of Vital Essence was equal to the total amount of Genuine Qi he had in the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm.

“The process of breaking through the Ultimate Realm and reaching the Heaven Realm only needed a bit of power from the Dragon Pearl. Predecessor Golden Dragon's cultivation is so unfathomable. Just one percent of the pearl's power is much stronger than a Half-Saint. With the help of Dragon Pearl, my practice will be much faster than others even before becoming a Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen slowly raised his arm to invoke a wisp of his Genuine Qi from the Vital Essence. He squeezed four fingers on his left hand and pointed out his thumb.

“Sun Meridian Ripple!”

A thick Sword Wave flew out from his fingertip with a hot Qi billow. Like a roaring flame, it attacked a distant stone wall.

BOOM!

Inscriptions of Array appeared on the wall to ward off the Sword Wave.

Nevertheless, the whole square still trembled violently.

If there were no array, the place would have collapsed.

His Sun Meridian Ripple had only reached the Small Success Realm.

His breakthrough made the Sword Wave more than 30 times stronger.

A different realm and the same martial technique caused a different power.

If Zhang Ruochen met the Red Wish Emissary again, one Sword Wave in the Small Success Realm would defeat her.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Huang Yanchen, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi and Duanmu Xingling. They still looked like golden statues with no signs of revival.

“This is a great opportunity to practice the five Yin Meridian Sword Waves in my right hand.”

The Dragon Tomb, an extremely cold place, was the best place to practice Yin Meridian Sword Waves.

What’s more, Zhang Ruochen had reached the Heaven Realm. His practicing speed was 10 times faster than before. He would soon practice the five Sword Waves into the succeed Realm.

Among the five Sword Waves, the Shadow Meridian Ripple, the Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave, the Sword Ripple of Center Spiritual Channels and the Abyss Meridian Ripple had all entered into the Small Success. Only the Convergence Meridian Ripple remained at the Beginner level.

He started with the Convergence Meridian Ripple.

# Chapter 336 - Great Harvest

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen took in a cold deep breath. It converged to the Meridians in his fingers.

He spent roughly half a day practicing the Convergence Meridian Ripple into the realm of Small Success. His right pinkie could emit sword Qi like an icy sword with a casual attack.

Another seven days brought the succeed of Zhang Ruochen's Shadow Meridian Ripple on his right thumb.

If he hadn't broken through the Heaven Realm, it would have taken two months for him to practice it into the succeed realm. In addition if he hadn't been in the Dragon Tomb where cold breath abounded, it would take three months to have the same effect. The intense cold helped a great deal.

"Let me try the power of the Sword Wave in the succeed Realm."

Zhang Ruochen stood up and raised his right hand to form mudras.

"Shadow Meridian Ripple!"

Vital Essence from his Qi Sea turned into a wisp of Genuine Qi and flowed to his right thumb, condensing into a cold Sword Wave.

WHEW!

All of the Spiritual Qi in the square converged to Zhang Ruochen's fingertip and turned into a Sword Wave to attack the stone wall.

A strike of the powerful sword Qi caused another blast on the stone wall.

The Inscription of Array on the wall were activated again. They embodied a light mesh screen, covering the whole underground space.

Even so, the hundred-meter long stone wall was completely covered with heavy frost.

His Sword Wave in the succeed Realm had gained much more power.

Zhang Ruochen continued to practice for another month. The other four Sword Waves in his Yin Meridians all reached the realm of succeed.

Over a month had passed. Si Xingkong woke up first.

“Eh? How could I suddenly fall asleep?”

Si Xingkong rubbed his temple and made some moves. Golden light emitted from his pores and a deep dragon’s roar rang out.

“What happened...”

After perceiving the changes in his body, he was stunned. He felt incredible.

He was mad with joy. “How has my martial cultivation entered into the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm? How could it be possible? And a stream of golden blood is running in my... the legendary Dragon’s Blood...”

Si Xingkong could not stay calm. He looked at Zhang Ruochen glowingly and asked, “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, what on earth happened here?”

Only Zhang Ruochen was awake. The others were still motionless as if they were stones.

Quite calm, Zhang Ruochen gently shook his head. “I don’t know what happened. I suddenly fainted after coming here. And when I woke up I had reached the Heaven Realm. There is golden blood flowing in my blood, just like you.”

The Sarira and the Dragon Pearl were great treasures. Any carelessness could bring catastrophes.

So, he intended to hide it and not let anyone know.

It was a good idea, not only for him, but also for Si Xingkong.

The less they knew the safer they were.

“How could this happen... Was it Predecessor Golden Dragon...”

Si Xingkong immediately knelt on the ground with reverent eyes. He worshipped the altar on the square three times.

Whatever the reason was, he had gotten the Dragon's Blood. He had to thank the Predecessor Golden Dragon.

Shortly afterwards, Duanmu Xingling, Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier woke up. They were all astonished at their changes. Their martial cultivations had improved greatly.

Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier both reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. Duanmu Xingling also stepped into the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Once a warrior reached the Heaven Realm, his body, bones and Meridians were all shaped. And his practicing speed would slow down, even with the help of panacea.

It was hard to go up even a small realm.

But they had just broken through the Heaven Realm, how could it be possible that they had all entered into the Mid Stage?

Such a speed was too fast.

Zi Qian, Chang Qiqi and Guoguo gradually woke up too.

“Dragon's Blood... is flowing in my... my body. Did my aptitude catch the Golden Dragon's eye so that he infused his Dragon's Blood into my body?”

Chang Qiqi was so amazed that he rushed out with his fists clenched and punched the stone wall.

**BOOM!**

Light streaks surged from the wall, forcing him back.



He fell to the ground and landed on his bottom.

As if feeling no pain, Chang Qiqi sat on the ground. He looked at his fists and laughed. "I am a Three-realm Fighting Genius now! I am one of the top talents. Nobody can look down on me!"

In the past three years, there had only been 20 Three-realm Fighting Geniuses among all of the Young Geniuses from all forces.

Warriors with Three-realm were all top-notch.

So Chang Qiqi was mad with joy that he was one of them.

His life goal was to establish a top-class family in Omen Ridge. And now, he was one step closer to reaching it.

Everyone rolled their eyes at him.

A Three-realm Fighting Genius? What is he so excited about?

Chen Xier chuckled and said, "With my physique, I have become a Four-realm Fighting Genius. I can't wait to go back to Devil Martial City and break through the Jiuju Tower!"

Huang Yanchen said indifferently, "I've also become a Four-realm Fighting Genius. It won't be long before I have Four-and-a-half-realm."

Zi Qian sighed and shook his head. "I almost became a Four-realm Fighting Genius. But, at least I've reached Three-and-a-half-realm."

Chang Qiqi looked at Si Xingkong with a sad face, as if he had suffered a lot.

Crossing his arms over his chest, Si Xingkong said with a laugh, "I'm supposed to get Four-and-half-realm. If I fight with Zhang Tiangui again, I will win."

Chang Qiqi sighed again, and he looked at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen squinted and said, "If we are at the same level, I should be able to defeat Di Yi."

Hearing these words, the joy left everyone's face.

The journey to the Dragon Palace had given them a great harvest. They had all improved. However, compared with Zhang Rouchen's incredible power, their achievements seemed insignificant.

The gap was too wide!

"Don't be discouraged," Zhang Rouchen said. "It's more difficult for a stronger physical quality to improve. Given my physical quality now, I can't improve much even when the Dragon's Blood is completely refined. But you are different, if you can refine your Dragon's Blood, each of you can advance to a new level, even more."

Chang Qiqi stood up with a somersault. He rushed to Zhang Rouchen and grasped his shoulder, asking with agitation, "Didn't you say that I could reach Four-and-a-half-realm?"

Zhang Rouchen answered, "The Dragon's Blood has only mingled with our blood, so its real power hasn't been in full force. You should know that the Golden Dragon is the strongest dragon in the whole Kunlun's Field. Just one drop of its blood can help us improve. If the news was reported, other warriors would laugh at us and think we are craps."

Si Xingkong nodded. "A drop of blood of Predecessor Golden Dragon is much more valuable than other holy medicine. We haven't fully absorbed the power of the blood. I think I can reach at least Five-and-a-half-realm, maybe even Six."

Huang Yanchen said, "We are very fortunate. I think, I can be a Six-realm Fighting Genius."

Huang Yanchen had the same amount of talent as Si Xingkong. If she practiced hard in the Completion of the Earth Realm for two or three years, she would have the chance to step into Three-and-a-half-realm.

Although she had broken through the Heaven Realm, she still had a good foundation.

The full refinement of the Dragon's Blood could help her to improve to Five-and-a-half-realm. She had the opportunity to gain Six-realm skills if she took medicines and practiced.

Si Xingkong just had a better chance.

Chang Qiqi said with excitement, “Does this mean I also have a chance to become a Five-realm Fighting Genius?”

Chen Xier said, “Your potential is more important than the refinement of the Dragon’s Blood. Better potential means greater promotion. You have low potential, so reaching Four-and-a-half-realm is your limitation.”

“Four-and-a-half-realm is nice.”

It seemed that Chang Qiqi hadn’t understood Chen Xier’s taunt. He said with enjoyment, “I heard that a Four-realm Fighting Genius can enter into the East Region Saint City to take the Saint Academy exam. All warriors from the Saint Academy are great masters. I want to become a master.”

“You can.” Si Xingkong patted his shoulder with an encouraging look.

Zhang Ruochen looked at Guoguo with doubt.

Guoguo’s fur had turned golden, and a golden horn had sprouted in the center of its head.

In addition, the size of its body had doubled. When it stood up, it was just a head shorter than Chang Qiqi.

A fat man-sized rabbit!

Chang Qiqi glanced at it and screamed, “Guoguo, you got a drop of Dragon’s Blood?”

Guoguo sat on the ground blankly, then it nodded.

Chang Qiqi pulled its ears. “Give me that blood, you’re just a rabbit, what do you want it for? Give it to me, I could reach Five-realm if I got your Dragon’s Blood.”

He didn’t see the anger in Guoguo’s eyes.

Suddenly, Guoguo kicked its heel to stand up and howled in a strange tone, “Kick you’re a\$\$!”

“BANG!”

A golden rabbit’s foot slapped Chang Qiqi in the chest and sent him flying. Chang Qiqi rotated 360 degrees in the air and finally collided with a stone wall 20 meters away.

His body paused for a moment like a piece of paper, and then crept down.

# Chapter 337 - Battle Again

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Argh!”

It seemed that he had been gravely injured by Guoguo. Chang Qiqi spat out blood with a pale face. He got up with difficulty and with a hand on his chest. He pointed at the rabbit and said, “Guoguo, you... you...”

Actually, he wasn't injured that badly. After all, he was a master at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, a martial arts legend in the hearts of ordinary warriors. How could he be wounded so easily?

The point was that he was so angry that he vomited blood.

Was anything more depressing or embarrassing than being hit by his own pet in public?

“Don't look at me. The Dragon's Blood has mixed into my blood, so it belongs to me. I will dig out your eyes if you look at me like that again.”

Guoguo spoke in a threatening tone with its two big rabbit teeth showing. It extended its paw and pointed at Chang Qiqi.

After taking the Dragon's Blood, Guoguo had become enlightened and could speak the language of humans.

More than that, its cultivation had also increased substantially. Although it hadn't reached adulthood, it was already pretty strong.

Everyone else thought it was funny and burst into laughter.

Chang Qiqi was the owner, but now, he was more like the follower. Provoking the rabbit would incite a beating.

Was there anyone more tragic than him?

Chen Xier calmed down and said, “The Dragon’s Blood indicates that the Golden Dragon was indeed buried here. Its tomb is here, let’s find it. Maybe we can find the legendary Dragon Sarira.”

Dragon Sarira was the inheritance of the Buddhist Emperor and Golden Dragon. It wasn’t just them, even a Saint would be greedy for it.

All the rest nodded and began to search.

After a persistent search, it was evident that there was nothing to be found.

Si Xingkong didn’t lose heart. On the contrary, he was fairly cheerful. He said with a smile, “Dragon Sarira is a legend, even Di Yi isn’t sure of its existence. It’s great for us to get a drop of Dragon’s Blood, we shouldn’t expect more.”

“800 years have passed. Even if the Dragon Sarira did exist, it might have been taken by former visitors. Why would it wait for us?” Duanmu Xingling also shook her head.

Huang Yanchen touched her pointed chin and said, “Forget it! I think it’s time to leave. I plan to go back to the School of the Martial Market and seclude myself for refining the Dragon’s Blood.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled faintly without saying anything. He believed that some people knew he had the Dragon Sarira. They just didn’t say anything.

They crossed the gallery and slowly walked out of the Dragon Tomb.

Zhang Ruochen used the dragon horn to open the stone gate. They filed out and entered the underwater hill once more.

All the Spiritual Doses on the hill had been picked. Only bare stone and soil remained.

“Young master, they’re coming out!”

“It’s really Zhang Ruochen.”

Below the hill a mass of Black Market warriors had gathered. There were almost 200 people there.

They stood in a strange formation. With murderous feeling, each of them was holding a jade stone, from which the light formed a giant array.

200 light columns shot skywards and intersected into bright light spots, as if stars were floating in the water. They blocked off the surrounding space.

“They’ve finally come out!”

Di Yi, who sat cross-legged, practicing in the water, suddenly opened his eyes with a cold and evil look.

He slowly stood up. Affected by his aura, a giant sacred shadow with boundless radiance appeared behind him. It subdued the light of the Thousand Knives and Star Array.

As a Saint controlling the world, he stood straight. His body overlapped the sacred shadow.

SHING!

Zi Yinyang, who had stood behind Di Yi, dashed out and said coldly, “Zhang Ruochen, let my sister go.”

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Zi Qian, then he looked at Zi Yinyang and replied, “Of course, I can let her go. But, I have a condition. You must set free the disciples from the School of the Martial Market that you have captured.”

Zhang Ruochen had unleashed his Martial Soul to investigate the situation the moment he walked out. He found a mass of internal students from the School of the Martial Market had been caught and locked in a dragon hall not far from here.

With a smile, Di Yi stared at Zhang Ruochen. “Interesting, you’ve also reached the Heaven Realm and your Martial Soul has formed. Yan Siming, bring the 53 internal students up here. I want to see how Zhang Ruochen escapes today.”

Di Yi was clear that Zhang Ruochen’s power was not weaker than his. If they fought for real, maybe Zhang Ruochen would not be his opponent.

But it was so easy for Zhang Ruochen to escape.

Thus, he had ordered warriors to arrange the array, which would cut off Zhang Ruochen's route of retreat. Meanwhile, he'd captured a group of internal students from the School of the Martial Market. They would hold Zhang Ruochen, so that he couldn't escape even if he wanted to.

Under such circumstances, the only way out was to fight with him.

No doubt, he would kill Zhang Ruochen, and remove this enemy.

Yan Siming was one of the seven masters of the Black Market, and he had broken through to the Heaven Realm. Wearing an extraordinary ancient black armour with snake patterns, the man was almost three meters tall. He had a stocky and imposing build.

Led by him, warriors of the black market had taken the students to a platform below the underwater hill.

All the students had entered into the Dragon Palace later to find the Dragon Sarira.

Despite being cautious, some of them had still been caught and became prisoners of Di Yi.

“Kneel down, kneel in a row.”

Holding a bright nine-ring two-meter-long war knife, Yan Siming walked behind the students with a cold smile, showing his white teeth.

If one refused to kneel, his hamstrings would be cut off by Yan Siming.

Among the students, a pretty female student whose wrists and feet were locked in golden chains with inscriptions refused to kneel down,. Yan Siming chopped her knees and broke her legs.

“AAAGGHH...”

She was screaming. Blood gushed from her legs, and she fell to the ground.



She gazed at Si Xingkong and implored with tears, “Eldest brother, rescue me...”

Si Xingkong had once been the top warrior among the young generation in Omen Ridge, he had a great reputation. The students all looked up to him. They hoped Si Xingkong could sweep away the Evil Warriors of the Black Market and rescue them.

Si Xingkong knew the female student. Her name was Di Rou, and he had a good relationship with her.

Seeing her legs cut off, Si Xingkong looked serious. He was ready to rush down the hill and save them.

“Eldest Brother, don’t be impulsive,” Chen Xier warned. “They have a Thousand Knives and Stars Array. If it is put to action, you can’t defeat it on your own.”

A cunning look rose on her face. She stood on her tiptoes and appeared behind Zi Qian with one hand choking her neck and the other catching her Meridians.

Zi Qian had not expected that Chen Xier would attack her. She was suppressed by Chen Xier before she could react.

She could feel the pain in her neck. Chen Xier’s nail stabbed into her skin and blood flowed out along her fingers and blended into the water, turning into streaks of blood.

The two girls already hated each other. Zi Qian didn’t doubt that if she dared to move, Chen Xier would kill her without hesitation.

Under such circumstances, even Zhang Ruochen couldn’t save her.

Chen Xier laughed and said, “Zi Yinyang, if you want your sister to live, you’d better let go of those students. Otherwise, you’ll have to soon prepare for her death.”

“Chen Xier, how bold you are! If you dare to hurt her, I swear I will kill you.” Zi Yinyang said coldly.

Di Yi said, “Zi Yinyang, one who intends to achieve great things does not care about trifles. Don’t be threatened by a

woman. Even if your sister dies, the Hades Department will compensate your loss with other things.”

Hearing this, Zi Yinyang’s countenance changed. “But young master...”

Di Yi glared at him. “What is more important? Your sister or the Dragon Sarira? You know the answer, don’t you?”

Seeing Di Yi’s eyes, a chill came over Zi Yinyang. His whole body grew cold.

The meaning behind Di Yi’s words was clear enough. He would get the Dragon Sarira regardless of the cost. Never mind Zi Qian, the whole Hades Department could be sacrificed.

If Zi Yinyang was threatened by Chen Xier, Di Yi would kill him straight away.

Zi Yinyang was just an ant to Di Yi. He could kill him with just the lift of a finger.

Di Yi beckoned him to retreat.

Zi Yinyang seemed cold but he cherished family. Although he treated Zi Qian badly, he couldn’t turn a blind eye to her hopeless situation.

Zi Yinyang knelt down before Di Yi with his teeth clenched, “Young Master, please save my sister. If you can save her, my life will belong to you. Even if now you order me to die, I will do it without a frown.”

Di Yi had a strong desire to control everything. He hated to be thwarted.

Seeing Zi Yinyang’s disobedience, naturally he was extremely angry. He said each word very clearly, “Your life is already mine. It doesn’t belong to you at all.”

Zi Yinyang knew he was angry, but he had to entreat him, “Young Master, please save my sister. I will do anything for you.”

“What are you?”

Di Yi became even more furious. He pressed a palm on Zi Yinyang's head with a sneer.

“BANG!”

Zi Yinyang's head disintegrated into a ball of blood fog.

A headless body knelt on the ground before him.

In Di Yi's opinion, a disobedient follower did not deserve to live. Let alone a lowly killer.

# Chapter 338 - The Omen Eyes

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zi Yinyang's skull split open. His handsome and arrogant face was torn up by a powerful strength. It was now a bloody mess. It turned into powdered blood in the end.

Witnessing this dreadful sight, Zi Qian's Qi Sea had a violent shock. The Genuine Qi circled backward through her body and she almost fainted.

“Brother!”

Letting out a loud cry, she was in inconsolable sorrow. Tears welled up in her eyes as she charged at Di Yi.

Chen Xier was also a bit surprised. After all, Zi Yinyang was very famous among the younger generation in Omen Ridge. He was super talented. This sudden execution had been unexpected.

She wasn't paying attention and Zi Qian escaped.

Frowning, Zhang Ruochen quickly grabbed her shoulder. He held her back in case she acted on impulse. She could lose her life.

“Zhang Ruochen, let me go. I want to avenge my brother.”

Her eyes were red, she unceasingly recalled her older brother's love for her when she was little.

Although he wasn't so tender as past any more after both of them had been trained to be killers, she could still feel his care and love for her.

She almost broke down for her brother's sacrifice for her. How would she be afraid of the powerful Di Yi or warriors of the Black Market anymore? The only thing she wanted to do is to fight Di Yi to the bitter end.

“The Genuine Qi in your body is flowing backward. Regulate your movement to control it right now. Otherwise, you will become a dead man before you even reach Di Yi.”

Zhang Ruochen infused a stroke of Genuine Qi into the Meridians in the center of her back, helping her to control the Genuine Qi in her body.

Gradually, she gained control of her Genuine Qi. With a cold gaze in her eyes, she said, “Zhang Ruochen, let me go. I want to kill Di Yi.”

“You are no match for him. Don't act impulsively.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head resignedly, said, “Leave it to me. I can help you.”

Zi Qian hesitated slightly and raised her head. She stared deeply at Zhang Ruochen. Zhang Ruochen was very calm, as if he was talking about something that happened every day.

Standing not far from them, Huang Yanchen was furious. She stared at Zhang Ruochen angrily. She hated that Zhang Ruochen was helping another woman like this.

At the bottom of the hill, Di Yi withdrew his palms. He glanced coldly at Zi Yinyang's dead body. “A killer dares to violate my will. Does he really think he is somebody?”

The Black Market warriors watched in silence, as silent and numb as a cicada in cold weather. They showed more awe toward Di Yi.

They could not help lowering their heads. They dared not look him in the eye for fear of accidentally offending him and dying a violent death.

Di Yi had killed the son of the Hades Department owner, the top genius of Omen Ridge, like it was nothing. They were worthless to him.

Subsequently, Di Yi looked at them with a cold expression in his eyes. “See, this is how a disobedient person ends up. You should never make the same mistake!”

Yan Siming was also shocked. This young master had actually killed Zi Yinyang, without any warning. He was really not easy to deal with.

But he was very smart and instantly knelt down on the ground, bowing respectfully to Di Yi, saying, “Zi Yinyang went against his superior. He deserved more than death. Young master, you are brilliant.”

Other Black Market warriors knelt down on the ground like they were kowtowing to the gods. They dared not think of rebelling against him.

Di Yi nodded in satisfaction, lifting up his hand. “You may all rise! As long as you are loyal to the Black Market and me, you will certainly reap the benefits.”

The warriors suddenly felt released. They agreed secretly that they had indeed received several benefits upon entering the Dragon Palace. Some of them had found Spiritual Doses in the Dragon Palace and reached the Heaven Realm, becoming big shots among the Martial Arts.

They were grateful to Di Yi.

It had to be said that Di Yi did have the potential to be a person of high social status. He had ruthless means and ways of winning over people’s support, making them respect and fear him.

Yan Siming took a look at the hill and sneered. “It is surprising that Zhang Ruochen and the female assassin from the Hades Department have such a close relationship. It seems that the Hades Department is not entirely loyal to the Black Market. Zi Yinyang indeed deserved to die. Young master, you made a good decision in killing him.”

Yan Siming was a smart person and knew how to judge the situation. Obviously, the best way of showing loyalty to Di Yi was to suppress the Hades Department, making warriors of the

Black Market think that Zi Yinyang deserved to die and the Hades Department should be punished.

“Yan Siming, don’t make an unfounded attack on us. The Hades Department isn’t unfaithful to the Black Market,” Zi Qian said coldly.

Yan Siming sneered. “You and Zhang Ruochen are very close. Do you still dare to say that you are loyal to the young master and the Black Market? If you are really faithful to the Black Market, you should kill Zhang Ruochen immediately. Let our young master see your loyalty.”

Zi Qian gnashed her teeth in anger. “We are loyal to the Black Market, not Di Yi. Di Yi is my enemy. I can’t live under the same sky as him. He killed my brother.”

Di Yi narrowed his eyes. “Good point. The Overseer of Hell has a good daughter. Unfortunately, in Omen Ridge, various forces of the black market listen to me. The warriors’ lives are all under my control. Anyone who dares to disobey me is opposing the Black Market and deserves to die.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “Di Yi, you think too highly of yourself. If you don’t control your temper, I’m afraid that you will die a violent death before you can develop fully. Others will take your place as the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall.”

“Oh! Is that so?”

Di Yi wore a metal mask with very ferocious patterns. With a smile he said, “It is indeed unknown how long I can live. But I do know that you certainly won’t live through the night.”

“Really?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Di Yi changed the subject. “Of course, if you hand over the Dragon Sarira and are loyal to me, be my shadow, I can consider letting you live.”

Born as a Saintly Being, he had enjoyed early success and was unbeatable among the same generation. Di Yi was a dominating figure. Anyone who dared to be his enemy would only end up dead.

Chang Qiqi said, “We didn’t find the Dragon Sarira. You can drop the idea!”

“Whether you found it or not, it’s not up to your words.”

Di Yi cast a cold glance at Chang Qiqi, shooting out two sharp lights. They pierced into his eyes like two sharp needles.

Chang Qiqi only felt everything go black and a stabbing pain in his head like it was going to explode. He immediately shut his eyes and took two steps back.

Luckily, he had Dragon’s Blood in his body. Otherwise, the lights would have blinded him and even turned him into an invalid.

“What a terrible gaze. My eyes hurt badly.”

Chang Qiqi instantly regulated the Dragon’s Blood in his body to his eyes, using the dragon’s strength to offset the power of the lights.

Zhang Ruochen reminded him, “What Di Yi practices is one of the six masterpieces, Omen Lithograph. It is said that Omen Lithograph has 36 pictures in total. It was left by a great God in ancient times. Every picture can help you successfully practice a matchless magical Kungfu. The black market has nine of them. You can have Omen Eyes if you practice any picture into a certain realm. Try your best not to look into Di Yi’s eyes, they can easily attack you.”

Zhang Ruochen had fought with Di Yi and had a rough idea of his capabilities. Di Yi’s martial arts were indeed similar to the ones of Omen Lithograph.

800 years ago, Ming Emperor Palace had also had two pictures. Zhang Ruochen had watched them for a period of time. But he thought that the martial arts in it were too evil at the time, so he did not practice it.

Di Yi smiled. “You are observant. Indeed, what I practiced is one of the pictures on the Omen Lithograph, the Picture of Utmost Omen.”

Suddenly, Di Yi gave out a slight “Yah” as he stared at Chang Qiqi, who was offsetting Omen Eyes’ power. There was a



slight golden dragon power emitting from Chang Qiqi's body, driving out the power of the omen.

“Aura of Golden Dragon!”

Di Yi was exceptionally joyful.

The hill was indeed a Dragon Tomb. The Golden Dragon had been buried under it 800 years ago.

Since the power of the Golden Dragon appeared on Chang Qiqi's body, one of them must have gotten the Dragon Sarira.

SWISH!

Di Yi applied a Superior class Spiritual Stage martial technique, Flowing Light and Flying Cloud. He moved his feet and flew out like a black arrow of light. More than 33 meters away from Chang Qiqi, he stretched out one of his arms. He turned it into a big hand of Genuine Qi and grabbed Chang Qiqi.

The hand was more than 33 meters long, and every finger looked like a post. With the help of the strong power of the omen, it could shatter the hill.

Di Yi's cultivation was terrifying now that he had reached the Heaven Realm.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen pinched his fingers and pointed out his little finger, striking out a Sword Wave.

“Convergence Meridian Ripple.”

Zhang Ruochen's movement was like floating clouds and flowing water. It was done in one try. The radiance suddenly appeared on his fingertips. The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi for several hundred meters around seemed to gather on one point.

All of a sudden, a burst of cold air hung over the Dragon Tomb.

SWOOSH!

The river water was totally frozen into ice, forming a five-meter-long ice dragon.

The giant hand clashed with the Sword Wave, with a crash that sounded like a ceramic shattering.

The strength of the Sword Wave was invincible, flying through the giant hand toward Di Yi.

From the ground, it looked like a meteor flying through the sky. With a terrible cold power, it attacked Di Yi.

“Shatter for me!”

Di Yi infused limitless Genuine Qi into the Blackdragon Ghost Claw on both of his hands. The inscriptions on the gloves were almost all activated.

The small scales radiated black light. The Genuine Martial Arms' power broke out.

# Chapter 339 - Killing at the Bottom of the Water

Chapter 339: Killing at the Bottom of the Water

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

The black dragon power was like a floating cloud. It struck at the tenth level Genuine Martial Arms, forming two fierce-looking illusory images of black dragons. The two black dragons' claws were eight meters long.

Di Yi's cultivation had advanced considerably. It was not until now, that he truly exerted the power of the Blackdragon Ghost Claw.

His arms were like two giant black dragons, flying up from both the right and left. They struck toward the Sword Wave.

**BANG!**

The two dragon shadows blocked the Sword Wave and wore away at it. In the end, they completely defused the Sword Wave.

The residual strength fell on the hill to the bottom of the water, with a loud thump. It left two giant claw prints in the hill.

If the Divine Soul of the Golden Dragon was still here, this attack from Di Yi with its devastating destruction, would definitely have irritated the Golden Dragon.

Unfortunately, the Divine Soul of the Golden Dragon had already dissipated, and its power had disappeared with it.

“Four pulses strike out at the same time.”

The Genuine Qi in Zhang Ruochen's Qi Sea flew quickly through his right arm to his four fingers. Four fingers struck out Sword Waves at the same time. Thousands of sword Qis flew out with the four Sword Waves, attacking Di Yi.

Four pulses struck out at the same time. Every pulse was a martial technique at the Superior class of Spiritual Stage. It was as if four unique skills were released.

Di Yi's hands moved forward with his fists stacked on top of each other, forming a Light Shield with a dragon pattern. It clashed with the four Sword Waves. There was a deafening sound.

Four impact forces converged and hit Di Yi, making him fly backward.

Di Yi's black robe rose up in the water, then dropped back to the bottom of the water. Both of his arms were sealed by the Icing cold.

CLAP!

He ran his Genuine Qi and the ice broke.

There was a stabbing pain in his right palm. A small bleeding sword wound appeared.

However, he was wearing gloves. No one knew that he was hurt.

How can it be possible? How did Zhang Ruochen suddenly become so powerful? Has he reached the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm? It's impossible. It's impossible. The Ultimate Realm is not that easy to reach.

Di Yi's eyes were an evil blaze, staring closely at Zhang Ruochen. He was using the Omen Eyes as if he wanted to see through Zhang Ruochen.

When both of them were at the Completion of the Earth Realm, Zhang Ruochen had obviously been overwhelmed by him. Even if they had both reached the Heaven Realm, his strength should still be more powerful than Zhang Ruochen's.

How had he been defeated by Zhang Ruochen with one movement?

He had fought with his contemporaries since he was small. This was the first time that he'd gotten hurt.

He should be careful. He could not be defeated in a small place like Omen Ridge.

Although Di Yi was arrogant and frantic, he was also very smart. His expression gradually became serious as he looked at Zhang Ruochen. Zhang Ruochen was a rival that could help him improve.

The students from the School of the Martial Market saw the fight and were extremely shocked.

They certainly knew about Zhang Ruochen. He was Master Lei's Secret Disciple and ranked 98th on the Earth Board. They only knew that he was very powerful. They hadn't known he was this powerful.

Even a silver gowned Elder in the Heaven Realm from the School of the Martial Market was far behind him!

"Elder brother Zhang is indeed very amazing. He can fight to a draw with the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall. If only I could be as powerful as he is." An internal student in his thirties looked at Zhang Ruochen with admiration.

Although he was older than Zhang Ruochen, he willingly called Zhang Ruochen elder brother. If possible, he would even take Zhang Ruochen as his teacher, hoping that he could teach him some movements.

Of course, he also knew that it was impossible.

"It is said that the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall defeated Bu Qianfan, number one on the Earth Board, in three moves. Does that mean elder brother Zhang is as strong as number one on the Earth Board?"

"It seems that we can be saved!"

...

Among the dozens of hostage students from School of the Martial Market, most of them had already known Di Yi's identity. They were already desperate and knew that they were not far from their deaths.

Zhang Ruochen's presence gave them hope.

“As long as the young master is here, even Zhang Ruochen and Si Xingkong can’t save you.”

Yan Siming stared at them with a mocking smile.

They hoped that Zhang Ruochen could save them. They didn’t know that Zhang Ruochen was like a clay Buddha fording the river, hardly able to save himself.

Yan Siming knew very well how powerful Di Yi was. Among the people of the same generation, no one could outwit him. Even the martial arts legends of the older generation could only be suppressed if they fought with him.

No matter how powerful Zhang Ruochen was, there was a huge difference between him and Di Yi.

Zhang Ruochen looked at the hostage students. He frowned.

How could he save them?

Although he had made great progress in his cultivation, Di Yi’s strength was not bad either. It would be impossible to defeat him in such a short time.

Zhang Ruochen took out his golden dagger. He passed it to Si Xingkong and said, “Eldest brother, you are now in care of this tenth level Genuine Martial Arms. Besides me, your cultivation is the most powerful. Only you can use it at its maximum power.”

Si Xingkong took the golden dagger and infused Genuine Qi into it.

Suddenly, a golden light column ten meters high shot up, forming an arch-shaped knife awn. It cast golden light on the water around it.

“Good knife.”

Si Xingkong said, “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, what do you want me to do?”

Zhang Ruochen used sound shuttle to pass the message. He gave tasks to Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Chen Xier, Huang Yanchen and Duanmu Xingling.

Si Xingkong nodded his head. His eyes grew firm. “With the help of this dagger, the formation can surely be broken.”

In Yunwu Commandery, a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms would be sufficient to protect a commandery.

The power of a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms was even more extraordinary.

“Now that I’ve reached the Heaven Realm, I can be regarded as a martial arts legend. I wanted to kill all of the warriors of the Black Market long ago.”

Chang Qiqi ran his tongue around his lips. He rolled up his sleeves and took out a piece of Combined Attack jade stone.

Chang Qiqi, Si Xingkong, Chen Xier, and Duanmu Xingling worked together to embattle and ran down to the bottom of the hill.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to use the formation of the Combined Attack and golden knife to break the Black Market warriors’ Thousand Knives and Stars Formation.

Yan Siming became serious. “They actually dare to attack first. Then I will kill all of the hostages.”

Dozens of Black Market warriors standing in the back raised their battle knives, ready to slash down.

Zhang Ruochen secretly applied the power of Space Freezing, causing the warriors’ bodies to become stiff. The entire world seemed to be frozen.

They stayed motionless with their knives in the air.

Yan Siming did not understand what had happened at all. He scolded, “What are you doing? Why aren’t you chopping them to bits?”

Di Yi stood and watched from afar, feeling that there was a vague power moving around their bodies. He began to ponder and looked at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen smiled back at Di Yi and nodded slightly, with a mysterious smile.

“HMM!”

Di Yi struck out with one palm, forming a fierce flow of Genuine Qi. It broke the power of Space Freezing.

Although Di Yi did not know what kind of martial technique Zhang Ruochen had used, he was secretly on guard. He told himself he needed to be careful when he fought with Zhang Ruochen, in case he used the same movement.

Di Yi realized more and more that Zhang Ruochen was a worthy opponent. If he defeated Zhang Ruochen, he could further strengthen his undefeated heart of Martial Arts.

If he could bring Zhang Ruochen under his control or refine him to become his shadow, his strength would be doubled.

WHEW!

Huang Yanchen applied the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon. A giant dragon shadow of Genuine Qi surrounded her and leapt down the hill to rescue the students at the speed of light.

Just as dozens of warriors of the Black Market were about to chop down again...

WHOOSH!

Sword light flashed, and there was a bright sword line, flying over sideways. It sliced two Black Market warriors in half. They were killed on the spot.

There was a red area in the water.

Huang Yanchen's current martial cultivation had reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, and she was a four tricks genius. Dealing with the warriors at the Completion of the Earth Realm would be as easy as chopping vegetables for her.

The Black Market warriors were quickly killed by her sword, leaving only decapitated bodies and blood.

"If you want to rescue them, you have to defeat me first."

Yan Siming raised a seventh level Genuine Martial Arms war knife with nine rings and moved his feet, slashing toward Huang Yanchen.

"Cloud-splitting Knife."



Yan Siming was tall and strong. His broadsword technique was very intimidating and its power was ferocious. It was like a giant raising a knife to cut open the mountain. The momentum was astonishing.

Compared to Yan Siming, Huang Yanchen was very petite. She barely reached his shoulders. It seemed like one palm from him could crush her into pieces.

Faced with Yan Siming's ferocious knife, Huang Yanchen just moved sideways slightly, avoiding it.

Yan Siming did not succeed and left a deep knife mark at the bottom of the water, forming a gully one meter wide.

"She actually escaped my knife with my full strength..."

Yan Siming was startled and somewhat surprised. His speed was a bit slow.

Huang Yanchen stabbed with her sword, attacking his glabella.

A blue sword radiance appeared in Yan Siming's eyes. It grew brighter and brighter, fully covering his eyes in the end.

PUFF!

The sword tip stabbed him in the glabella, leaving a bloody mark.

She quickly took back her sword and stabbed at the other Black Market warriors.

Yan Siming stood where he was. His body was stiff. Blood streaks ran out of his wound and blended into the river water.

Water waves surged over. Yan Siming's body floated up and slowly sank down to the bottom of the river. His eyes were still wide open like he had died dissatisfied.

# Chapter 340 - Blue Genuine Qi, Innate Magic Qi

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The area surrounding the Dragon Tomb was permeated with weird power. It blocked out the powerful water pressure from the river water. Even though Yan Siming had died and lost the protection of his Celestial Bodyshield, his body was not smashed by the water pressure.

The Black Market warriors were frightened. Yan Siming had been famous for five years and was one of the leaders among the younger generation in the black market. And yet, he'd been killed by a young woman with just one sword stab.

When had the Internal Academy of the School of the Martial Market cultivated so many young masters?

One Zhang Ruochen was already very frightening. And now, there was one more.

If one were to compare Huang Yanchen to Yan Siming before she'd had the Dragon's Blood, they were about the same.

As for now, Huang Yanchen's cultivation was one realm higher than Yan Siming's. And she had more talent than him as well, it certainly was not hard to kill Yan Siming.

Di Yi's look turned cold as he watched her. He was preparing to rush over and kill her.

WHOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen's figure flashed and stood face to face with Di Yi. He stopped him and said, "Di Yi, your opponent is me!"

“Zhang Ruochen, you really do have some ability. I underestimated you before!”

Di Yi clenched his ten fingers and suppressed his anger, trying hard to control his emotions.

Zhang Ruochen was no ordinary opponent. Di Yi did not dare to look down upon his enemy. He must be very careful otherwise he might fail miserably at a very easy task.

They stood facing each other, carefully watching each other's every little movement. Their Spiritual Power were totally released and the momentum kept rising.

The Genuine Qi in their bodies rushed out of their heads, rising up like two tall mountains.

Both of them stepped out almost at the same time, slowly approaching each other.

BAM!

Di Yi took a step forward. Suddenly the ground moved, and a wave came forth. The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi shook violently.

The Genuine Qi in his body had fused with the Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth. When he moved, the ground would shake violently.

Zhang Ruochen also took a step forward. It was not as powerful as Di Yi's, but his footwork was in a wonderful and regular pattern, without any flaws.

When one's cultivation had reached their realm, the key to success was one's state when fighting.

If one was not in a good state, he or she might be defeated by an opponent in the same realm within a few movements.

They paid serious attention to each other. They had to be very careful and try their best to make the other reveal a flaw. Then one could then take the chance to have the upper hand.

While Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi stood face to face, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, and Chen Xier made a Combined Attack formation. They had already clashed

with the Black Market warriors' formation of a Thousand Knives and Stars.

Among the 236 warriors of the Black Market, there were 18 masters at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. The rest were all at the Completion of the Earth Realm.

So many masters gathered together. 236 light columns burst out from the array. Everyone's power seemed to accumulate in the center of the light column.

“A Thousand Wind-making Knives!”

In their formation, the 236 warriors roared together, continuously infusing their Genuine Qi into the Formation Jade. Inscriptions of Array gathered together, making thousands of Qi knives.

Some of the Qi knives were more than 33 meters long, like knife waves. Some were only four inches long, like flying knives with white light. All of the Qi knives gathered together, forming a knife river. They slashed toward Si Xingkong and the others.

Si Xingkong stood in the formation, holding a golden dagger. With the combined power of four people, all the inscriptions on the golden dagger were activated.

“Break!”

He raised both of his arms and swung suddenly.

The golden dagger turned into a giant knife dozens of meters long, chopping toward the river. It broke the Thousand Knives and Stars Formation.

Chen Xier was very happy, “Continue to attack! Destroy the formation!”

Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, and Chen Xier were top masters among the warriors at the Heaven Realm. Every one of them was a master like Jin Chuan.

The Combined Attack formed by these four people was flat and round. It kept turning like a giant millstone. It squeezed into the Thousand Knives and Stars Formation.

“Swoosh!”

Si Xingkong continued to chop with his golden dagger. He applied the power of the tenth level Genuine Martial Arms.

The Black Market warriors in the Thousand Knives and Stars Formation were not bad either. Everyone was a master. They struck out their knives of Qi continuously and fiercely fought against Si Xingkong and the others.

Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi were also quite nervous. After all, the fight between the warriors of the black market and four people including Si Xingkong would affect their final fight.

If the Thousand Knives and Stars Formation defeated the Combined Attack formed by the four people, then the warriors of the Black Market would come over to help Di Yi, suppressing Zhang Ruochen.

If the Combined Attack formed by the four people including Si Xingkong defeated the Thousand Knives and Stars Formation, then the four people including Huang Yanchen and Zi Qian would come over to help Zhang Ruochen, killing Di Yi.

Hence, two arrays were in a frontal crash. They could determine the life and death on both sides.

CLANG!

A loud bang came out of the area where two arrays were located.

Under the fierce attack of Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, and Chen Xier, the Thousand Knives and Stars Formation was finally broken. The warriors of the Black Market flew back.

Among the 236 warriors of the black market, at least 20 were killed by the knife energy of Si Xingkong's golden dagger. Their bodies were sliced up and turned into stumps.

Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, and Chen Xier dashed out, striking out martial techniques. They started to kill their opponents, preventing them from gathering together to form a new array.

No one had expected Zhang Ruochen and his team to be so powerful. Every one of them was an extraordinary master. Within a short time, they had dismissed Di Yi's carefully constructed killing formation.

It was as if they were all top conquerors of the Saint Academy.

Di Yi turned serious and secretly cursed the useless craps. A formation formed by more than 200 warriors could not hold back four people. If they were not useless craps, then what were they?

Di Yi was reduced to complete passivity.

Originally, they had already set up a far-flung network and wanted to kill these students of School of the Martial Market. Unexpectedly, Zhang Ruochen easily broke it.

Without the array, the warriors of the Black Market were defenseless in front of Si Xingkong and the others.

Only 15 minutes had passed. There were nearly 100 bodies.

The river water turned red. There were several stumps at the bottom of the river. It was like a horrible genie world. It was not for the faint of heart.

Zhang Ruochen acutely observed that Di Yi's mood had changed. He rushed out rapidly. He was in front of Di Yi in a second. He chopped at Di Yi's legs with his sword.

It was all done in one swift motion.

Di Yi knew that he had lost the chance to attack first. He would not confront with Zhang Ruochen directly. He stood back decisively, avoiding the sword.

WHOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen made several movements and charged forward three steps. He chopped the sword again, this time at Di Yi's neck.

Di Yi stretched out his hands to hold it back.

BAM!

The 3,000-kilogram Abyss Ancient Sword struck Di Yi's gloves, sending him backward.

If Di Yi wanted to change his situation, he had to counterattack.

“Ghost King Seal.”

Di Yi pinched his middle finger, forming a seal. He struck out with one claw. A four-meter-long black claw print attacked Zhang Ruochen.

The claw print was not like a human hand; it was more like a dragon claw. It also looked like a ghost hand or magical palm.

This was a movement from Hell Ghost King Claw.

Zhang Ruochen's glabella emitted light. The Heart of the Sword in his Qi Sea was spinning. Power of Sword Comprehension released and controlled the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Shatter for me!”

Zhang Ruochen's forefinger and middle finger were extended together, creating a sword skill.

The Abyss Ancient Sword turned into a light that flew out. It shot more than 33 meters and pierced through the black claw toward Di Yi's chest.

“Innate Magic Qi.”

Di Yi stood where he was with both his hands stretched out. A cloud of evil spirit rushed out from his pores, forming the Field of Demons with a diameter of about 33 meters.

From a distance, it looked like a giant black ball wrapping around Di Yi's body. On the surface of the black ball, there were weird magic lines that swirled continuously, and let out a purring sound.

**SWOOSH!**

The Abyss Ancient Sword made contact with the Field of Demons. It was like they were in a swamp and slowing down.

The Abyss Ancient Sword floated in the evil energy. The blade spun continuously, letting out a piercing sword sound. It broke Di Yi's Field of Demons bit by bit.

Both powers engaged in a fight, emitting streaks of fire in the water.

Di Yi practiced one of the pictures of Omen Lithograph, Picture of Omen's Congenital Magic Qi. He had already turned the Genuine Qi into the Innate Magic Qi when he reached the Heaven Realm.

The so-called Innate Magic Qi was actually within the domain of Genuine Qi.

It was just that the Congenital Magic Qi was a lot of times better than the Genuine Qi of warriors at the same realm. Once it was released, it could easily defeat any opponent.

Only warriors who had practiced brilliant martial techniques could create the more powerful Genuine Qi.

For example, the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean Zhang Ruochen practiced. When he reached the third level, he had obtained the Genuine Qi of Spiritual Fire.

Zhang Ruochen had now reached fourth level of the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean, Prebiotic Blue Sky and had obtained the more powerful Genuine Qi. It was called Blue Genuine Qi.

Of course, the Genuine Qi of a warrior at the Heaven Realm had been condensed into the liquid in the Qi Sea; it was now Vital Essence. Only when it flew out from the Qi Sea, could the Vital Essence turn into Genuine Qi again.

The liquid state was the Vital Essence, and the gas state was Genuine Qi.

Zhang Ruochen's Blue Genuine Qi was at the same level as the Innate Magic Qi Di Yi practiced.

“Shatter for me!”

Zhang Ruochen rushed up and broke into Di Yi's Field of Demons. He hit the hilt with one palm.



The Blue Genuine Qi splashed out of his palm, like a blue waterfall. It entered the sword. The Abyss Ancient Sword went through the Innate Magic Qi with a clang. It attacked toward Di Yi's glabella.

# Chapter 341 - Leaping out of the Water

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Watching the Abyss Ancient Sword get closer and closer, Di Yi's eyes grew colder. His pupils contracted. They were as small as pinpricks.

Two flashes of purple lightning shot towards the Abyss Ancient Sword from his pupils.

BAM!

Two forces bumped against each other. The two men separated simultaneously.

Zhang Ruochen only took two steps back before he regained his footing. Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, he easily cut off the chaotic power of Genuine Qi.

He stood in the water with green lightening light haze emitting from all his pores like green rays of sunlight. He looked like a green lotus rooted in the bottom of the water, revealing an otherworldly temperament.

In contrast, Di Yi took 15 steps back, leaving 15 holes in the bottom of the water. His clothes which had been stabbed by the sword Qi had three holes. It seemed that he was in a tight corner.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen had gained the upper hand.

“Zhang Ruochen, let us help you.”

Six people rushed towards Zhang Ruochen and stood behind him. They were Huang Yanchen, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, Chen Xier and Zi Qian.

Their momentum fused with Zhang Ruochen's, giving Di Yi considerable pressure.

“Zhang Ruochen, do you dare to fight with me on your own until we have a winner?” Di Yi asked coolly. He stood on the other side majestically.

Chang Qiqi laughed. “We don't need to fight fair when dealing with a person like you. Let's do it together and kill this hubristic man.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. “This is a fight between Di Yi and me. You guys stay out of this.”

“Zhang Ruochen...” Huang Yanchen said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “No more words. All of you must stand down.”

Zhang Ruochen's request to fight with Di Yi alone was not to be arrogant, it was to protect the others.

Although Huang Yanchen and Si Xingkong were top masters and could help him a lot, there was still a huge gap between them and Di Yi. They could be killed any time if they let their guard down.

Zhang Ruochen did not want to risk their lives to kill Di Yi.

“Good! Let's fight outside, Zhang Ruochen!”

Di Yi was still worried that Zhang Ruochen and his friends would besiege him. He had confidence he could kill all of them except Zhang Ruochen, but he might get hurt in the fight.

So he could only go all out if they left the Dragon Palace.

SNICK!

SNICK!

Di Yi and Zhang Ruochen rushed out of the Dragon Palace. They both unleashed their bodily movements and rushed to the surface of the dead reach.

A few moments later, there were two loud sounds and water splashed to the sky.

Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi rose out of the water almost at the same time. They stood on the black surface of the water.

It seemed like they were standing on the ground.

Many warriors could be seen off in the distance. Meanwhile, there were several giant warships coming towards them at high speed.

In the month Zhang Ruochen and his friends were in the Dragon Palace, it had caused a sensation throughout the Martial World of Omen Ridge. Every force had come to the death reach, hoping to take a share of the spoils.

There was an ancient white warship off in the distance. It had a battle flag on its top with the letter M.

It was the School of the Martial Market's Rainbow Warship.

On the warship, dozens of silver gowned Elders rushed from the cabin to the deck. With powerful charisma, each one of them had the cultivation of the Heaven Realm. They were watching Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi's battle from a distance.

"I recognize Zhang Ruochen. But who is the man opposite?"  
A middle-aged silver gowned Elder asked in amazement.

Soon afterwards, two powerful middle-aged men came out from the cabin. They stood side by side. All the silver gowned Elders saluted them.

They were Lei Jing, the Hall Master of the Silver Gowned Elder's Hall, and Chen Ying, the Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen come out of the water, Lei Jing let out a long sigh of relief.

For the past month, Lei Jing had been worried that Zhang Ruochen would meet Di Yi in the Dragon Palace and be killed by him.

Lei Jing was relieved to see Zhang Ruochen come out of the Dragon Palace alive.

Chen Ying was a gentleman who looked to be in his forties. His hair was combed back neatly, and his moustache perfectly

shaved. He had a prominent nose and deep-set eyes. It was easy to imagine him as a womanizer in his early days.

He was still charming after all these years.

This gentleman was Chen Xier's father, the Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market.

Chen Ying narrowed his eyes. "These two young men are amazing to have such vigor considering they just broke into the Heaven Realm. Lei, Zhang Ruochen's gift is much better than you mentioned."

Lei Jing laughed. "Of course. After all he is my disciple."

Chen Ying despised him. "Don't toot your own horn. Zhang Ruochen is strong enough to fight against the Saintly Being warriors now. How could you train such a talent?"

"He is my disciple after all, not yours. That's enough." Lei Jing smirked.

Chen Ying shook his head and did not bother to argue with Lei Jing. Zhang Ruochen was Huang Yanchen's fiance and Huang Yanchen was his niece, which meant Zhang Ruochen belonged to the Chens. They were relatives.

"Yanchen does have better taste than Xier. I'm surprised she was able to see Zhang Ruochen's talent earlier." Chen Ying smiled.

In addition to the masters from the School of the Martial Market, masters from Yuntai Suzerain, Tai Qing Palace, Godblood School and other top Suzerains of the Omen Ridge were all gathering at the death reach.

They were also driving warships and watching the battle.

"Our young master has come out!"

Seven people jumped out and flew towards Di Yi. They landed behind him and stood in a line.

They were the Seven Kills Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall. There were four males and three females. They were all top masters. It seemed that they were all between the ages of 20 to 30 at first sight.

Of course, the higher a master's cultivation, the more youthful he or she would appear. It was difficult to tell someone's real age from their appearance.

Zhang Ruochen was not scared at all even when the Seven Kills Emissaries showed up. Standing straight, he held his Abyss Ancient Sword and stared coolly at Di Yi. "Let's begin!"

Seeing the Seven Kills Emissaries arrive, Di Yi finally let out a long breath and relaxed a little bit. He smiled. "Zhang Ruochen, you haven't seen Zhang Tiangui since the beginning. Don't you think it's strange?"

"What do you mean?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

"You can carefully and gently think about what I mean."

Zhang Ruochen suddenly realized that it was not going well.

That was right!

He hadn't seen Zhang Tiangui since before he went into the Dragon Tomb. Where had Di Yi sent him?

Although his heart state was affected, Zhang Ruochen appeared calm as before.

He knew that Di Yi was trying to disturb him in the battle.

He had done this last time when he fought against Bu Qianfan. First Di Yi had disturbed his heart state. Then he defeated Bu Qianfan in three movements with his sword.

He wanted to defeat Zhang Ruochen in the same way.

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath. His flurried mind calmed down. He could not let himself be influenced by Di Yi. Otherwise, he might be killed in this fight.

Zhang Ruochen held the hilt with both hands and activated all 66 inscriptions in the Abyss Ancient Sword. Great sword Qi gathered together in the air, covering an area of more than 333 square meters.

Di Yi smiled. Zhang Tiangui had been right. Zhang Ruochen's weakness was his concern for others, not himself.

Zhang Ruochen looked very calm. But Di Yi believed that his words had influenced his Heart State to some degree.

Now, all he had to do was attack and defeat him.

“There’s no need for the young master to fight when dealing with Zhang Ruochen. I will kill him for you.”

The Red Wish Emissary laughed charmingly. Her sexy body flew up and turned into an illusory image. She attacked Zhang Ruochen before Di Yi.

Seeing the Red Wish Emissary’s action, Di Yi frowned slightly.

He had planned to defeat or kill Zhang Ruochen with the most powerful martial art at the highest speed while Zhang Ruochen was flustered and vulnerable.

However, the Red Wish Emissary’s sudden attack provided him a cushion period. It would be harder to defeat Zhang Ruochen once he calmed down.

So the Red Wish Emissary had chosen an odd time to attack.

“Could she be helping him intentionally?”

Di Yi was an oversensitive man. He threw doubt upon the Red Wish Emissary.

However, after contemplating for a while, he shook his head.

“She doesn’t know that Zhang Ruochen has the power to contend against me. In that case, her action could benefit me. At least this way I can see some of Zhang Ruochen’s martial techniques and trump card.”

Di Yi no longer suspected the Red Wish Emissary. Instead, he watched their battle carefully, ready to find flaws in Zhang Ruochen’s martial arts.

“Zhang Ruochen, last time you escaped with others’ help. But this time you won’t be so lucky!”

Dressed in crimson clothes made of tulle, the Red Wish Emissary had an ample chest and a plump behind. She was hot as hell. She made the Movement of Beauty and rushed to

Zhang Ruochen at high speed. She looked like a succubus dancing on the water.

This woman was indeed stunning. She did not even need to fight in person. All she had to do was leering at others, and there would be countless men willing to kill for her.

“Scarlet dreamland.”

Then she used sorcery.

Zhang Ruochen felt the scenery around him change. It seemed that he had come to a luxurious palace and was surrounded by beautiful women with white skin and long legs. Even the air was filled with the faint fragrance.

A startlingly beautiful girl in pink lingerie walked gently to Zhang Ruochen.

Other beauties were all cast in the shade compared to her.

The girl looked very similar to the Red Wish Emissary. She lifted her perfect face and leered at Zhang Ruochen.

Her hands moved gently to her back and untied the little red strings. Then the pink panties she wore slid down to her shanks, showing her perfect body.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the gorgeous woman coolly. “Red Wish Emissary, you should know that I am not scared of your sorcery.”

“Haha! Is that so? I understand.”

She smiled flirtatiously. Suddenly, she attacked towards Zhang Ruochen’s glabella with her Finger Sword.



# Chapter 342 - Eight

## Trigrams Sealing-Cloud Disk

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

In the dreamland, Red Wish Emissary's skin was a translucent and delicate snow-white. Her pink underwear slipped from her body, revealing her naked and curvaceous body.

Despite her angelic figure and devilishly beautiful face, she was incredibly ruthless. She condensed the genuine Qi on her fingertips into blades, sharpening her fingers into sword edge. In a flash, she struck Zhang Ruochen.

She took the initiative to attack him just to buy him time to steady his Heart State, so he wouldn't die in Di Yi's hands.

Even so, she struck with all her strength to kill him.

If he couldn't even defeat her, then he was no match for Di Yi.

If that was the case, there was no need for him to live.

His live depended on his power.

Swoosh!

Zhang Ruochen neither deflected nor dodged her attack. He plunged his combat sword at the temptress before her, breaking the dreamland.

The dreamland shattered.

It was only at this moment that he saw that his opponent's weapon wasn't her finger, but rather a steel-cast Three-section Sword engraved with red blood dragon patterns.

The sword was cut into three meter-long sections, making the sword three meters in length. It could be used as a sword or a

whip.

The sword had more changes than ordinary swords and its technique was even more mysterious. But few could wield it skillfully.

Red Wish Emissary had achieved the Peak Realm of Following the Heart in her sword technique.

It was the same for her whip technique.

The Three-section Sword enhanced her power greatly.

“Blue Genuine Qi.”

Zhang Ruochen thrust his palms forward, emitting a mass of blue light that condensed into a Light Shield of Genuine Qi in front of him.

His opponent’s sword broke down into three sections the minute it touched his shield. It created a long crimson whip that formed an arc to stab him in the back.

He didn’t panic. With his hand formed into a handprint, he instantly slammed into his opponent’s chest.

Seeing the approaching Zhang Ruochen, Red Wish Emissary felt an overwhelming power surging up toward her. It was enough to blow her red yarn backward.

“What a speed.”

She knew her speed was inferior, so she didn’t try to dodge him. She took out her Eight-diagram Compass instead.

The disk spun in black and white as she infused her genuine Qi into it. A giant light seal of Eight Trigrams soon appeared, with two Yin-Yang fish spinning rapidly in the center.

**BOOM!**

Zhang Ruochen’s handprint landed on the center of the Eight Trigrams, the power immediately sent it rippling. A powerful force radiated out.

Waves surged wildly out of the water.

His power sent Red Wish Emissary, who was standing on the tip of a wave, flying backward.

Zhang Ruochen's strength had become so fearsome after entering the Heaven Realm. If not for her disk, she would have been heavily injured earlier. She looked at the young man before her in shock and began to form a new impression of him.

Her disk was a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms, capable of warding off attacks from a warrior in the Completion of Heaven Realm with its great power. Yet it nearly buckled under Zhang Ruochen's attack.

Being one of the Seven Kills Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Red Wish Emissary owned many powerful war weapons, any of which could be a country-defending weapon.

Even her sword was a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms.

“Since when has Zhang Ruochen become so powerful? To think he can even keep up with Red Wish Emissary!”

“Red Wish Emissary is a God's favored daughter. Though she's not a Saintly Being, she's not much weaker by much.”

“Two years ago, while still in the Earth Realm, she climbed to the second rank on the Earth Board in the Eastern Region. When she fought the top warrior, Bu Qianfan, she only lost after 100 strikes. Before Di Yi showed up, she was the only one in her realm capable of exchanging 100 blows with Bu Qianfan.”

“Though she failed to win Bu Qianfan, she managed to reach the Heaven Realm earlier than him. It could be considered as her victory.”

“How incredible that Zhang Ruochen could contend with her! I really didn't think such a talent would emerge from the Omen Ridge.”

...

In the distance, warriors from all forces of the Omen Ridge were surprised.

Among them were those who had heard about Red Wish Emissary. When they brought it up, everyone was shocked.

Though the rankings on the Earth Board would change every two to three years, but anyone who could enter the top 100 could be considered incredible.

Not to mention that Red Wish Emissary had been in the top three.

Even Lei Jing, Zhang Ruochen's Master, was shocked. He knew his disciple was strong but never thought he would be strong enough to rival Red Wish Emissary.

"This little guy is really strong! We can probably call him the top warrior among the young generation in the Eastern Region!" Lei Jing felt gratified as Zhang Ruochen was his disciple.

The more outstanding his disciple was, the happier he was.

Considering his aptitude, Zhang Ruochen might really be able to help him fulfill his wish.

"It's only been a month since I last met you and you're already this strong. Back then, I should've spared no cost and killed you." Red Wish Emissary looked up at him through her eyelashes. She looked like an innocent and harmless woman, yet her words were cold and murderous.

She struck once again, as quickly as wind and thunder. She charged at Zhang Ruochen with her sword technique, where 36 sword shadows burst out to attack him simultaneously.

"Sword technique of Illusion."

It was yet another sword technique in the Superior class of Spiritual Stage. It was the creation of a Half-Saint. Not only was it powerful, it was also imbued with sorcery.

Her sword Qi would have stabbed warriors with lower Spiritual Power before they had the time to react.

She was in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm, but it had been a long time since she entered the realm. She had cultivated 98 drops of Vital Essence. With two more, she would be able to break into the Mid Stage.

Zhang Ruochen had just stepped into the Heaven Realm with only 12 drops of Vital Essence condensed.

His Genuine Qi was far thinner than Red Wish Emissary's.

It was a continuous process of accumulation for one to advance from the Initial Stage to the Advanced Stage. There wouldn't be any bottlenecks. One could succeed as long as one cultivate enough Genuine Qi.

100 drops of Vital Essence in the Qi sea would mean one had successfully advanced into the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

10,000 drops would represent the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Though it seemed simple, it was an extremely slow process to form drops of Vital Essence. Even if Zhang Ruochen ran his 36 Meridians simultaneously to take in Genuine Qi from the air outside and supplemented himself with pills, it would still take him a great deal of time before he could break into the Mid Stage.

Of course, with the Dragon Pearl in his body, his Divine Dragon Strength could quicken his pace without those pills and treasures.

One's physical quality and bones would be settled after entering the Heaven Realm.

The first sign was an increase in speed.

The speed of a warrior increased madly while in the Yellow Realm, Black Realm, and Earth Realm. Nearly every realm breakthrough would greatly increase one's speed.

But it wouldn't happen after entering the Heaven Realm.

Even a warrior had broken through a realm, his speed would only increase a little.

Thus, a warrior in the Heaven Realm who couldn't defeat his opponent would be granted a good chance of escaping due to his speed.

Meanwhile, the pace of practice would be slower as the warrior stepped into the Heaven Realm. A genius warrior also needed to spend a lot of time on practicing their Martial Soul.

It was already very good if he could break through a realm within two years.

Red Wish Emissary's cultivation progress in Martial Arts slowed because she wanted to practice her Martial Soul in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. Otherwise, with her aptitude and resources, she could have made the breakthrough to the Mid Stage even earlier.

“Shadow Meridian Ripple.”

Standing on the water, Zhang Ruochen looked up and pointed at the heart of Red Wish Emissary's sword technique.

In a flash, a cold light beam flew out of his fingertip and formed an energy ripple that extended all around.

A circular ripple appeared on the water, with him in the center.

CLANG!

The sword in Red Wish Emissary's hand was nearly knocked out and sent flying. She felt a stabbing pain on her arm.

Streams of blood appeared on her perfectly white arm. Her sleeves, cut by the sword Qi into pieces of red cloth, floated on the water.

“You should also try one of my attacks.”

His Blue Genuine Qi gushed out again. He raised both arms and the black water under his feet transformed into a 66-meter water wall.

It was an impressive scene, like a mountain emerging from the ground. Water flowed down from the wall as if it was a roaring waterfall.

“Ten Thousand Swords Unsheathing.”

Zhang Ruochen utilized the power of Heart of the Sword and, in a flash, thousands of water swords rushed out of the water wall.

The water swords froze and condensed into ice swords.

Ten of thousands of ice swords, as if a rain of swords, flew toward Red Wish Emissary.

With Red Wish Emissary's realm of the sword, she could also turn water into swords. However, she wasn't capable of producing so many ice swords.

She was far less powerful than Zhang Ruochen in the realm of the sword technique.

In addition, his Heart of the Sword was also imbued with Blue Genuine Qi.

Red Wish Emissary retreated back rapidly and held the Eight Trigrams Sealing-cloud Disk. An evil red fog gushed from behind her, forming a cloud of red fire.

The skills that she practiced were also formidable. When she entered the Heaven Realm, she also cultivated a special Genuine Qi— Icy Genuine Qi was also practiced.

**BOOM!**

Thousands of raindrop-like ice swords constantly hit the disk, forcing Red Wish Emissary to retreat.

Ultimately, the disk couldn't undertake the power of so many ice swords. Its light gradually faded and some ice swords pierced the light screen, aiming at Red Wish Emissary.

# Chapter 343 - A Certain Battle

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

BOOM!

The light seal formed by the Eight Trigrams Disk finally shattered and dissolved into threads of Genuine Qi light haze.

Countless ice swords converged, their sword Qi alone was equivalent to 10,000 streaks of light and swallowed Red Wish Emissary whole.

Her expression shifted as she stood in the sword radiance. Her blood and Genuine Qi circulated at their fastest as she awakened an ancient Saintly power in her body.

Her arm became as translucent as a piece of white jade, her skin emanating specks of light that formed a powerful Saint Power.

She lifted her right arm and struck with her palm.

Boom!

White holy light spilled from her palm, resembling a whirlwind that was capable of destroying the world.

All the ice swords shattered, becoming pieces of broken ice.

Though Red Wish Emissary wasn't able to practice her body into becoming a Saintly Being, the Holy Blood nevertheless dormant in her body. Her right arm was completely Saintified, allowing her to utilize a thread of Saint Power.

The ice swords had barely shattered when Zhang Ruo Chen charged at Red Wish Emissary, striking her with his palm.



“Elephant Galloping.”

Red Wish Emissary took two steps back and froze the river water beneath her feet to steady her steps. She once again cast out her palm, emitting Saint Power to meet her opponent’s attack.

The two palm power collided, splitting the surface of the water and causing two waves to spill the left and right.

A quiet noise came from Red Wish Emissary’s mouth. Her face became deathly pale. The strength of Zhang Ruochen’s palm power had continually forced her backward. She had to block the attack with great difficulty.

Not only didn’t his palm power weaken, it even became stronger.

BOOM!

Suddenly, he stopped in his tracks and sent a bolt of secret energy flying from his palm. It struck Red Wish Emissary, sending her flying backward.

“Ah!”

Her five internal organs took heavy damage from the attack and caused her to cough a mouthful of blood.

“If my eyesight served me well, Red Wish Emissary had used all her Saint Power earlier. How could Zhang Ruochen still injure her?” On board the warship of the Duanmu family, a white-haired elder narrowed his eyes. A thoughtful expression crossed his face.

That elder was called Hua Shenyi. On the surface, he was a guest of the Duanmu family, but in reality, he was one of the Elders of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect.

To think that Red Wish Emissary would possess a Saint hand! Even if she wasn’t a Saintly Being, she could still be considered a Half-Saint.

Yet Zhang Ruochen was even stronger despite not being a Saintly Being. This greatly shocked the heresy Elder.

Next to Hua Shenyi was Qin Ya. She stared at the faraway Zhang Ruochen with a trace of confusion in her eyes. “Could Zhang Ruochen be some sort of a Saintly Being?”

“Impossible.”

“Only the Posterity of Saints have diluted Holy Blood running in them, thus giving them the opportunity to cultivate to be Saintly Beings. There isn’t even a Half-Saint in the family tree of the Yunwu Commandery. How could their Posterity have a Saintly Being?”

Hua Shenyi furrowed his brow and said, “No matter how you look at it, Zhang Ruochen is a talent. His potential isn’t fully developed yet but you can already tell he’ll be a great talent. If we can’t recruit him, then we must eliminate him.”

Qin Ya replied, “There’s no rush. Let Saintness deal with it!”

Hua Shenyi nodded.

The battle continued over on the water, with one party visibly crushing the other.

Zhang Ruochen had completely familiarized himself the power of the Heaven Realm with the passing of time. The more he battled, the stronger he became. He managed to force Red Wish Emissary to continuously retreat.

Though she wasn’t as strong as he was, her bodily movement was exquisite. He wasn’t able to completely pin her down at the moment.

“Time for this to end!”

“Nine-folds of Elephant Power.”

Zhang Ruochen struck out nine times consecutively, each handprint condensing a giant illusion of a colossal elephant. The nine-headed elephant became one body and followed his palm to strike with him.

His power, nine times its usual, spilled out in a flash.

Facing the approaching attack, Red Wish Emissary could only feel piercing pain everywhere on her body. She could tell she would definitely be torn apart if the strike hit her.

“Zhang Ruochen, you really don’t know how to act like a gentleman, do you? Are you trying to kill me?”

A trace of coldness flickered in Red Wish Emissary’s eyes. A speck of red light floated to the surface of her glabella, like a bright and beautiful bindi.

She prepared to use the Holy Weapon in her Qi Sea.

That was the only way she could save her life.

Usually, only Half-Saint families and upper three level Suzerains owned Holy Weapons. Owning a Holy Weapon could be considered the equivalent of owning a legion of earth-wrecking weapons. The amount of power such weapons had was beyond the imagination of ordinary warriors.

It was also the only weapon that could be taken into the Qi Sea.

Given her current realm, she would have to burn large amounts of fresh blood to be able to use the power of the Holy Weapon.

Even just using the weapon once would heavily damage her core. She would be reduced into a weak state for a long time before she would recover.

Just as Red Wish Emissary was about to use the Holy Weapon in her Qi Sea, a bundle of orange light rushed up to her left. Enveloped in that bundle of light was a veiled woman.

She landed in front of Red Wish Emissary and said, “Put away the Holy Weapon and leave Zhang Ruochen to me.”

It was one of the Seven Kills Emissaries, Orange Star Emissary.

Orange Star Emissary hovered in the air, her long hair spilling over like a waterfall. She fell into the water. A layer of light enveloped her, leaving only a blurry shadow behind. The image gave off a sense of mystery and beauty.

They were both Seven Kills Emissaries but Orange Star Emissary had stronger martial cultivation and was in the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

She struck with her palm.

Swoosh!

Zhang Ruochen felt like his nine-fold strike had hit a metal mountain. Not only did it not move the other party, it shook and numbed his arm.

Orange Star Emissary staggered but steadied herself in the end. She turned her fingers and formed a fist, which she drove toward her opponent's palm.

Like a falling star, more than 5,000 kilograms of power exploded from her fist in an instant.

“Not good.”

Zhang Ruochen immediately executed his bodily movement, pushing his feet out against the surface of the water. He moved his body like the wind and urgently retreated.

Once a warrior reached the Heaven Realm, his increase in speed would slow.

However, Zhang Ruochen had already achieved the speed velocity when he was still in the Earth Realm. When he broke into the Heaven Realm, that gave him a great advantage in terms of speed.

When it came to speed, Zhang Ruochen was faster than even Orange Star Emissary.

The gust of fist strike of Orange Star Emissary landed before Zhang Ruochen but was blocked by the Celestial Bodyshield formed out of Blue Genuine Qi.

Zhang Ruochen steadied his footing and stared at Orange Star Emissary and Red Wish Emissary before him. “Does Orange Star Emissary also wish to battle me?”

“If I strike, will you have a chance to win?” Orange Star Emissary replied in a booming voice, giving her the impression of being unfathomable.

“How will we know if we don't try?”

“Since that's the case, I'll fulfill your wish. Even if you die by my hands, it's enough to propel you to fame throughout the

Eastern Region.”

The tip of her fingers formed threads of fire that converged into a fireball on her palm. Thin threads of lightning flashed through the fireball, making crackling sounds.

The fireball appeared only the size of a fist yet contained a great power. The heat that it radiated caused the water around the city to boil and bubble.

“Will the Seven Kills Emissaries of the Black Market Excellence Hall be joining hands to defeat an internal student of the Martial Market School? If words get out, I fear it’ll impact the reputation of the Seven Kills Emissaries.”

In the distance, Lei Jing and Chen Ying flew up. They landed beside Zhang Ruochen in a flash, flanking him.

Both Lei Jing and Chen Ying were warriors of the Fish-dragon Realm. They were famous in the Omen Ridge and were figures of utmost importance.

The rest of the Seven Kills Emissaries rushed out almost simultaneously, circulating their Genuine Qi in preparation for fighting a strong enemy. They were worried that Lei Jing and Chen Ying would suddenly strike and kill Di Yi.

The Seven Kills Emissary stood in seven different places in seemingly casual positions but they had already formed an array which connected their powers.

Lei Jing laughed. “Are you attacking? That’s good. I have long wanted to see just how powerful the Seven Kills Emissaries are.”

“I’m afraid you won’t last,” Purple Wind Emissary said coldly.

Purple Wind Emissary was the oldest and most powerful one among them. He naturally had incomparable strength.

Each of the Seven Kills Emissary, whose name rings across the land, was a dragon and phoenix among mortals. Naturally, they wouldn’t think much of a warrior of the Omen Ridge.

In their eyes, even warriors of the Fish-dragon Realm were just slightly more powerful ants.

Lei Jing stared at Purple Wind Emissary, feeling his strength grow. “Since that’s the case, there’s no way I wouldn’t meet your challenge.”

Streaks of light emerged from his body in a flash and converged into a 30-meter-tall illusory image of a cow.

SWISH!

The entire water city turned blood red. Lei Jing’s body exploded with an immeasurable power that flew into the sky, parting the clouds.

“This person is very powerful. He’s more than 10 times stronger than the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club. It’s no wonder that the Martial Market Bank would completely suppress the Black Market in the Omen Ridge, causing them to be unable to rise.”

“Purple Torch Spear.”

Purple Wind Emissary’s gaze turned serious as he expelled any earlier thoughts of underestimating his opponent.

The long spear on his back flew up and landed on his hand.

He raised his arm and pointed the spear at the sky. A streak of Genuine Qi flew up and turned into a purple light column.

Countless bolts of lightning formed and gathered at the tip of his spear.

He rushed forward and struck Lei Jing with his spear.

At the same time, Lei Jing also threw a punch at Purple Wind Emissary with the power of the Blood Magic Shadow.

Boom!

The strike landed on Purple Wind Emissary, knocking him backward.

But he wasn’t hurt. The light on the tip of his spear glowed even brighter and his war intent boiled.

Lei Jing was stunned. “Amazing! No wonder you’re the head of the Seven Kills Emissaries. You’re so powerful even though you’re not yet 50.”

“Your power is what truly surprised me.”

Purple Wind Emissary had used all his strength in the attack earlier, yet was still forced back by Lei Jing. If their battle continued, it was difficult to say who would win.

“You may be unaware of this, but Master Lei in front of you was once the conqueror of the Saint Academy. To be forced back in one strike by him isn’t a shameful thing.”

Di Yi walked up, appearing very relaxed. He held out a hand to block Purple Wind Emissary who was getting ready to attack.

“Today, it’s a battle between Zhang Ruochen and me. All of you stand down.”

The Seven Kills Emissaries immediately retreated.

There was a thread of blood at the corner of Red Wish Emissary’s mouth. She stared at Zhang Ruochen that stood in front of her, looking unsatisfied. “I still have unique techniques up my sleeve. If we battle again, I might not necessarily lose.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled lightly and didn’t argue.

Who didn’t have a unique technique of their own?

Lei Jing frowned at Zhang Ruochen. “Is this fight inevitable?”

“I promised a friend that I’d avenge her. So this fight is inevitable.” Zhang Ruochen said, his voice powerful and resonating. His gaze became even sharper.

“Di Yi isn’t an ordinary person. He’s one of the most talented warriors in the last century of the Black Market Excellence Hall. You mustn’t let down your guard,” Lei Jing said.

If he hadn’t seen the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Red Wish Emissary, he would never have agreed for him to duel Di Yi.

Though he still didn’t think that Zhang Ruochen could challenge Di Yi, he didn’t think their strengths were too far apart. Even if Zhang Ruochen couldn’t win, he was at least capable of preserving his life.

# Chapter 344 - Bone Sword and Broken Sword

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

#

...

Lei Jing and Chen Ying retreated and stood at a distance, giving Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi room to fight.

Chen Ying's gaze was bright and his face was particularly serious. "The result of the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Red Wish Emissary is enough to propel him to stardom in the Eastern Region and make him one of the most outstanding warriors in the young generation. You shouldn't have let him duel Di Yi. If anything goes wrong, the Half-Saints and Saints in the School will definitely put the blame on us."

Lei Jing placed his fists inside his sleeves and stood proudly. "He's still young. We should let him experience some setbacks. Even if he loses to Di Yi, it's still a good exercise to improve himself. On the contrary, if I stop him now, it'd affect his Martial Arts heart."

Zhang Ruochen's victory over Red Wish Emissary had indeed shocked the great influences in the Omen Ridge, but still, no one favored him in his battle with Di Yi.

Di Yi was a Saintly Being, after all. It could be said that no warrior in the same generation was his rival.

Furthermore, they were in the same realm. In the same realm, Saintly Beings had a crushing advantage over their peers.



“Zhang Ruochen, do you really not want to know where Zhang Tiangui went?” Di Yi asked.

“This battle must happen. I wouldn’t be distracted no matter what you say. On the contrary, talking so much just shows the fear in your heart.”

“I know I’ll win for sure. Why would I be afraid?”

Di Yi laughed coldly. “Since that’s the case, let’s start our battle.”

He extended his hand to the back of his neck, clasping over his backbone. With his fingers digging into his flesh, he tugged hard and slowly removed the bone.

Each piece of bone was like a piece of beautiful white jade that emitted a brilliant holy light.

He removed the entire spinal cord from his body and held it in his hand. It was more than one and a half meters long and had a total of 19 pieces. Its shape was like a white bone sword, radiating a powerful aura.

There seemed to be an illusory image of a loose-haired Saint floating on the surface of the bone sword and enveloping the bone sword.

From a distance, lines of inscription appeared on the surface of the bone sword. It gave off an icy air.

Di Yi hadn’t immersed his Genuine Qi into the white bone sword. The Icing air from the white bone sword was cold enough to freeze the water particle in the air into ice. Snowflakes fell down from the sky.

He ran his finger lightly across the sword. “This sword is called Snow River. A master weapon forger stripped the backbone of a Half-Saint and tempered it in heart fire. It’s only a sword, yet carries the Half-Saint and Saint Power of the Snow River. It can be considered a human sword.”

It wasn’t a strange practice to use the bodies of strong warriors and savage beasts to refine weapon.

Some people would use a warrior’s Meridian to make a whip while others would use the leg bone of a Half-Saint to forge a

conquering stick. There were also those who used the head of a Saint as an evil container.

The stronger the warrior or savage beast was, the higher the price of the Refine Weapon.

The bone sword in Di Yi's hand contained the power of a Half-Saint. With such power, it had reached the Peak, tenth level of the Genuine Martial Arms. It could even stand against an eleventh level Genuine Martial Arms.

Genuine Martial Arms were typically only split into nine levels.

When it went above nine level, they would be beyond the category of Genuine Martial Arms. Instead, they were known as Holy Weapons.

However, there were always masters of Refine Weapon who made high-level weapons much more powerful than a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms, yet were far from a Holy Weapon.

Thus, those masters added three other levels: tenth, eleventh, and twelfth level.

Di Yi's Blackdragon Ghost Claw could only be considered an Inferior Class tenth level Genuine Martial Arms.

Snow River, the white bone sword, could be considered a best tenth level Genuine Martial Arms. It was much more powerful. When it came to his offensive force, it could be considered invincible.

“Three months ago, I used the Snow River bone sword to defeat Bu Qianfan. I ranked first on the Earth Board just in three moves. And you insist on using a broken sword to fight me?” Di Yi asked.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at his Abyss Ancient Sword. “It's enough to use a broken sword against you.”

“Zhang Ruochen, I have a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms sword. I can lend it to you,” Chen Ying offered.

“Many thanks. Though the broken sword in my hand is only a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms, it's what I'm most familiar

with. It's the only one that will work well for me.”

As if it felt his determination, the sword began shaking violently. It gave off an eye-piercing light as if telling the world that it wasn't a useless sword.

Swords also have spirituality.

Swords also have their dignity.

“Pluto's Blades.”

Di Yi waved his arm and ice cold sword Qis shot into the sky in an instant, becoming a dark cloud of sword Qi.

Amid the clouds, the streaks of sword Qi appeared to have converged into an illusion of Pluto. With two enormous ghastly eyes, it screeched and struck Zhang Ruochen from above.

Hades Sword Skill was an Inferior Class Ghost Level sword technique.

Ghost level sword techniques were so much better than Spiritual Stage sword techniques, particularly those that had reached a succeed stage. They were capable of moving earth and heaven as well as waking the spirits. The power they contained far surpassed the category of sword techniques.

Watching Di Yi execute a Ghost Level sword technique, there were changes in the expressions of the crowd watching from a distance.

“No wonder Di Yi was able to defeat Bu Qianfan in three moves. With the power of the Snow River bone sword combined with the Hades Sword Skill, how many among the younger generation was capable of standing against it?”

“This is Di Yi's true strength. If we were to fight, he'd need one strike to completely destroy me,” said Si Xingkong.

“How many of Di Yi's strikes do you think Zhang Ruochen will be able to block?” Qin Ya held her breath and watched from a distance, anticipation reflected in her beautiful eyes.

Zhang Ruochen didn't need to defend against many strikes from Di Yi. Only three and he would become a household

name.

“I’m afraid it’ll be difficult for him to block even one strike,” said Hua Shenyi, the heresy Elder.

Even the warriors standing over 333 meters away could feel the breath-crushing pressure coming from Di Yi. The pressure on Zhang Ruochen who stood right under the sword cloud would undoubtedly be even stronger.

A star-like spot of light appeared in the middle of Zhang Ruochen’s glabella. The Heart of the Sword was moving quickly in his Qi Sea.

“Break!”

Zhang Ruochen pointed with his finger, sending his sword flying out. It became a light column that shot into the sky, striking at the Pluto illusion formed from converged sword Qis.

Though the Hades Sword Skill was profound and powerful, it also had its weaknesses.

Its weakness was its glabella.

His strike was aimed right at Pluto’s glabella.

BOOM!

The Abyss Ancient Sword struck Pluto’s glabella and went through it in the same way one broke a piece of bamboo. In an instant, it tore through the sword cloud and dissolved it into streaks of chaotic sword Qi that scattered in all directions. They made swishing noise as they flew through the air.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen’s fingers clenched into a sword skill and controlled his sword to slash Di Yi instantly.

“What? Is Zhang Ruochen defending the sword? Did my eyes fail me?”

“There’s no mistake. He’s defending the sword.”

“Doesn’t that mean he has reached the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword? In the legends, weren’t Half-Saints the only ones who were able to reach that realm?”

“That’s not necessarily true. As long as the warrior has strong enough meditative powers and works hard, they’ll have the opportunity of reaching the realm without being a Half-Saint. Only, these warriors are very rare. Those who achieve it are warriors of the Fish-dragon Realm. To reach the realm... isn’t impossible, but the stories only exist in legends. In history, those were the famous and powerful Saints.”

“Earlier, when Zhang Ruochen was dueling Red Wish Emissary, I guessed that he had reached the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword but I just wasn’t sure.”

“No wonder he’s able to stand up against a Saintly Being despite not being one. It turns out that his comprehension ability is strong and his understanding of the sword technique is deep.”

...

Heart Integrated into Sword was the realm that every warrior aspired to achieve. Not even Lei Jing and Chen Ying, with their impressive cultivations, reached the realm.

Understandably, Zhang Ruochen using the Sword Defending Technique caused quite a stir among the crowd.

“Pluto’s Chaos.”

Di Yi released the Innate Magic Qi and once again struck with his sword, sending the Abyss Ancient Sword flying.

Swoosh!

He charged forward, lifting himself up as he went. He gripped the hilt of his white bone sword with both hands and slashed his opponent’s head, crying, “This is the third strike! It’s time to stop this! Pluto’s Destruction.”

Having defeated Bu Qianfan in only three moves, he planned to do the same in this battle against Zhang Ruochen.

How could Zhang Ruochen block his attack without the Abyss Ancient Sword?

BOOM!

Zhang Ruochen's body burst with a strong Sword Comprehension power. It swept across the water city, traveling hundreds of meters.

Within those hundreds of meters, all the swords in the hands of the warriors' hands began shaking uncontrollably before flying toward him.

“What's going on? My sword...”

“My sword flew away!”

...

Nearly a hundred combat swords flew from all directions towards Zhang Ruochen. It was as if the swords were holding court as they flew above his head.

# Chapter 345 - The Demon's Heart of a Saintly Being

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Fashioning his finger into a sword, Zhang Ruochen channeled his Sword Comprehension. He sent those swords all out at the same time to strike Di Yi.

**BANG, BANG!**

The sound of explosions reverberated in succession.

Di Yi sent each of the swords flying with his white bone sword, directing them away from him in all directions.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen once again grabbed hold of the Abyss Ancient Sword and leaped up. Coming down from high up, he unleashed streaks of long sword light to chop Di Yi's neck.

Di Yi raised his sword to block the attack.

**BOOM!**

The two swords clashed.

Di Yi felt an enormous power coming from above and his body began sinking without his control.

The two of them sank into the water at the same time with a splash.

A wave surged up.

Streaks of sword Qi flew like shapeless wind blades in the water, flooding the surrounding waters.

If anyone came near, the sword Qi would instantly rip them apart.

Though Di Yi's swordsmanship had yet to reach the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, he was close. In addition to the strong power of the Hades Sword Skill, he was evenly matched with Zhang Ruochen.

He stood in the water, continuously changing his position as he launched attack after attack using his Hades Sword Skill. Whether he was slashing or stabbing, every attack was designed to kill.

Zhang Ruochen appeared relaxed. No matter how powerful his opponent's attacks were, he would easily deflect it and divert his opponent's power into the water.

“Could one's sword technique become flawless after reaching the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword?”

Di Yi's Heart State began faltering after ten strikes.

In his eyes, Zhang Ruochen was like an undefeatable enemy. None of his attacks managed to harm him at all.

To make things worse, he was executing Ghost Level sword technique and each strike consumed a large amount of his Genuine Qi.

With the exchange of blows earlier, he had used up almost 30% of his Genuine Qi.

“If I let this continue, I'll lose for sure.”

He withdrew his sword technique and took a few steps before charging toward the surface of the water.

Zhang Ruochen naturally wouldn't allow him to succeed. He yelled, “Get back here!”

Zhang Ruochen once again used his Heart of the Sword, summoning all the swords that had fallen into the water. The swords began spinning rapidly in the water, creating a giant whirlpool.

**SPLASH!**



A vortex appeared on the surface of the water. At first, its diameter was only about two to three meters, but it quickly became as wide as 80 meters. A loud roaring sound came from the vortex, forming a giant sound force.

Di Yi was planning to leap out of the water but was caught by the power of the vortex. It pulled him back into the center.

“Kill!”

Zhang Ruochen stabbed Di Yi as he controlled the swords, nearly a hundred of them.

It was likely that Di Yi’s body would turn into a sieve if he was pierced by that many swords.

Feeling murderous intent on all sides, Di Yi didn’t sit and wait for death. He took the initiative and charged at Zhang Ruochen, deciding that attack was the best defense.

BANG, BANG!

Innate Magic Qi enveloped his body. Di Yi never stopped swinging his sword, breaking apart the oncoming swords, and aimed directly for Zhang Ruochen.

Just as he came within 33 meters of Zhang Ruochen, the latter summoned his Abyss Ancient Sword once again and held it in his hand. He actively attacked Di Yi.

“Perfect timing!”

Di Yi roared and a flood of Saint Power spilled out of his body, forming a 33-meter-tall human shaped saint figure.

The saint figure emitted multi-colored lights, its huge eyes appearing like two flaming fireballs.

Warriors who were Saintly Beings were capable of converging Divine Souls. Their power would increase greatly with the help of their Divine Souls.

This was an advantage only they had.

The power of the Divine Soul suppressed Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul, making him feel a great pressure. Even the speed at which his Genuine Qi moved in his body slowed. He felt as if he couldn’t move his body.

“Break it!”

Gods Marks inscription lit up on the wall of his Qi Sea and broke through the pressure of the Divine Soul.

“Good thing I’ve summoned the Chord of Gods earlier and kept the marks of the gods, allowing me to break out of the pressure of the Divine Soul.”

Swoosh!

Zhang Ruochen didn’t show any weakness and used his Martial Soul to move the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

Like smoky fog, streaks of Spiritual Qi rushed at him and converged on the Abyss Ancient Sword.

With the power of heaven and earth aiding him, he swung his sword at Di Yi.

BOOM!

Their attacks met each other, blowing back each other with the collision.

In a flash, Zhang Ruochen raised the Abyss Ancient Sword and activated all of the inscriptions on it. He once again swung his sword at Di Yi.

BOOM!

There came another hard collision.

This time, Zhang Ruochen had the advantage and he managed to send Di Yi flying.

Di Yi didn’t try to stop in the water. He once again rushed towards the surface of the water.

BOOM!

BOOM!

With two explosions, Zhang Ruochen and Di Yi burst out of the water at nearly the same time.

“I’ve clearly headed for the surface first with Zhang Ruochen behind me. How could we’ve left the water at the same time? Could he be faster than me? Did he perhaps reach the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm?” Di Yi wondered.

Zhang Ruochen didn't give him the time to think. Once again, he used his Martial Soul to move the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi and launch another attack.

Now that he had reached the Heaven Realm, he didn't have to hide his Martial Soul anymore.

BOOM!

He once again sent Di Yi flying.

The powerful sword Qi tore his black robe.

Di Yi hadn't yet found his footing when Zhang Ruochen leaped into the air and swung his sword, sending out three streaks of sword Qi.

WHOOSH! WHOOSH! WHOOSH!

Di Yi blocked the first streak of sword Qi with his white bone sword.

His Innate Magic Qi blocked the second streak of sword Qi.

It was the third sword Qi that finally cut Di Yi's face.

CLAP!

As the sword Qi flew past, splitting open the metal mask that covered Di Yi's. The mask fell into the water.

The unmasking revealed a young face of a boy of perhaps 15 or 16. He had clear brows, bright eyes, red lips, and white teeth. His face appeared delicate and pretty.

Di Yi's true expression shocked everyone.

That included the Seven Kills Emissaries, who had never seen Di Yi's true appearance.

“To think Di Yi... is such a young person...”

In their imagination, Di Yi has always been a man of vicious means and wealthy with cities and manors. He had to be at least a 20-year-old young man.

How could he be just a teenager?

If they didn't already know his identity, his appearance made him look more like a bookish, wealthy young master.

Zhang Ruochen wasn't that shocked by comparison. In his last lifetime, he had already reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm by the age of 16.

Di Yi's talent was comparable to his in his last lifetime.

If Di Yi hadn't lost some time out of his desire to break into the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm, his martial cultivation would certainly be beyond the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Di Yi slowly raised his white bone sword, his eyes cold and sharp. He stared at his opponent and said angrily, "Zhang Ruochen, you're the first among my generation to make me take you seriously."

"If you have any other trump card, you should use them all. Otherwise, you won't have a chance to!" Zhang Ruochen replied.

"Very well. You're very brave, but being brave in front of those who are more powerful than you is to a suicidal act."

Di Yi roared, "Heart of Flame Demon."

A thread of fire burst from Di Yi's chest. The fire became brighter and brighter until it formed a sphere of red light.

THUMP, THUMP...

The sound of his heartbeats became clearer and clearer.

Eventually, it sounded like a massive drum was being beaten endlessly.

A ball of evil magic emerged from where his heart was and converged around his feet, forming a red magic sun.

The aura of the magic sun and that of the multi-colored saint figure behind him formed a distinct pair.

A tragic cry came from a distance, echoing amid the beating of his heart. The heart of a warrior of the Earth Realm shattered with a boom and he fell to the ground.

"That's a Demon's Heart, a Demon's Heart..."

The warrior died after saying those words.

The rest of the warriors felt their hearts beating quicker and quicker as if their hearts would jump out of their chests.

“All warriors who have not reached the Heaven Realm, immediately retreat to 50 kilometers. Don’t come even a single step closer!” Lei Jing roared.

“Can a Saintly Being and the Demon’s Heart appear in the same person?”

“Either of those would be enough to make any ordinary warrior one of the best of their generation.”

“No wonder Di Yi is the most talented warrior of the Black Market within the last century. If he’s able to fully develop his potential, he’d have no rivals in the Eastern Region.”

“Do you think it’s easy to be invisible? Zhang Ruochen is able to challenge him, at least for now.”

“Even so, Zhang Ruochen only has a normal Body of Martial Arts. Even if he’s inferior to Di Yi only by a small margin at the moment, the power of the Saintly Being and the Demon’s Heart would gradually appear as their realms become higher. When that time comes, Di Yi would be leaving Zhang Ruochen far behind.”

“With the Saintly Being and the Demon’s Heart, no one can stand within the same realm against Di Yi. Today, Zhang Ruochen’s defeat is certain. It’s not that he’s not talented enough. He just doesn’t have the innate power.”

...

Previously, the warriors of the School of the Martial Market had been unbelievably excited when they saw Zhang Ruochen slice apart Di Yi’s mask. When Di Yi revealed his Demon’s Heart, however, they began to worry for Zhang Ruochen. They were afraid that Zhang Ruochen would die in the hands of the Saintly Being and Demon’s Heart.

Lei Jing was on high alert, prepared to step out and rescue Zhang Ruochen at any time.

The Seven Kills Emissaries were also surprised as they didn’t know that Di Yi had the Demon’s Heart as well. Seeing him

own this kind of innate power made them feel hopeless.

Now, there was no wonder why Di Yi was able to become the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall and they could only be Emissaries.

“Devil Watches the Sea.”

Di Yi sat cross-legged, hovering above the red sun. Two streaks of firelight column from his eyes as he turned his gaze toward Zhang Ruochen.

Everything the firelight touched was destroyed.

This was bad.

Zhang Ruochen immediately executed the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon and flew up, avoiding the two streaks of firelight column.

“Zhang Ruochen, you’re destined to lose the minute I awaken my Demon’s Heart. If you voluntarily surrender and become the shadow of the Demon’s Heart, I’ll allow you to keep your life,” Di Yi said.

“Don’t be so sure.”

Zhang Ruochen activated the power of his Blood Meridian. Rich and thick Spiritual Blood spilled out of his body and formed illusions of a giant dragon and an elephant, both over 10 meters tall.

Under the protection of the illusory images, Zhang Ruochen rushed towards Di Yi.

“Zhang Ruochen isn’t a Saintly Being, yet is able to summon such powerful Spiritual Blood. How unbelievable.”

“If he didn’t have the power of Spiritual Blood, how else could he challenge a Saintly Being?”

The battle tugged at everyone’s heartstrings. Though they knew the result was destined, they still very much wanted to know the limit of Zhang Ruochen’s perseverance.

# Chapter 346 - Everything was Under Control

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The illusory image of the Divine Dragon and Elephant converged from Spiritual Blood enveloped Zhang Ruochen's body. Carrying with it a brilliant light, it flew rapidly towards Di Yi standing on his magical red sun.

BAM!

...

Two light columns shot from Di Yi's eyes and constantly beat on the illusory images of the Divine Dragon and Elephant. Ripples were made and a tremendous sound was produced. However, this could not stop Zhang Ruochen's attack.

No one knew why the Spiritual Blood of Zhang Ruochen was so strong. His two illusory images of Blood Beasts were able to contend against the Demon's Heart of Saintly Beings.

But Zhang Ruochen had a rough idea of it. Firstly, what he practiced was the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean, which helped him open up "Vessel of Spiritual Blood", one of his 36 Meridians.

The Vessel of Spiritual Blood was a paradoxical pulse, which connected the Qi Sea with his blood.

Thanks to this paradoxical pulse, Zhang Ruochen could put Genuine Qi into his blood to increase the spirituality of it.

It was not possible to achieve this through practicing other exercises.

Furthermore, Zhang Ruochen had drawn down three Chord of Gods, which left Gods Marks on his Qi sea. Therefore, his Genuine Qi was marked by Gods and raised to a higher level with his blood.

Secondly, Golden Dragon gave Zhang Ruochen its Dragon Pearl, which was lodged in his heart.

That was to say, the Divine Dragon Strength had been infused into the blood of Zhang Ruochen, making his Spiritual Blood stronger. As Zhang Ruochen continually refined the Dragon Pearl, both his Spiritual Blood and physical body would become stronger and stronger, even surpassing that of many Dragon tribes.

If someone observed carefully, they would find that the illusory images of Spiritual Blood of Divine Dragon and Elephant surrounding Zhang Ruochen shielded him from the power of Di Yi's Omen Eyes, like an armor of light, giving off a golden light.

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen rushed up to Di Yi, suddenly flew up and stabbed his sword into Di Yi's heart.

Since he had a Demon's Heart, then it must be destroyed.

Di Yi narrowed his eyes, smiled like a hawk, and slowly lifted his right arm.

The 33-meter colorful saint figure hanging behind him immediately changed into a colorful holy cloud in his palm.

The colorful holy light shot from his palm and flew toward the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The two powers collided with each other, resisting and attacking, and were evenly matched.

From afar, Di Yi trod the magical sun with the colorful holy cloud in his hands. The light glowed brighter than the burning sun in the sky.

As for Zhang Ruochen, the illusory image of a huge dragon was twining round him. When he stabbed out it was like the Divine Dragon reaching out with one of its claws to shake the colorful holy cloud.



Di Yi frowned and changed his tactics.

He made a fist with his five fingers.

“Human King Pushing Mountain!”

Formed from the void space, dozens of streaks of lightning converged at Di Yi’s fist, making a crackling sound. And then he aimed this furious attack toward Zhang Ruochen’s chest.

POW!

The golden light of dragons and elephants was struck by the blow. The Spiritual Blood dispersed and this blow headed toward at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen felt the strong power of that blow, so he immediately struck out a palm with nine levels of strength.

Again, it was a hard competition of power. The handprint thundered against the fist.

The two people staggered a little, falling back rapidly.

“Nine-folds of Elephant Power!”

Zhang Ruochen charged forward again and attacked with nine palms in a row, which exploded out with nine times the power.

“Human King Repressing World.”

Di Yi shot forward, both his fists struck out at the same time toward Zhang Ruochen’s palm and chest respectively.

It looked like Zhang Ruochen was about to take a serious injury. Suddenly, the ringing of a sword rang out and the Abyss Ancient Sword flew down toward Di Yi’s head, striking towards the top of it.

If Di Yi continued to attack with his fists, Zhang Ruochen would certainly be badly hurt. However, Di Yi would also die as his head would certainly be pierced by the Abyss Ancient Sword.

“Zhang Ruochen, you want to perish together with me. No way. The only person who is going to die, is you.”

Di Yi showed a sardonic smile. He put his Genuine Qi into a turtle-shaped jade pendant hanging from his waist. The

inscription on the jade pendant was activated, forming a light screen with him in the center to protect him.

With the protection of the amulet treasure, it was enough to block the Abyss Ancient Sword. Di Yi did not reduce the power of his fists as he aimed to kill Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen stared at that turtle-shaped jade pendant with an enlightened look, “So that is Di Yi’s amulet treasure.”

BAM!

Di Yi hit Zhang Ruochen’s chest with his left fist. A golden light suddenly rushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s chest just as Di Yi silently gloated.

A strong countering force collided against Di Yi’s fists.

“Awoo!”

Di Yi seemed to hear a dragon’s roar which made his eardrums tingle. His vision seemed to be cloaked in darkness.

At the same time, the force of impact in his arms sent him flying out.

That power was from the Dragon Pearl.

Just as Di Yi attacked him, Zhang Ruochen immediately injected his Genuine Qi into the Vessel of Spiritual Blood to activate the power of the Dragon Pearl to counter Di Yi.

The Dragon Pearl not only contained the Divine Dragon Strength, but also a strong defending weapon.

Seeing his own bloody arms, Di Yi clenched the fist again and laughed instead of getting angry, “Zhang Ruochen, you really did get the Dragon Sarira. I’ll open your heart to dig out the thing that belongs to me.”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit speechless. Why should the Dragon Sarira belong to him?

This person was too possessive.

Di Yi trod that magical sun and flew up again. He drew his white bone sword to stab Zhang Ruochen’s heart.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge. He put his Blue Genuine Qi together to form 15 sword flowers, stabbing at Di Yi's Demon's Heart.

Just as both of them were about to make contact with each other, Zhang Ruochen suddenly dodged. He lowered his body, falling downward sharply to avoid a direct touch with Di Yi.

“You think you can escape so easily?”

The corner of Di Yi's mouth turned upward. The sword Qi cut in toward Zhang Ruochen like a water curtain falling down.

HISS!

One of the sword Qis broke Zhang Ruochen's Celestial Bodyshield, hurting his left shoulder with an one-centimeter blood line.

Just as Di Yi had an air of complacency, Zhang Ruochen's sword slightly grazed Di Yi's waist to cut off Di Yi's turtle-shaped jade pendant.

The turtle-shaped jade pendant was a precious amulet treasure, which could be used nine times. Di Yi just had used it only twice up until now.

Zhang Ruochen was not only going to defeat Di Yi, but also kill him.

Since it was so, his amulet treasure must be destroyed. Only in this way Di Yi would be killed before the Seven Kills Emissaries came to save him.

By doing this, not only because he agreed to help Zi Qian get revenge, it was also to get rid of future troubles.

Seeing the turtle-shaped jade pendant falling down, Di Yi's face fell. He immediately stretched out a Genuine Qi palm, reaching down to grasp the jade pendant.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen stood upon the water, pulled his Genuine Qi into his fingertips, and made a Sword Wave.

BAM!

The wave struck the jade turtle and disintegrated it, rendering it into pieces.

“Damn.”

Di Yi’s rage overflowed and he roared, “Zhang Ruochen, you really think that I only have one amulet treasure?”

“I will destroy as many as you have.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Di Yi sneered, “You really think you have that ability?”

Zhang Ruochen asked him again, “How much Genuine Qi do you have in your Qi Sea? 20 percent?”

Di Yi’s face fell. He realized something was wrong.

As Zhang Ruochen said, the Genuine Qi Di Yi remained in his Qi Sea was indeed less than 20 percent.

Zhang Ruochen said, “No matter whether you use the martial technique of Ghost Level or the Demon’s Heart of Saintly Being, it will consume a great deal of Genuine Qi although they can unleash great power. You have just reached the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. You really think you can defeat me within three or five movements after your reckless consumption of Genuine Qi?”

Di Yi said, “So what? Exerting Sword Defending Technique also consumes Genuine Qi. I’m afraid that your Genuine Qi in your Qi Sea is inadequate, too.”

“Are you sure?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and extended his right hand, showing a lump of abundant Genuine Qi.

Genuine Qi, flowing from his palm, like wisps of mist, sprinkled on the water.

**SWOOSH!**

As he raised his palm, nearly 1,000 translucent ice swords covered the waters within about 333 meters, as thick as huckleberries.

The sword tips faced up while the hilts pointed down.

Covered by a layer of blue light, the surface of it was quite sharp and could easily cut metal like mud.

It did not look like his Genuine Qi had dried up at all.

Seeing that, Di Yi's face finally changed. He said, "How could it be possible?"

70 percent of the Genuine Qi in Zhang Ruochen's Qi Sea had indeed been used, but besides his Qi Sea, he owned a Dragon Pearl.

The Dragon Pearl, connected with Vessel of Spiritual Blood, was like a body pill for Zhang Ruochen, constantly providing energy for him.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Di Yi, I have at least four methods to beat you, but I chose the most difficult one."

"I don't know that you are more unscrupulous than me," Di Yi laughed with disdain.

Di Yi did not think that Zhang Ruochen could beat him. Although he had expended huge amounts of Genuine Qi, he could still quickly recover his Genuine Qi because of his Saintly Being.

Zhang Ruochen was not scrupulous. To defeat Di Yi, he indeed had several methods. The most direct and simple way was to use Martial Soul.

Zhang Ruochen had reached the Heaven Realm, so he could exert the power of Martial Soul.

The Martial Soul of Zhang Ruochen was stronger than some weaker warriors who reached Fish-dragon Realm, so he could definitely destroy Di Yi with a single blow by using Martial Soul to mobilize the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

Of course, if Di Yi carried amulet treasures, they might protect him from one attack. However, Zhang Ruochen could launch a second one, the third one, a fourth one and... until all of Di Yi's amulet treasures were destroyed.

But that would be too shocking. The Black Market would kill him. Even the Saints of the School of the Martial Market would want to study him in person.

At that point, Zhang Ruochen would have no secrets. He might be murdered by some greedy people in the School of the Martial Market.

Even if he wanted to show his talent, he must control it.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen could use the Power of Space and the Sarira.

There were many ways to defeat Di Yi, but Zhang Ruochen chose the most troublesome one.

Of course, although it was hard to fight, through endless battles the Dragon Pearl and his body would become more integrated, which made his body, Spiritual Blood, and cultivation more powerful.

# Chapter 347 - Digging out the Demon's Heart

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Under the control of Zhang Ruochen, nearly 1,000 ice swords turned into light columns, leaving behind streaks of sword path, as they shot towards Di Yi.

Di Yi swallowed a green Pill and began to recover his Genuine Qi.

At the same time, he stopped using Ghost Level sword technique. Depending only on his strong Saintly Being, Di Yi ceaselessly crushed the ice sword with repeated claw marks, while running towards Zhang Ruochen.

He decided to end the fight quickly, he couldn't give Zhang Ruochen any more chances to burn out his Genuine Qi.

**SWOOSH!**

When Di Yi rushed to Zhang Ruochen, he finally moved his Genuine Qi into the Blackdragon Ghost Claw.

A pair of fists with black light, like two black dragon claws, reached for Zhang Ruochen's abdomen.

“Di Yi, you think I'll be beaten in a melee?”

Zhang Ruochen moved himself to the right to avoid Di Yi's claw prints and attacked him on the left shoulder with one palm.

**BAM!**

The Innate Magic Qi shook suddenly and Di Yi walked two steps backward. Zhang Ruochen almost broke Di Yi's defense

with a single hit.

Di Yi was very angry,

“Zhang Ruochen’s speed really is faster than mine.”

Now, Di Yi was almost sure that Zhang Ruochen has reached the Ultimate Realm of the Earth Realm. It was bad news for him.

Reaching the Ultimate Realm meant that Zhang Ruochen could bring down Chord of Gods.

The Chord of Gods could bring unimaginable benefits for warriors to bridge the gap between non-Saintly Beings and Saintly Beings.

SNICK!

Again, Zhang Ruochen gave full play to his high speed. He appeared behind Di Yi to cut his cervical spine with his sword.

SWOOSH!

The white bone sword inset in Di Yi’s spine flew out by itself, like a bone whip, to hit the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The power of a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms could not be compared by a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms. Each time the Abyss Ancient Sword bumped into it, the pain which Zhang Ruochen felt was unbearable, like a stone hitting his chest.

However, he still persisted and continued to swing his sword.

In one breath, Zhang Ruochen cut more than 80 times in a row, each one contained his utmost effort.

The sword radiance, like a tempest, fell down to crash into the white bone sword, producing a pounding sound.

Di Yi just controlled the white sword without turning round to constantly resist the attacks from Zhang Ruochen. He smiled and said, “Zhang Ruochen, you want to challenge my tenth level Genuine Martial Arms with just your broken sword?”

Suddenly, Di Yi’s face changed, he heard a loud crashing sound from behind him.



“BOOM!” There came a loud noise.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen broke the white bone sword when he made the 103rd cut.

“No... no, how could you...”

Di Yi felt a hot pain on his back. A warm stream flowed down from his neck, thoroughly drenching his robe.

It was blood.

The last hit not only broke the white sword but also left an inch deep cut on Di Yi's neck, chopping off the muscle and exposed the bone there.

Although the white sword was broken, Zhang Ruochen also got hurt by the sword Qi.

The Abyss Ancient Sword was extremely sharp, but it was just a ninth level Genuine Martial Arm, much less powerful than the white bone sword. In order to cut the bone sword, the sharp Abyss Ancient Sword had to chop the same part of it endlessly.

From the previous fight, the sword Qi from the white bone sword had left dozens of scars on Zhang Ruochen's arms. His arms were badly mutilated with flowing blood and half-broken Blood Meridians.

Zhang Ruochen originally wanted to cleave Di Yi's neck with that single cut.

When the Abyss Ancient Sword hit Di Yi on his bones, his bones unexpectedly gave off a colorful light, which blocked the sword.

Di Yi's bones were colorful instead of white upon a closer look.

It could be determined from this that Di Yi practiced the “Saintly Being of Five Elements”.

“No common warriors' bones could be compared with those of Saintly Beings.”

The power of the bones of a Saintly Being was no less than that of a Half-Saint.

Di Yi escaped death owing to his strong bones.

Zhang Ruochen immediately attacked again after failing to cut through Di Yi's neck. He directed the Genuine Qi to his Meridians in his legs and kicked Di Yi's back.

POW!

A powerful force strike on his back and Di Yi felt a sharp pain in his five internal organs. Crackling sounds seemed to be coming from his body and he spat out a mouthful of blood.

Di Yi flew out. The pain made him endlessly spit out blood. It was certain that his five internal organs were heavily injured, even broken.

A darkness was in front of his eyes. He felt top-heavy as if he was on the verge of fainting.

The audience in the distance was totally astonished.

Those warriors who thought Di Yi was sure to win before all felt surprised and said, "How did this happen? Why can Zhang Ruochen suppress Di Yi? Is the Demon's Heart of Saintly Beings so weak?"

"It is not the weak Demon's Heart of Saintly Being, but it's because Zhang Ruochen is too incredible. Have you noticed that Zhang Ruochen's speed is much faster than that of Di Yi's? What's more, Zhang Ruochen practices the Heart Integrated into Sword, the advanced realm which Di Yi has not reached."

"Maybe... Zhang Ruochen really has the Dragon Sarira." Someone guessed.

At these words, everyone was silent and then nodded their heads.

Without the Dragon Sarira, Zhang Ruochen definitely could not beat the Demon's Heart of Saintly Beings.

This was the only reasonable explanation.

Even Lei Jing and Chen Ying also wore a solemn look, because they also felt that Zhang Ruochen was likely to have

gotten the Dragon Sarira and received Buddhist Emperor and Golden Dragon's inheritance.

Once this matter was spread about, it was going to shock the whole world, even the High-level of the Thousand Buddhas Sect and the First Central Dynasty.

The inheritance of the Nine Emperors was no small matter.

Lei Jing frowned and said, "Today's fight, once it gets out, will make Zhang Ruochen's future difficult!"

"It is not necessarily a bad thing for him." Chen Ying said.

Lei Jing nodded with an intimidating stare and said, "As long as I live, I will protect him. If anyone dares to hurt him, he has to beat me first."

...

...

"No, I have the Demon's Heart of Saintly Being. How could I lose to a nobody from the backcountry?"

Di Yi's heart nearly collapsed, but he was not satisfied.

By dint of his strong will, he steadied his body and prepared to fight back.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen, like a juvenile Sword Fairy, flew down from above the Nine Heavens. Clasp his sword in his hands, he cut down to form a sword Qi like a waterfall.

Di Yi knew that in his current state, he was unable to ward off the sword.

"Zhang Ruochen, it is you who have cornered me..."

When Di Yi's hands were put together, the Sacred Mark of his glabella emerged. A small vortex was born with the Sacred Mark as the center. The whirlpool grew larger and larger, and Zhang Ruochen was caught up in it.

Zhang Ruochen immediately took control of his own body and looked toward the center of the vortex, finding, faintly, that in the depth of the glabella of Di Yi's eyebrows, an ancient crimson seal was suspended.

That... that was a Holy Weapon.

Di Yi actually had to use the power of the Holy Weapon. Zhang Ruochen felt a little surprised, and immediately cast the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon to escape the vortex.

Even if the holy weapon only gave off a burst of power, it was not something Zhang Ruochen could resist now.

“You want to escape? It’s too late! Haha!”

Di Yi’s face was extremely ferocious with a wild laugh.

That ancient crimson seal in his Qi Sea flew out under the impetus of his Genuine Qi and floated above Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Looking up, it could be seen that the ancient seal had become more than 30 meters tall. The entire seal burst into flames and slowly rotated over the sky, emitting an ancient Holy Aura.

The 30-meter-tall ancient crimson seal, as tall as a ten-story building, was extremely large. Zhang Ruochen stood under the ancient seal, like a tiny ant.

Just as Di Yi used the holy weapon, Lei Jing and Chen Ying rushed to Zhang Ruochen at almost the same time, ready to save him.

However, the Seven Kills Emissaries rushed out and arranged a Seven-Star Array Battle to delay the both of them.

“Today, Zhang Ruochen must be killed by the holy weapon. You are unable to save him.” Purple Wind Emissary said coldly.

Lei Jing shouted, “Di Yi is obviously not a match for Zhang Ruochen. Even if he wins by the Holy Weapon, so what?”

The Purple Wind Emissary said, “As long as Zhang Ruochen dies, the young master will be the winner.”

Without further nonsense, Lei Jing immediately exerted the Blood Magic Shadow condensing it into a huge God’s shadow of a cow head and struck at the Seven-Star Array Battle.

“Zhang Ruochen, you must hold on, don’t die under the Holy Weapon.”

The Seven-Star Array Battle completely connected the power of the Seven Kills Emissaries and made it pull on Lei Jing and Chen Ying, not giving them the chance to rescue Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen, today I’ll teach you a truth. The living person is a king, and the deceased one is a loser. Everything is about to be over!”

Di Yi laughed loudly and took control of the huge ancient seal and pressed it down on Zhang Ruochen.

Di Yi’s face was beaded with sweat, and his body was trembling with protruding Meridians. Obviously, it is not an easy task to control the Holy Weapon.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen immediately injected Genuine Qi into the Dragon Pearl to activate its power.

**SWOOSH!**

A layer of golden light rushed out of Zhang Ruochen’s body and wrapped around his body, it even managed to block the holy weapon.

Using the Holy Weapon, Di Yi almost exhausted his Qi Sea instantaneously, even a better part of the blood in his body had been burnt.

The blow did not kill Zhang Ruochen, and Di Yi did not have the power to use the Holy Weapon again.

“How could it be...?” Di Yi’s eyelids felt increasingly heavy, and he could no longer control the ancient seal.

In the end, his Qi Sea completely dried up.

**SNICK!**

Losing power, the ancient seal became a light spot and flew back to Di Yi’s glabella.

How could Zhang Ruochen miss such a good opportunity?

His forefinger and middle finger converged into sword skill and performed the Sword Defending Technique. He mobilized the Abyss Ancient Sword to stab Di Yi’s heart.

CRACK!

The Abyss Ancient Sword became a stream of light, smashing through Di Yi's Celestial Bodyshield. The sword pierced into the pit of his stomach and punctured his heart's arteries. It passed through his body, leaving a blood hole behind. His Demon's Heart was dug out.

"No..."

Di Yi screamed and reached out with a hand, trying to grasp the Demon's Heart.

Unfortunately, Di Yi's Genuine Qi as well as his Spiritual Blood was greatly damaged, which left him strengthless. He could only watch the Demon's Heart fall into the water like a fireball.

PHHT!

When the Demon's Heart entered the water, the entire body of water roiled and bubbles appeared one by one.

The change took place suddenly. Clearly, earlier on, Di Yi had the absolute upper hand and was going to use the Holy Weapon to kill Zhang Ruochen in an instant.

However, in a moment, the scene changed. Zhang Ruochen even launched a counterattack under the attack of the holy weapon. Not only did he heavily injure Di Yi, he also dug out Di Yi's heart.

Even the Seven Kills Emissaries, who were still controlling Lei Jing and Chen Ying, were all stunned. The seven of them looked at Di Yi falling from the sky in the distance. They were all confused.

The young master had already displayed his Holy Weapon, but he still failed.

# Chapter 348 - The Arrival of the Half-Saint

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Demon's heart fell into the Tongming River. Although he lost his heart, Di Yi did not die immediately.

Saintly Beings had strong vitality with which the common Body of Martial Arts could not be compared. Lying in the water, Di Yi stared at the clear blue sky. But his eyes gradually turned hollow.

“I can't believe... I... failed... completely...”

In Di Yi's heart, he believed in his definite victory. Ever since he was young, he had never lost before.

But now, his belief was completely torn apart. Even if he didn't lose his Demon's Heart, he was almost a wreck anyway.

Holding the bloody Abyss Ancient Sword, Zhang Ruochen stared at Di Yi who was lying in blood and didn't attack anymore.

With his heart dug out, Di Yi wouldn't live much longer.

WOO! WOO!

Just then, a dark cloud appeared, covering the entire vault of heaven and the sun hanging above.

The whole Death River was darkened completely, and nothing could be seen. They could only hear the sound of the waves and the ever stronger wind.

Zhang Ruochen looked up immediately at the dark cloud. He could sense a horrible force coming near at a very fast speed.

“What’s happening? Why is it so dark now?”

Those warriors in lower realms all panicked. They all took out light nature Spiritual Crystals in their hands to light up the surrounding area.

As for those warriors in higher realms, they all looked grave. They could sense a horrible force behind the dark cloud, which made even their legs tremble.

“Swoosh!”

Suddenly, a Grey Gowned Elder walked out of the dark cloud and hung suspended in the air. He had grey hair and dry skin. On his glabella, there was a purple crescent mark.

Seeing the Grey Gowned Elder, the Seven Kills Emissaries all became terrified. They bowed to him at the same time and said, “Elder Yuan Ying!”

Hearing this name, all warriors from the Omen Ridge turned pale with fear.

“Is he the infamous Elder from the Black Market, Yuan Ying?”

“Yuan Ying? Is he famous?”

Some young disciples had never heard of Yuan Ying before and they knew nothing about his horror, so they had to ask.

“Yuan Ying is an Elder from Jiuyou City, a city controlled by the Black Market. Have you ever heard of Jiuyou City? You don’t even know that? Jiuyou City has existed for almost one hundred thousand years, and can be dated back to the Middle Ancient Times. No one knows how many generations have lived there. But it doesn’t perish, instead, it grows stronger.”  
Said an elder.

Hearing this, these young disciples still didn’t understand how horrible Jiuyou City was. But they were indeed surprised by Jiuyou City’s history. Someone exclaimed, “That is to say, Jiuyou City is a medieval demonic sect!”

There were not many Suzerains and families which could be dated back to the Middle Ancient Times in the whole Eastern Region. Every one of them was a superpower, and even the



First Central Dynasty wouldn't dare to do anything to them lightly.

Their power and background were much stronger than those Half-Saint or Saint families'.

Having a history of one hundred thousand years or even hundreds of thousands of years, just thinking about it was enough to shock oneself.

The top suzerains in Omen Ridge such as Yuntai Suzerain and Tai Qing Palace, which had only been in existence for hundreds of years, could only be seen as small suzerains compared with Aristocratic Families in the Middle Age.

As the Elder of a medieval demonic sect, Yuan Ying was, of course, a terrifying figure. So his esteemed presence in Omen Ridge could be seen as an earthshaking incident.

“Yuan Ying had killed a Half-Saint once. He drank his blood and ate his flesh, which is very horrible. Even the warriors of the Black Market see him as a dreadful devil.”

Staring at the Grey Gowned Elder in the void space, Huang Yanchen continued with fierce anger, “He also once destroyed an inferior commandery on his own and completely burnt that commandery down into ashes. Countless innocent people died by this butcher's hand.”

There were many rumors about Yuan Ying. But they were either killing a Half-Saint or massacring defenseless population.

Knowing that the Grey Gowned Elder was Yuan Ying, even the older warriors trembled with fear and wanted to get out of here as soon as possible, needless to say, it was the same with the young disciples.

That Grey Gowned Elder named Yuan Ying looked sinister. He glanced past the Seven Kills Emissaries and stared at Di Yi, “Di Yi, have you learned anything from today's defeat?”

His immense voice fell from the sky into Di Yi's ears.

Lying in the water with blood running out of the hole in his chest, Di Yi murmured, “Elder, I've lost my Demon's Heart

and I'm dying. Isn't it too late to talk about this?"

Yuan Ying said, "Losing the Demon's Heart is not necessarily a bad thing. Relying too much on the Saintly Being and the Demon's Heart is the reason for your defeat. If you can see the light, there might still be a chance. Sometimes, construction comes after destruction."

A glimmer of spirit suddenly appeared in Di Yi's hollow eyes. He kept mumbling, "Construction comes after destruction... Construction comes after destruction..."

**BAM!**

Suddenly, a colorful holy light came out of Di Yi's body. The spirit in his eyes started to grow stronger, and he even stood up from the water.

It was indeed a very strange scene. A man without a heart unexpectedly stood up again!

Standing in a distance, Zhang Ruochen was also slightly shocked. He said, "Despite his dying state, Di Yi could still burst out the power of the Saintly Being and even perfected it. He is indeed the best warrior in the Black Market in a hundred years."

Seeing Di Yi stand up again, Yuan Ying smiled and nodded. Then, he took out an Ice cold jade box and opened it. There was a bloody heart in it.

**Thump! Thump!**

The heart was still beating.

The sound of the heartbeat could even be heard 20 kilometers away.

Yuan Ying said, "Saint Ku Hai predicted that you would have a disaster today, so he asked me to come here and give you this heart."

"Whose heart is it?" Asked Di Yi.

Yuan Ying replied, "It's from a Half-Saint in the School of the Martial Market. Saint Ku Hai dug it out two days ago in

person. With the help of this, I believe your cultivation progress will rise tremendously.”

After saying this, Yuan Ying held the bloody heart up and struck it into Di Yi’s chest. With the moving of Yuan Ying’s palm, a ball sanguine light came out.

After the sanguine light died out, flesh and blood grew back on Di Yi’s chest and wrapped up the Half-Saint’s heart.

“I... I survived at last. From now on, I will become even stronger.”

Di Yi glared at Zhang Ruochen, looking like he was about to fight with Zhang Ruochen again to wipe away his disgrace.

But the moment he stepped out, a violent streak of pain was felt in his chest. The Half-Saint’s heart beat so fast that it looked like it would burst out of his body.

Yuan Ying said, “The Half-Saint’s heart entered your body just now, and you haven’t refined it yet. So you can’t fight with others right now.”

Di Yi endured the pain and said, “Elder, Zhang Ruochen has a Dragon Sarira with him. You must catch him and refine his Dragon Sarirao out of his body.”

“Oh! Really?”

Yuan Ying’s eyes lit up and he immediately looked at Zhang Ruochen.

It was only a look in the eyes, yet Zhang Ruochen felt like two big mountains falling on him and he couldn’t breathe. He even felt like his blood was frozen and his muscles, bones, and Meridians were about to be crushed apart.

“Yuan Ying, if you dare to hurt Zhang Ruochen, the Saints from the School of the Martial Market will definitely kill you.”

Lei Jing and Chen Ying rushed forward at their highest speed and tried to save Zhang Ruochen.

Yuan Ying guffawed. Through the void space, he waved his hand and formed a huge Genuine Qi palm. Lei Jing and Chen Ying were slapped backward.

Lei Jing and Chen Ying both spat out blood. Their bodies made a cracking sound, it seemed that half of their bones were broken.

Fortunately, their cultivations were deep enough, otherwise, their bodies would simply crack and become two clouds of blood fog.

Facing Yuan Ying, even the warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm couldn't withstand a single blow.

“You should think about whether you are capable or not before trying to save others!”

Yuan Ying's voice turned serious, and he wanted to kill more. He said, “Today, except the warriors from the Black Market, all will die.”

Yuan Ying landed on the water and waved his arm. The water in the Tongming River suddenly rolled and piled up giant waves. In just one second, every ship was turned over.

All of the warriors fell into the water.

“Run! Devil Yuanying is going to kill us all!”

“Run!”

...

All of the warriors swam in the water desperately.

“Hoho!”

Yuan Ying smirked insidiously. He stepped onto the water and dispersed Icing air from his feet. The water was gradually frozen into ice.

Those warriors in the water were all frozen in the ice and couldn't move at all.

The whole world seemed to become fully silent in just a second.

Besides the warriors from the Black Market, Zhang Ruochen was the only one standing on the water without being frozen. It was not because of his power, but because Yuan Ying didn't want to freeze him.

Yuan Ying stepped towards Zhang Ruochen. His ghost-like face came right in front of Zhang Ruochen. He smiled and said, "Normally, it's beneath my dignity to kill a teenager like you. But since you have the Dragon Sarira with you, it's a different matter. You have something you shouldn't have... hm..."

Yuan Ying hummed slightly and looked up.

A blue holy cloud came from afar.

In the divine cloud, one sword Qi penetrated heaven and earth and pierced the black cloud. A beautiful woman in an imperial dress with a sword on her back flew out of the divine cloud. She looked very young, about 28 or so. She was a tall woman with royal blue hair. A cold and arrogant look was on her face.

She landed on the ice. But she didn't go towards Yuan Ying. Instead, she walked to one of the icicles and looked at Huang Yanchen inside. Her eyes suddenly turned gentle, and she sighed slightly.

If someone saw this sight, he would see how similar the two women looked.

The only difference was that the woman outside the icicle was more mature. Although she looked young, she had already passed her twenties.

The woman in the imperial dress stretched out a finger and pointed to the icicle.

"Swoosh!"

In the twinkling of an eye, the ice melted and Huang Yanchen's body appeared.

Besides this, all the ice around the woman started to melt quickly. Very soon, the ice within two hundred kilometers was melted completely and had turned into water again.

The power given out by her was not Genuine Qi that common warriors had, but Holy Qi.

# Chapter 349 - Wounding Yuan Ying with One Blow

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The ice melted and all the warriors in the Heaven Realm slowly began to wake up.

They leaped from the water and landed on pieces of ice.

Their bodies were still stiff and their Spiritual Blood was not running smoothly yet. But their Genuine Qi was gradually recovering which made their bodies warmer and warmer.

The Icing air was so dreadful that their blood and every muscle was completely frozen. Without the Saint Power to dissolve the Icing air, they might have frozen to death.

As for the warriors below the Heaven Realm, although they were freed from the ice, their bodies were injured by the Icing air and they were still in a coma.

Seeing the woman in an imperial dress, Yuan Ying's pupils contracted. His face changed. And he immediately reached out his hand toward Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Five sharp white claws came out of his fingers and emanated a horrible Icing air.

Yuan Ying was fast but the woman was even faster.

Standing about 333 meters away from Yuan Ying, she gave a cold look and pointed with her right forefinger. In just a second, the Holy Sword on her back flew out and turned into a beam of light, heading toward Yuan Ying.

“Swoosh!”

The light was like a flash of lightning or a shooting star, it made an ear-piercing noise and shook the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi.

Even Yuan Ying would not dare to fight that sword directly. He had to withdraw his hand and dodge.

Although Yuan Ying escaped, Di Yi was not as fortunate.

PHHT!

The sword pierced Di Yi's heart, the one just implanted in him. The Half-Saint's heart flew out together with the sword Qi.

Di Yi only felt coldness from his chest. And then, a great pain enveloped him. He looked down, only to find a horrible blood hole in his chest.

He shivered all over and stretched his hand toward the Half-Saint's heart. He said, "My... my... Half-Saint's heart..."

The flashing Half-Saint's heart flew in a circle and fell into the woman's hand. It hung suspended above her left palm, looking like a beating blood jade.

The Holy Sword hovered above her head and splattered grains of light, making her look even more sacred and elegant.

Di Yi's face grew pale. With trembling hands, he clutched Yuan Ying's arm and mumbled, "Elder... help me... get the Half-Saint's heart back... please..."

Yuan Ying's face was dark. He stared at the woman as if he was facing a formidable enemy. Suddenly, he shook his head and cried, "Let's go!"

The opponent was too powerful, and Yuan Ying was also a little frightened.

He rolled up his sleeves and covered Di Yi and the Seven Kills Emissaries in a layer of holy light. Then he flew back into the dark cloud.

"Want to flee?"

The woman frowned with contempt and slashed out with her sword again.

SWISH!

The Holy Sword turned into a beam of white light and charged into the cloud toward Yuan Ying like a white rainbow.

Standing on the dark cloud, Yuan Ying suddenly turned around. The purple crescent mark on his glabella emerged. It grew into a huge one and chopped toward the sword.

BOOM!

There came a loud noise.

But the sword was all-powerful. Nothing could stop it. It pierced through the purple moon and went right through Yuan Ying's stomach.

PHHT!

Yuan Ying was blown away by the Holy Sword, and his black robe was torn apart by the sword Qi, revealing a silver armor worn next to his skin.

At this moment, the silver armor was pierced through by the Holy Sword as well, leaving a blood hole.

Drops of Holy Blood leaked out from his wound.

Yuan Ying immediately used his Holy Qi to stop the wound from bleeding. Then, he performed a special technique and vanished into thin air together with Di Yi and the Seven Kills Emissaries.

The dark cloud disappeared, and the blue sky and the bright sun were revealed.

“Swoosh!”

Carrying with it a blood red light, the Holy Sword flew back into the sword scabbard from the sky.

On Tongming River, all the warriors were greatly shocked. They stared at the woman with the utmost respect and awe.

“Greetings, Half-Saint.”

A silver gowned Elder from the School of the Martial Market got down on one knee first and bowed to the woman.

Bowing to a Half-Saint was nothing to be ashamed of.



Moreover, this woman was so powerful that she injured Yuan Ying with only one blow. Besides, she had saved their lives.

That made her worthy of being bowed to.

Then, other warriors came up as well. They all knelt on the ground and said, "Thank you for saving us!"

"Stand up, warriors."

This woman appeared very cold and proud, even her voice carried a chill.

Chen Ying, the Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market, walked on the water toward the woman. He said with surprise, "Liuli, I... I thought you were trapped in the Nether Relics! We sent a lot of people to save you, but no one found you. I thought you were..."

The woman was Chen Liuli, Chen Ying's sister and Huang Yanchen's biological mother.

Seven years ago, Chen Liuli and some others went to the Nether Relics to search for a legendary treasure, the Nether Bell. But they lost touch with the family. The Chens and the Qianshui Commandery Prince sent countless masters into the relics to search for them, but nothing was found. On the contrary, many masters lost their own lives in the relics.

Everyone believed that she had died in the relics. So after half a year, the searching stopped.

But no one could ever imagine that seven years later, she had returned!

Standing beside Chen Liuli, Huang Yanchen stared at her mother. She could not help but cry. She gathered her mother in her arms and sobbed, "Mother, you... you finally come back! These years... without you... I..."

Her voice was choked with tears.

Chen Liuli's eyes showed a bit of tenderness. She hugged Huang Yanchen gently, patted on her shoulder and said bitterly, "Yanchen, I remember when I left you, you were only a little girl around ten. Look how tall you've grown in seven years' time! These years, your uncle has been taking good care

of you, which has brought him lots of trouble. Now, since I'm back, I'll take you back to the Chens!"

Huang Yanchen nodded and said in a low voice, "Before going back, I want you to meet someone."

"Who?" Asked Chen Liuli.

Huang Yanchen became a little bit shy. She searched around with her beautiful royal blue eyes as if she was looking for someone.

But she did not find the person.

How could this be?

"Where is Zhang Ruochen?" Asked Huang Yanchen.

It was not until then that people realized Zhang Ruochen had gone.

Huang Yanchen's face changed color. She asked anxiously, "Was he taken away by Devil Yuanying?"

Chen Ying shook his head and replied, "No. I saw clearly that Yuan Ying only took away Di Yi and the Seven Kills Emissaries. What's more, he was badly hurt. There's no way he could leave and return again."

Chen Xier said, "Cousin, after Devil Yuanying's escape, I saw Zhang Ruochen leaving hurriedly."

"He left?"

Huang Yanchen frowned angrily.

His future mother-in-law had saved him, but he just left without saying thanks. It was too impolite. Was not he afraid of leaving a bad impression on his future mother-in-law?

But why was he in a hurry? Where did he go?

...

The Palace of Yunwu Commandery.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince sat on the gilded throne, reading over the paper.

On the golden desk, there was a small purple gold tripod. A wisp of purple smoke came out of the tripod, giving out refreshing fragrance.

TAP! TAP!

The Queen stepped walked in elegantly and approached the Yunwu Commandery Prince. She smiled and said, “Your Majesty, Gui is back. Do you want to see him?”

While she was speaking, she opened the tripod and put a piece of fragrant bone into it with her fair hands.

Common people could only burn savage beasts’ bones. Only the Royal Family was qualified to burn fragrant foxes’ bones. The fragrant foxes’ bones had a charming smell. What’s more, warriors could improve their Spiritual Power through extended use.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince smelled slightly and looked at the tripod. He smiled, “How nice the smell is! This is at least a Third-class fragrant bone. My Queen, where did you get this?”

The Queen was a bit shocked when she heard this. But she remained smiling and replied, “I live in the palace every day, so there is no way I can buy this. This is something brought back by Gui from Yuntai Suzerain to honor you.”

Yunwu Commandery Prince gently nodded and said, “You’ve just mention Gui is back, then why don’t you let him in now? I haven’t seen him for a long time either. I am wondering if he has reached the Heaven... Realm...”

Suddenly, the Yunwu Commandery Prince felt a bit dizzy. He tried his best to shake his head and said, “What’s wrong with me? I suddenly feel very tired today.”

The sound of footsteps came near.

Zhang Tiangui stepped in, casting a long shadow in the court. He said coldly, “That’s because the fragrant bone she just put in was soaked in poisonous water for half a year. My father, you are poisoned by the Blood Shadow.”

“My father, you are poisoned by the Blood Shadow.”

“My father, you are poisoned by the Blood Shadow.”

...

The Yunwu Commandery Prince’s mind went blank. Zhang Tiangui’s words kept echoing in his ears. His vision became more and more blurred.

Standing behind Yunwu Commandery Prince, the Queen suddenly stopped smiling and gave a cold look.

Unexpectedly, she raised her hand and struck it on the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s head.

BAM!

Blood came out slowly from the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s head. It flowed past his eyes and lips and dripped onto the ground.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince suddenly woke up. He stared at the Queen with disbelief and asked angrily, “My Queen, why... do you...”

# Chapter 350 - Patricide and Massacre

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

With a sarcastic look the Queen said, “Your Majesty, Gui Er has grown up. You should step down.”

The power from her hands strengthened, and her every finger was like an iron claw piercing the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s head.

“OWWWW!”

The Yunwu Commandery Prince roared and ran his Genuine Qi. Threads of white Genuine Qi condensed from his palms into a small vortex. He hit the Queen in the chest.

BOOM!

The attack concaved the Queen’s chest and made her retreat backwards. She spat blood and collided into a column which was made of gold. She fell to the ground.

Although the Queen was in the Heaven Realm, she had only gained cultivation of the Initial Stage and she was far weaker than the Yunwu Commandery Prince. Even if he was poisoned, she would never be his opponent.

Zhang Tiangui sneered. He took out a dark dagger and rushed forward. He soared and thrust his sword through the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s chest.

Sitting on his throne, the Yunwu Commandery Prince immediately ran his Genuine Qi to form a white light screen to ward off Zhang Tiangui’s dagger.

BOOM!

The attack from the black dagger bent the light screen, setting a circle of ripples into motion.

Blood gushed from the Yunwu Commandery Prince's head and flowed down from his hairline. His whole face was covered with blood, making him look ferocious. He roared at the Queen and Zhang Tiangui, "Why? I'm so good to you! Why would you do this? Why... Why..."

The toxin began to kick in. The Yunwu Commandery Prince felt a severe pain in his chest and his viscera started to dissolve. His face turned pale and he was sweating profusely.

His Genuine Qi was plunging into chaos. And the power of the Celestial Bodyshield was gradually lessening.

Zhang Tiangui laughed with a sneer and said, "Why? Is it not simple? Because I want to be the emperor of the Yunwu Commandery and you are my stumbling block. Under the support of the young master, I will unify the whole Omen Ridge and the Yunwu Commandery will become a superior-class commandery. Only I can accomplish these things, you never will."

Not knowing the identity of Zhang Tiangui's young master, Yunwu Commandery Prince was shaking with anger. He felt so sad. Dreariness covered his eyes. He said, "The throne will be yours sooner or later. You don't have to kill your father..."

Zhang Tiangui burst into laughter and he taunted, saying, "Kill my father? Haha! You really think that I am your son? How stupid you are!"

"What?"

The Yunwu Commandery Prince's bloodshot eyes opened wide, as if he'd been struck by lightning.

Let me tell you the truth, my lord."

A middle-aged man appeared from outside, he looked to be in his forties. He had a beard and was wearing a purple robe. He was the minister of the Yunwu Commandery, Xue Jingtian.

"Minister, how could you enter into the palace without my permission?" Yunwu Commandery Prince asked angrily.

Xue Jingtian replied with a smile, “Your Majesty, you’ve always secluded yourself for refining over the years, so you don’t know, but I can enter into the palace as I want. I don’t need any permission. Truth be told, Gui Er is my son.”

Yunwu Commandery Prince howled, his blue veins protruding outward. He said, “No, im...possible... You are his uncle... How... impossible... That’s adultery... incest... you...”

Xue Jingtian completely ignored him. He helped the injured Queen and lovingly wiped the blood stain off her mouth. In a mild tone he said, “Jingxuan, once he dies, we can be together, always, without evasion and fear. Are you happy?”

The Queen nodded and nestled into his arms.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince hadn’t understood why his queen wanted to kill him until now. Because he was not her beloved man at all.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince had always trusted in Xue Jingtian, because he was the Queen’s brother. But he had never imagined the two would do such an immoral thing. They had completely deceived him for twenty years.

Twenty years.

The man was so pathetic and deplorable.

“I hate that I failed to recognize you...” The Yunwu Commandery Prince stared inconsolably at the Queen.

The Queen gazed at him and said reasonably, “I married you for the prosperity of my family. Honestly, I should thank you. If we hadn’t had the resources of the Yunwu Commandery, our cultivations would have never reached the Heaven Realm. Gui Er couldn’t have cultivated and become the elder disciple of the Yuntai Suzerain. I can leave you a whole dead body as a token of my gratitude.”

“B\*tch!”

The Yunwu Commandery Prince boiled with anger. His Genuine Qi sent Zhang Tiangui flying.

The great power made the Queen and Xue Jingtian retreat to the outside of the palace.

“Incredible! He could be so powerful even in the poison of Blood Shadow. ”

Zhang Tiangui was propelled out to the palace exterior. He even broke a wall.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince chased after him. He stopped, transfixed when he came to the outside, where he found an extensive massacre. Dreaded shouts could be heard everywhere. Eunuchs and maidservants were fleeing in every direction.

“Chengzhong.”

A body was hanging from a wall in the distance. It was the strongest man in the Yunwu Commandery army, “Wan Chengchong”. His chest had been thrust open by a heavy sword. The man was pinned to the wall and his blood fell to the ground drop by drop.

A lion-hearted warrior died in this way.

Wan Chengchong had long been following the Yunwu Commandery Prince. He was his best friend and the soul of the army.

The death of Wan Chengchong was another hard blow.

POW!

An elder’s body fell from above right in front of the Yunwu Commandery Prince. Blood splattered on his face.

“Ninth uncle!”

The Yunwu Commandery Prince sprang at the body. He wanted to lift him up, but he failed because the elder had died and his body was too soft to be lifted.

All his bones had broken and turned into powder. There was no flesh intact on this gory body.

The ninth uncle was the most powerful master in the Royal Family. His martial cultivation had reached the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, yet he had still died in distress. It broke the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s last bit of hope.



The Square Commandery Prince, Jin Chuan and masters from the Square Commandery walked out and besieged the Yunwu Commandery Prince.

They had killed Wan Chengchong and the ninth uncle. If they hadn't been helped by Zhang Tiangui, the defense system of the palace would have not been broken so soon.

“Yunwu Commandery Prince, there's no way out for you!”

With great pleasure, the Square Commandery Prince looked sympathetically at the Yunwu Commandery Prince. Because of his son, he had lost his throne.

He had lost his throne, even his life, because of this son.

Isn't it a pleasant thing?

The Yunwu Commandery Prince stared at them, from Xue Jingtian, to Xue Jingtian, to Zhang Tiangui to the Square Commandery Prince... Finally, seeing his end in sight, he laughed loudly and said, “You... are great... the vendetta tonight will be settled. Someone will find you. Even if I die, you will not live a long life.”

Zhang Tiangui sneered at him, saying, “Are you looking forward to Zhang Ruochen avenging you? He will never come back!”

“Why? What did you do?” the Yunwu Commandery Prince roared.

“A young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall will kill him. He has no chance. Yunwu Commandery Prince, don't be depressed. Once you die, I will send your six remaining sons to see you in hell. Haha!” The Square Commandery Prince said laughing maliciously.

PUFF!

The Yunwu Commandery Prince spat blood. His body leant back and fell to the ground.

He had suffered a lot on this night. Two excellent sons, one was not his own, the other was killed.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince finally went down. The toxin completely filled into his heart. He stared at the sky and began to murmur incessantly, “Chen-er... Chen... er.”

BAM!

Zhang Tiangui rushed forward. His fist hit the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s head and smashed it.

The Yunwu Commandery Prince was dead.

“You were still missing Zhang Ruochen, even the moment before your death, for fear that he has already entered into hell. Yunwu Commandery Prince, you are so pathetic!”

Zhang Tiangui looked coldly at the body, wiped the blood on his hands with his sleeves and turned back to ask the warriors of the black market, “Did you catch Zhang Ruochen’s mother, Concubine Lin?”

After seeing Zhang Tiangui kill his own father in cold blood, the warriors feared him. With trepidation, one of them came forward and said carefully, “Commandery Prince, Concubine Lin has escaped!”

“What?”

Zhang Tiangui looked wrathfully at the warrior. He walked up to him, grasped his neck and said, “Concubine Lin is just a common person, you couldn’t even kill her?”

The warrior replied in fright, “Your Majesty, it was a killer of the Hades Department that took her away! We couldn’t stop him. His powerful sword technique killed forty-three masters. He rushed straight out of the gate, and no one could defend against him. Even commander Guo Shisan was killed by him.”

CRACK!

Zhang Tiangui didn’t want to hear it. He killed the warrior and threw him to the ground. In a serious tone he said, “Send people to kill Concubine Lin. The woman must be killed at all costs. The rest of you come with me to the Lin’s Mansion. Tonight, we will destroy the Royal Family first, and then exterminate all the Lins. Those who submit will prosper, those who resist shall perish.”

# Chapter 351 - A Blood Feud

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

After fighting with Di Yi, Zhang Ruochen returned quickly to the Yunwu Commandery.

He regulated his Genuine Qi to its extreme. He took his feet from the ground as if he was riding on the tip of grassblades. His speed reached its maximum limit.

Rushing for a day and a night and crossing thousands of kilometers, he did not stop to rest until the Genuine Qi in his body ran out.

I should be near Yunwu Commandery. Hope I can still make it.

Although he was very anxious, he had to stop and restore.

Zhang Ruochen walked into a temple. He sat below a statue surrounded by spider webs with his legs crossed. He swallowed a Blood Pill and regulated his martial techniques to absorb the Divine Dragon Strength from Dragon Pearl. His Genuine Qi and strength started to restore.

WOO! WOO!

The howling cold wind blew through the damaged door, letting out a devilish crying sound, adding a slight chill.

At midnight, there was a heavy sound of footsteps outside the temple.

The sound woke Zhang Ruochen up. The Genuine Qi inside his body had almost recovered. He called out the Abyss Ancient Sword and stared at the door of the temple, alert and ready.

CREAK!

A fat figure burst the wooden door open. It missed its footing, tumbled down the staircase, and finally fell into the temple courtyard.

“It hurts. It’s killing me!”

The fat figure kept howling. It seemed that it had taken a bad fall.

Zhang Ruochen looked over carefully, finding that the fat figure who’d tumbled in was actually a rabbit with long red fur. Its body was very big, almost two meters tall when it stood up.

Its ears stuck up like two giant fans.

Its head was round, like a fluffy ball. Its big oval eyes kept rotating and looking around the temple. It finally saw Zhang Ruochen who sat below the statue with his legs crossed.

With a strange cry, it flew over.

“Guoguo, why are you here?” Zhang Ruochen asked, slightly confused.

Guoguo sat next to Zhang Ruochen, with its snow white teeth exposed. It spoke like a human, “It’s a long story. I swallowed a piece of meat under the water, then my body started to burn. So I tried my best to run to put out the fire, but the fire didn’t go out. It made me so mad. Then I kept running. Afterward I saw that you were running. So I ran after you and followed you here.”

Although Guoguo had been enlightened after absorbing the Dragon’s Blood, its intelligence was still limited. It could only talk very fast, and also it did not speak clearly.

It talked for a long time, gestured with its paws and made all sorts of exaggerated expressions. However, Zhang Ruochen was confused. He had no idea what it was talking about.

Zhang Ruochen did understand one thing. The cause of the whole thing was that it had swallowed a piece of meat.

What kind of meat was it?

Zhang Ruochen felt a jolt. Was it ...

He quickly stretched out a hand to grab one of Guoguo's paws. He infused Blue Genuine Qi into its palm.

BAM!

A stroke of powerful Evil Breath corrupted Zhang Ruochen's Genuine Qi and flew backward from Guoguo's body, toward Zhang Ruochen's arms.

The cloud of Evil Breath was very cold, making Zhang Ruochen feel numb in his arms.

Zhang Ruochen instantly regulated his Genuine Qi to defuse it. He stared at Guoguo with slight amazement, exposing a dignified look.

Guoguo looked at Zhang Ruochen and had a bad feeling. It opened its eyes wide and said nervously, "Master Chen, Did ... Did I eat something that I shouldn't ..."

Zhang Ruochen took a keen look at it and nodded, "You do eat some bad things."

Guoguo was scared. Its mouth was twisted, and its tongue was hanging out. It was totally shocked.

After a long moment, it gave out a cry and stretched out both its claws, trying to pull the bad thing out from its mouth.

It wailed and rolled on the ground, hitting the nearby stone stool and incense burner table.

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head and said, "You don't need to be so miserable. If I am right, what you swallowed is the evil heart of Di Yi."

Guoguo somersaulted to get up and stood in front of Zhang Ruochen. It said, "Master Chen, Di Yi was so powerful. Why did he throw his evil heart into the water? What on earth is the evil heart? You tell me. You tell me!"

Zhang Ruochen said calmly, "The evil heart was Di Yi's heart, and it was dug out by me. It fell into Tongming River and you swallowed it. Although the evil heart grows in the human body, it is a miraculous thing, containing the most evil power with Utmost Yin. I just used my Martial Soul to explore, and discovered that the evil heart was in your body. It actually

turned into an evil ball of red fire and integrated with your flesh and blood. It was a bit strange.”

“Alas! I’m doomed! I am a vegetarian rabbit. I ate the evil heart by mistake. I’m afraid that I will be killed by that thing. Master Chen, you have to help me take out the evil ball. Our Greedy Rabbit family has only one offspring for each generation. Our family can’t disappear because of me, ” Guoguo stared pitifully at Zhang Ruochen with his big round eyes.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Only one offspring for each generation? How did your father give birth to you?”

“Don’t pay attention to those details,” Guoguo said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You are not a vegetarian. I gave you Spiritual Brawn before. You also ate it.”

“Master Chen, when Xiaochang taught me how to talk, he told me that when you are listening to someone, you should learn to get the essentials. Why can’t you get the essentials? Whether I am the only offspring, or I am a vegetarian do not matter. What matters most is that you have to help me take out the evil ball,” Guoguo said.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “It is true that the kind of teacher teaches the kind of student. Together with Chang Qiqi, you haven’t learned to talk fluently yet, but you have learned how to talk nonsense. Don’t worry! The evil ball is not bad for you. On the contrary, it might be very good for you. In the future, it might be practiced into a body pill.

Hearing Zhang Ruochen’s words, Guoguo felt calm and relief. It sat down again.

“Master Chen, where are you going? Why are you in such a hurry? I almost failed to catch up with you,” Guoguo could not help but asking.

Zhang Ruochen turned serious. After a long while he said, “Home.”

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen’s ears moved and he said, “A large number of people are rushing toward us, they are roughly a hundred kilometers away ... ”

He closed his eyes to release his Martial Soul.

The Martial Soul left his body, and flew toward the people a hundred kilometers away.

“You can hear what is going on more than 100 kilometers away? For real?”

Guoguo looked at Zhang Ruochen with some confusion. It did not really believe him, so it laid down on the ground with its ears against the ground, listening carefully.

“This is not good. It’s the Fourth Brother.”

Zhang Ruochen suddenly opened his eyes and swung his arms. A stroke of Sword Comprehension came out, attracting the Abyss Ancient Sword.

PHEW!

The Abyss Ancient Sword let out a cry and turned into a flying light. It flew out from the broken temple. With its long tail, it disappeared into the dark night.

Zhang Ruochen jumped up. He broke through the roof of the broken temple with a bang.

The Genuine Qi inside his body was released and turned into a giant dragon shadow, more than 20 meters long, enveloping his body. It flew out at the speed of sound.

“Master Chen, why are you running again? Where are you going? Don’t leave me behind ... I’m scared of darkness ... ”

Guoguo broke the wall of the temple, rolling down the hill. It chased after the dragon shadow and rushed out. Its speed was surprisingly fast.

It was 80 kilometers away.

The fourth prince, Zhang Shaochu was fleeing with a group of soldiers. Dozens of black market Evil Warriors in black clothes were after them.

Zhang Shaochu wore armor and had fought a bloody battle. However, his soldiers were getting fewer and fewer. They died one by one in a pool of blood. In the end, there were less than ten men still with him.

Five days ago, Zhang Tiangui had returned to the Yunwu Commandery and killed all of the members of the Royal Family. He had killed his brothers and father, ascending to the throne of Commandery Prince.

At that time, Zhang Shaochu had been leading the army to attack the Square Commandery. When he learned the horrible news, he was desperate and immediately returned with his army. He wanted to crusade against Zhang Tiangui to avenge his father, his brothers and his mother.

Unfortunately, there were several masters with Zhang Tiangui. He had the support of the black market. Zhang Shaochu was defeated before he even got to the city gate and now he was being hunted down by the black market masters.

Zhang Shaochu was already devastated after all the running. It wasn't just the physical pain and exhaustion in his body, but also the pain in his heart that made him sob again and again.

A sergeant with blood all over his body and disheveled hair said miserably, "Your Royal Highness, it seems that we can't escape!"

Zhang Shaochu was also hurt badly. He used his sword to support himself. He said, "Don't be scared. Mr. Liu has already been back to the School of the Martial Market to send the message. As long as the ninth brother can hurry back, we can rally our forces and kill Zhang Tiangui, that son of a b\*tch.

"I'm afraid that you won't get the opportunity."

Xue Jingtian walked out from the group of black market warriors. He stared at Zhang Shaochu and said with a smile, "Fourth Prince, the other princes have already been executed. Why are you still struggling? Do you still hope that Zhang Ruochen can make it back to rescue you? Truth be told, Zhang Ruochen has already died in Tongming River. He can't come back! Haha!"

Zhang Shaochu clenched his teeth and said angrily, "Xue Jingtian, my father trusted you so much. He let you be the minister. You are a beast with a human face."



Xue Jingtian smiled and looked sympathetically at Zhang Shaochu. He used sound wave to send a message to Zhang Shaochu's ears. He said, "You're right! I am a beast with a human face. Not only did I kill your father, I also slept with your father's woman."

"What ... What did you say?" Zhang Shaochu was surprised.

Xue Jingtian was very proud and said with a smile, "Zhang Tiangui is my son. Do you understand now? From now on, Yunwu Commandery belongs to the Xue Family. It has nothing to do with your Zhang Family! Haha!"

"Sure enough ... So that's what it is ... That's what it is ... "

Zhang Shaochu burst into tears. He said, "I always said that no matter how cruel Zhang Tiangui was, he would never kill his own father and brother. So that's what it is ... "

Xue Jingtian had told the truth, because he knew that Zhang Shaochu would die today for sure. So, he told the secret hidden in his heart to Zhang Shaochu.

Keeping a secret was a painful thing. Xue Jingtian had never dared to tell anyone.

But it was all right to tell a dead man.

Finally telling the hidden secret made Xue Jingtian feel comfortable, as though he was walking on clouds. He could finally share his achievement with others.

"Since you now know the secret, you have to die!"

Xue Jingtian used his hand as a knife and swung it to make an arch line, chopping toward Zhang Shaochu's neck.

# Chapter 352 - Anger

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Xue Jingtian used his hand as a knife and swung it to make an arch line, chopping toward Zhang Shaochu's neck.

Suddenly, there was a sharp sound. A sword light flew overhead, emitting splendid sword awe. It fell from just above Xue Jingtian's right arm.

CHH!

His arm was cut in half and fell to the ground.

Blood gushed out of his arm. At the same time, a powerful Sword Breath rushed into his body from the wound, continuously breaking his Meridians and blood veins.

“Who? Who the hell is it?”

Xue Jingtian held back the pain. He looked into the dark night and roared fiercely.

He sealed the Meridians on his right shoulder using Genuine Qi to stop the bleeding. But the stroke of Sword Breath suddenly broke through his Genuine Qi, rushing toward his heart and Qi Pool.

Zhang Shaochu had been shocked to see the sword, which had suddenly flown out. However, he was not terrified. Rather he was quite happy.

He knew that sword. It belonged to the Ninth Brother.

The Ninth Brother has come back. He has come back. Haha!

Zhang Shaochu laughed aloud crazily and mockingly looked at Xue Jingtian as if to say

‘didn’t you just say that Ninth Brother had already died’? But he is back now. He is back!’

All of the Martial Arts masters of the black market became nervous and raised their battle knives. They stood together and looked around on alert like they were facing a powerful enemy.

Xue Jingtian shook his head and said, “It is impossible. It is definitely impossible. The ninth prince has already been killed by the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall. He can’t possibly be alive.”

Who was the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall?

For Xue Jingtian, he was a figure who could only be looked up to. With just one word, he could make the Yunwu Commandery Prince disappear.

How could Zhang Ruochen have possibly escaped from the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall?

At this very moment, there was a voice coming from behind Xue Jingtian.

“Minister, how do you know that I have already been killed by the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall?”

Xue Jingtian was shocked. His expression changed and slowly he turned around.

A young and handsome man was standing five steps away, holding a broken sword in his hand. His clear and cold eyes were glaring at him.

“Zhang ... Ruochen ... How are you still alive?”

It might have been the severe blood loss, or it might have been fear; Xue Jingtian’s heart twitched and his face turned pale.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Did you hope I was dead?”

Xue Jingtian clenched his teeth. With cold eyes, he showed killing intent toward Zhang Ruochen and secretly gathered his Genuine Qi.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen was very powerful, but between him and Zhang Ruochen, one of them had to die. Why not risk his life to fight? Maybe he could turn things around.

SWOOSH!

Xue Jingtian suddenly struck out a palm toward Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Zhang Ruochen moved his hand. In a split second, he grabbed Xue Jingtian's wrist. His fingers were like pinchers, squeezing his flesh and blood. Xue Jingtian's face twisted in pain and his whole body twitched.

Drops of blood came down from Xue Jingtian's wrist.

It seemed that Zhang Ruochen's fingers were going to pierce through his wrist.

"Zhang ... Zhang Ruochen ... You ..." Xue Jingtian said miserably.

Zhang Shaochu rushed over. He was both ecstatic and furious. He said, "Ninth brother, kill this bastard. He killed our father."

Zhang Ruochen sighed. It seemed he was too late. What had happened had happened.

"Zhang Ruochen, I'm the man of the black market now. If you dare to kill me, the masters of the black market will cut you into pieces," Xue Jingtian said.

Zhang Ruochen replied, "You are using the black market to threaten me. If they could kill me, I wouldn't be here now."

SNAP!

Zhang Ruochen regulated his Genuine Qi into his five fingers. His palm was surrounded with a cloud of blue light. Suddenly, he twisted tightly, and Xue Jingtian's arm turned into a fried dough twist.

The bones in his arm were all broken.

"Ahh..."

Xue Jingtian screamed like a pig being killed. Both his legs softened and he knelt down on the ground, wailing mournfully.

“Xue Jingtian, go to hell!”

Zhang Shaochu rushed over madly. His fists dropped down on Xue Jingtian like rain drops, making him cry out continuously as he rolled and crawled on the ground.

“Ninth Prince, Fourth Prince, you can’t ... treat ... me like that ... Help me ... ”

**CRACK! CRACK!**

Incalculable bones were broken. Even his face depressed and his head was almost smashed.

Xue Jingtian was beaten to death in the end.

**BANG! BANG!**

Zhang Shaochu’s fists did not stop. He continued to beat Xue Jingtian’s dead body, letting out the insane hatred and anger in his heart.

Finally, Zhang Ruochen forcefully pulled him away. He knelt down on the ground, holding his brother’s legs and crying loudly. He said desperately, “Ninth brother, father is dead. Mother is dead. Grandfather is dead. Uncle Wan is also dead. Eldest brother is dead. Second brother is dead ... All of them were killed. You have to avenge them.”

Zhang Ruochen’s heart sank. He had guessed that the Royal Family would go through big changes when Zhang Tiangui got back to the Yunwu Commandery, but he never thought it would be this bad.

After all, Zhang Tiangui was a royal family member. How could he be so cruel?

Besides, what Zhang Ruochen worried about most was his mother ...

Even the Yunwu Commandery Prince had been killed. His mother was just an ordinary woman. How could she have been spared?

Zhang Ruochen felt an indescribable grieving. His ten fingers could not help clenching. A blaze of anger rose in his heart.

Suddenly, a powerful momentum burst out of his body, forming a gust of violent wind, causing dozens of black market warriors to fly up.

“All go to hell.”

Zhang Ruochen swung his arm, accumulating a giant palm of Genuine Qi. It waved toward the sky.

**BANG! BANG!**

There were a series of loud bangs. The bodies of dozens of warriors of the black market were smashed into pieces from the powerful Genuine Qi palm. They were blasted into clouds of blood fog. Each cloud of blood fog dropped down a broken skeleton. The heads and abdomens were blown open, leaving only the bloody skeleton.

“Zhang Tiangui!”

Zhang Ruochen looked up at the sky and roared. His voice was like thunder, resounding 80 kilometers away.

Although Zhang Ruochen had only stayed with Concubine Lin for a short time, he had felt her maternal love. He sincerely treated her as his own mother.

As for the Yunwu Commandery Prince, although Zhang Ruochen was very dissatisfied with him and never called him father, Zhang Ruochen could feel that he loved and cared for him, and had made an effort of trying to make up for him.

So, Zhang Ruochen’s opinion of the Yunwu Commandery Prince had also been changing.

Originally, Zhang Ruochen had wanted to go back to the Yunwu Commandery after visiting the Underwater Dragon Palace. He wanted to give some esoterics and the Half-Saint’s Sacred Glyph to the Yunwu Commandery Prince to help warriors of the Royal Family improve their strength.

No one could expect that Zhang Tiangui was so cruel he could kill his own father and brothers, as well as the entire royal family.

Upon hearing what had happened in Yunwu City and Zhang Tiangui’s crime, Zhang Ruochen’s face turned darker and

darker, and the killing intent in his heart grew unprecedentedly powerful.

Zhang Shaochu said, “According to a royal guard who ran away from the palace, he saw with his own eyes that Zhang Tiangui smashed father’s head. And, Xue Jingtian said before that ... Zhang Tiangui was ... his son, was the child of the Queen and him.

“What?!”

“Xue Jingtian thought that I was going to die, so he told me the truth. It can’t be fake. With his identity, there is no need to lie to a man who is going to die,” Zhang Shaochu said.

Zhang Ruochen showed a strong murderous look in his eyes. He said, “Zhang Tiangui ... shall die ... However, this can never be leaked out.”

Zhang Shaochu understood. After all, it was disgraceful. Once it got out, the Yunwu Commandery Prince would definitely become a joke among the warriors in the world.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen was defending the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s dignity.

Actually, this was the only thing they could do to help the Yunwu Commandery Prince aside from the revenge.

“Ninth brother, Zhang Tiangui has lots of warriors of the black market working for him. Some of them are really powerful and definitely martial arts legends at the Heaven Realm. Shall we tell this to the School and let school presbyters call the shots for us?” Zhang Shaochu asked.

“It’s our enemy. We should take revenge by ourselves,” Zhang Ruochen replied.

Zhang Shaochu checked on the badly injured soldiers. He looked at Zhang Ruochen again and said, “But with just a few of us, even if we get back to Yunwu City, we can’t kill Zhang Tiangui.”

Zhang Ruochen patted Zhang Shaochu on the shoulder.

“Fourth Brother, you and the soldiers are injured. Stay and recover! Leave the revenge to me.”

With the words, Zhang Ruochen was laden with anxiety and walked toward Yunwu City, with an inexpressible heavy heart.

Zhang Shaochu chased after him and shouted, “Ninth Brother, wait for me. Even if you want to avenge them yourself, count me in. If you kill Zhang Tiangui, you will bear a bad name for killing your own brother. You have a promising future. Don’t do it. Leave this notoriety to me ... Leave it to me ...”

Zhang Ruochen kept walking forward without turning around. He appeared to walk slowly, but actually he walked more than 30 meters with each step. Zhang Shaochu could not catch up to him.

Before long, Zhang Ruochen disappeared into the hazy night, leaving only a tall firm figure.

The next morning, Zhang Ruochen finally arrived at Yunwu City. He raised his head and looked at the tall city wall.

The cold fog from last night had dampened his shoes and robe. Even his broken sword was covered with a thin layer of white frost.

“Master Chen, you have already arrived at the city. Why don’t you talk?” Guoguo asked doubtfully. It exposed its round fat face and blocked Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said nothing. His eyes were full of blood. He held the sword and kept walking toward the city gate.

“Who is it?”

Soldiers guarding the city looked at Zhang Ruochen with a sword in the distance. They rushed out instantly and surrounded Zhang Ruochen.

“If you don’t want to die, get out of here.”

With his long hair flowing eccentrically, Zhang Ruochen did not stop walking.



# Chapter 353 - Shock

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

One of the elder soldiers was holding a long spear. He walked toward Zhang Ruochen.

Before he even started, Guoguo sent him flying with one palm.

Guoguo sighed, "I told you not to come near. If you are blocking his way, you are looking for death."

A rabbit that was taller than a human was actually talking like a human. The soldiers were amazed.

Especially the soldier who was sent flying by him. Finding himself tens of meters away without a single wound on his body, he was even more terrified.

The young swordsman and the rabbit were extraordinary Martial Arts swordsman. Provoking them was not a good idea.

The soldiers did not dare to attack Zhang Ruochen. They merely stood back and watched as he entered Yunwu City.

Yunwu City was still bustling with streams of people, horses and carriages. Occasionally, you could hear people talking about the great change in the palace and the tragic homicide of the Lin Family.

"The Seventh Prince is extremely cruel and merciless. In order to ascend the throne, he actually killed every prince of the Royal Family. All of the princes and princesses are ghosts now."

"It is said that several princes knelt down begging and wanted to surrender to him, yet he still executed them."

“Anyway, this is the business of the Royal Family. It has nothing to do with us.”

“It wasn’t just the Royal Family. Even the Lin Family have all been killed. 847 bodies in the courtyard and still not buried. Their blood spilled onto the street!”

“Why did the Seventh Prince kill the Lin Family?”

“It must be related to the Ninth Prince. The leader of the Lin Family is the Ninth Prince’s grandfather. It was said that he was also killed. His head chopped right off. My! How sinful he is!”

“Hey! Quickly! Look ... That man holding a sword looks like the Ninth Prince.”

Zhang Ruochen was walking on the street and attracted some attention. He had finally been recognized by someone.

“It’s the Ninth Prince ... He has actually come back ... ”

“The palace has gone through great changes. He has to come back. It’s a pity that he can’t change anything. Almost all the Royal Family members were killed. The Seventh Prince has become the leader of the Yunwu Commandery.”

“Why does he come alone? The fourth prince came back with an army and couldn’t avenge his father. What’s the use of him coming back alone? He has just come back to die!”

...

What happened in the Royal Family indeed caused a lot of shock. But it did not affect ordinary people’s daily life. They did not really care who the king of Yunwu Commandery was.

Of course, there were many people who secretly cursed and scolded Zhang Tiangui. They said that he was utterly devoid of conscience to kill his own father and brothers.

At the same time, the news of Zhang Ruochen entering Yunwu City was passed to the palace and Zhang Tiangui.

Zhang Tiangui was extremely surprised. He looked at the reporting soldier and confirmed with him, “Are you sure it is Zhang Ruochen?”

“It’s him. There’s absolutely no mistake,” the soldier said firmly.

“By himself?”

“That’s right. Only him, and ... a rabbit. Square Commandery Prince and presbyter Jin are hurrying over with their men. Your Majesty, should we send an army to kill him?”

“How can this be? A young master went to kill Zhang Ruochen personally. And he escaped,” Zhang Tiangui had a bad feeling about this.

Zhang Tiangui sat back again and gently shook his head, “Since the Square Commandery Prince and Jin Chuan are already on their way, I think they can handle Zhang Ruochen. If they can’t, then no matter how many armies you send, it will also be in vain. Pass my order right now to initialize the Formation of Palace Protection. If Zhang Ruochen wants to come back to die, then I will fulfill his desire.”

At this very moment, there were footsteps coming from outside the palace. 保存(Ctrl+Enter)

The queen quickly walked in from outside. She was a bit frightened and said, “Gui’er, I heard that Zhang Ruochen has come back! Didn’t you say that Zhang Ruochen had been killed by the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall? Why is he back in Yunwu City?”

Zhang Tiangui gave a small smile. “Don’t worry, mother. Even if Zhang Ruochen has come back, his cultivation is only in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. The Square Commandery Prince and Jin Chuan are top masters who have practiced the Martial Soul. It will be easy to handle him.”

The Queen relaxed a little. She said, “What do we need to do now?”

“We don’t need to do anything. We just need to go stand on the city wall and watch how Zhang Ruochen gets killed by masters of the Square Commandery.”

Zhang Tiangui had one last card in his hands. He was very calm without a glimmer of fear.

He was still confused as to how Zhang Ruochen had managed to escape from the trap Di Yi had set up though.

Zhang Tiangui and the Queen walked out of the palace and ascended the city wall, looking far into the distance. They soon saw Zhang Ruochen walking on the wide street.

Zhang Ruochen's presence caused a big shock throughout the entire city. Lots of warriors hurried over, surrounding the street.

In the Yunwu Commandery, almost all of the warriors knew that there were two world famous talents in the Royal Family. One was the Seventh Prince, and the other one was the Ninth Prince.

Many people were secretly discussing how the Seventh Prince was more powerful or the Ninth Prince was more outstanding.

The palace had gone through a great change and now the Ninth Prince was back. Everything seemed to predict that there would be a great battle between the two princes.

Brothers turned against each other and Geniuses fought with each other. This was something that all warriors could expect.

Lin Ningshan and Lin Chenyu wore bamboo hats and dressed in black cloaks. They were walking in the crowd watching Zhang Ruochen, who was in the middle of the street, from a distance.

"It is indeed him. He's back!" Lin Ningshan's eyes were swollen and red, as she stared at Zhang Ruochen who stood in the distance. She had a different feeling in her heart.

Only three short years had passed. The once weak and sick cousin had turned into a world-famous master.

Lin Chenyu said with his hoarse voice, "What's the point of coming back?"

"Well ... He can avenge our father and grandfather ..." Lin Ningshan said.

After the Lin Family members were all killed, Lin Ningshan and Lin Chenyu secretly returned to Yunwu City.

Unfortunately, many masters of the black market had been

hiding outside the Lin Mansion. They did not even have a chance to get the bodies back and could only watch the bodies of their families fall into the blood pool, slowly rotting.

Lin Chenyu said, “Zhang Tiangui is controlling the situation and surrendered himself to the black market. He has many masters at his side. Zhang Ruochen has returned alone. He is an egg bashing itself against a rock. Zhang Ruochen is too impulsive. He will die for sure.”

In Lin Chenyu’s opinion, Zhang Ruochen was indeed very stupid.

His martial cultivation was not powerful enough and yet, he’d come back for revenge. What was that if not stupid?

There was a sudden clicking sound coming from the street.

A group of soldiers in golden armor rode on giant savage beasts, galloping from a distance. They rolled up a large amount of smoke and dust, resulting in tremendous momentum.

The ground shook violently.

All the warriors on the streets were shocked. They immediately dispersed, retreating to the shops on either side of the street.

In the lead of the army, was a middle-aged man with a steel needle beard and elite tiger mask. He carried a long bronze halberd on his back and rode on a four-meter-high blue-eyed golden lion.

When he saw Zhang Ruochen in front of him, he showed a cold expression in his eyes and roared loudly.

The blue-eyed golden lion received an order and stopped immediately. There were two tubes of white smoke coming out from its nostrils.

The dozen or so soldiers behind him also called their lions to stop and stood in the back.

The entire street exhibited an awful atmosphere. Powerful Martial Arts aura radiated from the bodies of the soldiers, frightening the surrounding warriors.

Who the hell were these soldiers? How come they had such powerful momentum?

They were definitely not ordinary warriors.

Zhang Ruochen stopped and raised his head to look, staring at the face of the middle-aged man in the forefront. He said, "Square Commandery Prince, you are a fierce and powerful person. When did you become a soldier of the Yunwu Commandery?"

That's right.

The man at the forefront was the Square Commandery Prince.

More than a dozen soldiers stood behind him and they were all top masters in the Square Commandery.

If Di Yi hadn't ordered the Square Commandery Prince to listen to Zhang Tiangui, why was the Square Commandery Prince willing to listen to Zhang Tiangui? Of course, he and Zhang Tiangui also had a common enemy. Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen had appeared, and of course the Square Commandery Prince had immediately rushed over.

"Zhang Ruochen, you are very lucky that you didn't die in the Underwater Dragon Palace. However, since you won't be able to come to Yunwu City of the Yunwu Commandery, you will have no chance to escape," the Square Commandery Prince said coldly.

Zhang Ruochen replied, "I've come back to settle something with Zhang Tiangui. I suggest that you don't get involved."

"You mean something about killing the Yunwu Commandery Prince. Haha! To tell you the truth, I am an interested party. The top master of the Yunwu Commandery, your great grandfather? I killed him. He couldn't withstand a single blow!" The Square Commandery Prince deliberately said this to provoke Zhang Ruochen.

Originally, Zhang Ruochen had not wanted to deal with warriors of the Square Commandery. He just wanted to kill Zhang Tiangui.

But now his killing intent was expanding.

PHHT!

A stroke of cold Genuine Qi emitted from Zhang Ruochen's body, It froze into ice on the ground, and continuously spread out several meters.

“You are angry because of this?”

The Square Commandery Prince smiled. “I haven't told you that I also killed your grandfather, the master of the Lin Family. I chopped off his head with a handheld knife. The top masters of your Yunwu Commandery were too weak!”

“Haha!”

All of the soldiers behind the Square Commandery Prince laughed.

“Well then, you have to pay a heavy price for the crime you've committed,” Zhang Ruochen said coldly.

The Square Commandery warriors laughed again like they had heard something funny.

“Zhang Ruochen, you think you are powerful. With the Commandery Prince and Elder Lao here, you still want revenge?” A Square Commandery warrior in the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm laughed.

He was Wang Jinyi, the Square Commandery Prince's eldest disciple. He had once been a senior general who attended to garrison duty in the Square Commandery.

# Chapter 354 - All of You Will Die

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Square Commandery Prince and Jin Chuan were both among the top ten warriors in the Square Commandery. Particularly, Square Commandery Prince who was ranked third.

The Square Commandery was a medium level commandery which was ten times stronger than the Yunwu Commandery. So the Square Commandery's top ten warriors were also highly respected as legends in the Yunwu Commandery.

Now, two of the top ten warriors were here. What's more, six masters in the Heaven Realm and many other warriors in the Earth Realm from the Black Market were also on their way here.

Zhang Ruochen was only a young warrior who was less than 20 years old. What could he do when so many masters were here?

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Wang Jinyi.

His gaze was like two cold needles stabbing into Wang Jinyi's pupils, making Wang Jinyi shiver. His eyes dulled and he almost fell off the savage beast.

Wang Jinyi immediately ran his Genuine Qi to dissolve the power of Zhang Ruochen's gaze. He cried, "Zhang Ruochen, I don't believe you are that powerful!"

After saying this, Wang Jinyi stood up on the savage beast's back. Holding his three-meter long spear, he jumped up and stabbed.



“Black Whirl!”

This spear technique was very powerful. As the spear turned, the Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth moved along with it, forming a spear vortex.

With the stabbing of the spear, countless wind blades flew out of the vortex, making swishing noise.

Wang Jinyi was very talented. He had once defeated an opponent who was two realms stronger than him. It was during that battle that the Square Commandery Prince noticed him and recruited him as his favorite disciple.

His Genuine Qi carried the power of wind nature.

Thus, whenever he used his Genuine Qi, wind blades would form.

CRACK! CRACK!

Some of the wind blades slashed onto the street and cut up the half-meter thick slates, leaving behind two-meter long cracks, while other wind blades flew to the shops around them, cutting through the walls and pillars.

This destructive spear technique wrecked the whole street. Many fun-seeking warriors were accidentally injured by the wind blades, and some of them even lost their lives.

“How terrifying! That’s the power of a martial arts legend! Step back, everyone! We are risking our lives if we stay here!”

An elder in the Earth Realm roared, and then he was the first to run away.

There were not many martial arts legends in the whole the Yunwu Commandery. Each one of them was a great martial expert.

Knowing that the man with the long spear was a martial arts legend in the Heaven Realm, everyone was shocked. Then immediately they started to run away.

“A martial arts legend has come here in person to fight with the Ninth Prince! The Ninth Prince has quite the honor!”

“Where on earth did Zhang Tiangui invite so many masters from? It seems that the Ninth Prince doesn’t even have a chance to escape!”

...

The fun-seeking warriors all stood far away.

Only a few confident warriors stood near. They wanted to see if the Ninth Prince could escape from the martial arts legend’s attack.

**SWOOSH!**

Everyone was dazzled. They could only see a beam of sword radiance.

The sword light was so bright that they were all blinded for a while. After they reopened their eyes, they saw that the Ninth Prince was still standing there, while the martial arts legend had become a headless body and was lying on the ground.

**BAM!**

A bloody head dropped down from the air like a ball. It bounced on the ground and rolled to Wang Jinyi’s armpit.

Seeing this, everyone gasped.

A martial arts legend in the Heaven Realm died just like this?

Who killed him?

Nobody believed that Wang Jinyi was killed by Zhang Ruochen. They thought maybe some masters were hiding in the dark.

Only a few warriors with higher cultivation vaguely saw Zhang Ruochen attack just now, and they were greatly astonished.

Because Zhang Ruochen was so fast like wind and thunder that Wang Jinyi lost his head before he could block.

The warriors from the Square Commandery were shocked as well. Wang Jinyi was a relatively strong master, but he could not even block one of Zhang Ruochen’s blows.

“Humph!”

Jin Chuan hummed. On an Ice Plain Wolf, he came out from behind the Square Commandery Prince's back. He stared at Zhang Ruochen from a height and said, "I'll be your opponent."

Jin Chuan stretched out his ten fingers and suddenly bent them into claws.

PHHT!

His ten fingers were enveloped with Genuine Qi. It looked like there were wisps of electricity flowing on his skin. His old hands looked just like electric tiger claws.

Wisps of lightning also appeared on the ground, looking like purple snakes crawling toward Zhang Ruochen.

Jin Chuan was the tenth ranked master in the Square Commandery, and his martial cultivation was much higher than Wang Jinyi's.

Before he had even struck, he had already created a great momentum.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen moved first. He stepped out and turned into a chain of Shadows. In just a second, he was in front of Jin Chuan.

"So fast!"

Jin Chuan's face changed color. He crossed his arms and performed his strongest martial technique, Ghostly Claw.

His hands were like metal claws, striking against the Abyss Ancient Sword with streaks of lightning.

Ghostly Claw was a Spiritual Stage mid-class martial technique. Once it was mastered, the warrior's hands would become harder than iron.

Zhang Ruochen slashed open the lightning on Jin Chuan's claws and ended Jin Chuan's martial technique.

CRACK!

Zhang Ruochen's gaze was ruthless. He suddenly lowered his combat sword and broke Jin Chuan's Celestial Bodyshield.

The sword edge came down right above Jin Chuan's head, it pierced through his chest and all the way to the ground with a loud noise.

A pit with a diameter of five meters appeared on the ground.

**CRACK! CRACK!**

The slates around the pit were all broken and arched, forming a round ashy Qi billow.

“This is... one slash's power... of the Ninth Prince?”

The warriors around were all shocked and frightened.

Even the mounts of the Square Commandery Prince and other warriors from the Square Commandery were startled. They neighed and kept stepping back.

**PHHT!**

Jin Chuan, who was originally sitting on the savage beast's back, cracked in half when a blood line appeared in the middle of his body. He fell into the pit and his organs scattered everywhere.

Even a top ten master in the Square Commandery could not block Zhang Ruochen's one blow and had died in such an ugly way.

“How could Zhang Ruochen be... so powerful?”

The Square Commandery Prince's face changed color greatly. His jaw was set firmly in anger and his hands started to quiver.

The power Zhang Ruochen showed in that blow was beyond the Square Commandery Prince's expectations. He didn't have enough confidence that he would be able to block him.

His hatred towards Zhang Ruochen was completely aroused. The threads of blood in his eyes became even denser.

“All of you can die!”

Zhang Ruochen roared. Then, he shifted all of his Genuine Qi into the Abyss Ancient Sword and activated all the inscriptions

in the sword.

Zhang Ruochen slashed out.

Countless angry Sword Breaths burst out, forming into translucent sword shadows and charged out like a storm.

**BANG! BANG!**

Constant screeches could be heard among the sword Qi.

When everything became quiet again, only the Square Commandery Prince stood alive on the ground. The other warriors from the Square Commandery had all become bodies in a pool of blood. There were at least ten wounds on each of them.

Some of them were even ripped to pieces by the sword Qi and were mere body parts which no one could identify.

The Square Commandery Prince looked even more wretched. His face, shoulders, and legs were all wounded by the sword Qi. His clothes were pierced and he was covered in blood. He had a very disbelieving look on his face.

He had reached the Final State of the Heaven Realm, and he had the power to fight warriors in higher realms. In other words, he was standing on the Peak of the Heaven Realm. How could he be wounded by a junior at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm?

Normally, a warrior who could reach the Final State of the Heaven Realm would at least be a One-realm Fighting Geniuses. Many of them were Two-realm Fighting Geniuses or even Three-realm Fighting Geniuses.

The Square Commandery Prince was already a Two-and-a-half-realm Fighting Genius when he was young.

Before the Square Commandery Prince could calm himself down, Zhang Ruochen appeared beside him with just a movement of his body. And then he slashed again.

After knowing how powerful Zhang Ruochen was, the Square Commandery Prince was a little afraid. He didn't dare to fight with Zhang Ruochen again. So he performed a bodily movement and ran back to the palace.

“Still trying to run? You are a dead man today!”

Zhang Ruochen stepped on a slate and crushed it. He bowed slightly and flashed forward like an arrow. In just a moment, he had caught up with the Square Commandery Prince.

“Dragon in the Sky!”

An illusory image of a flying dragon was formed in the void space after Zhang Ruochen’s blow. It roared and flew toward the Square Commandery Prince.

The Square Commandery Prince sensed the palm power at his back. He turned around immediately and punched out as well.

“Surprise Cloud Palm!”

Two wisps of Genuine Qi from both of his palms integrated together and formed a ball of white light.

The illusory image of the flying dragon crashed into the white light and tore it open, turning it into wisps of light haze.

POW!

The Square Commandery Prince was blown out over 33 meters by the force of Zhang Ruochen’s palm power.

The Square Commandery Prince’s martial cultivation was high enough that he managed to steady himself the moment he fell to the ground. He landed on his tiptoe, turned his body around and kept running towards the palace.

“Zhang Ruochen is too powerful. I’m no match for him.”

The Square Commandery Prince’s arms were numb because of the pain. He knew he could block Zhang Ruochen only by getting back to the palace and activating the Palace-defending Array.

Zhang Tiangui and the Queen were just standing on the city wall, so they clearly saw what happened just now.

The Queen was pale with fear. She shuddered greatly and cold sweat kept dripping from her forehead.

Zhang Tiangui gasped and said, “Activate the Palace-defending Array! Now! We mustn’t allow Zhang Ruochen to

get in!”

“But... the Square Commandery Prince is still out there...”  
Said a master from the Black Market.

Zhang Tiangui replied coldly, “Don’t care about him. If we let Zhang Ruochen in because of him, we will all die.”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen coming nearer and nearer, Zhang Tiangui was also a little afraid. He shouted angrily, “You stupid servant! I told you to activate the Palace-defending Array! Are you deaf? Do it!”

The master sensed Zhang Tiangui’s fury, and he quickly went away and asked the people in charge to activate the Inscription of Array that defended the Palace.

# Chapter 355 - Outside the Palace

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Yunwu City had a total of three walls, named the Major Wall, the Internal Wall, and the Palace Wall.

In terms of defensive power, the Major Wall was the strongest. After hundreds of years' reinforcement, the wall was high and thick. What's more, they had even invited the array masters from the Federation of Inscription to set over 100 Defender Arrays.

Although the Palace Wall, which defended the Palace, was not very high, the number of defending arrays and attacking arrays was more than that of the Major Wall.

Particularly, the Dragon-turtle Holy Armour Array, a Fourth Class array, which was 70% defensive power and 30% attacking.

Once the array was started up, the whole Palace would be covered. Even a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm would find it difficult to break through.

Inside each array tower on the top of the Palace Wall, there was an array master from the Black Market. Under their joint efforts, the Palace-defending Array was finally activated.

**BAM!**

A 333-meter light column shot out from each array tower and pierced through the clouds.

After that, lines of arrays appeared on the four palace walls and eight palace doors and turned into a spiderweb-like light



screen, covering the entire Yunwu City.

Looking down from the palace, the array was like a huge turtle crouching down on the ground. It looked like a big blue dragon was tangled around its neck, with the dragon head resting on its back.

Seeing the Palace-defending Array was activated, Zhang Tiangui finally calmed down.

With the help of the Palace-defending Array, Zhang Ruochen had to withdraw no matter how powerful he was.

It would be better if he tried to break through the Palace-defending Array then Zhang Tiangui could seize the chance to kill him with the help of the array.

“Zhang Ruochen, let’s see what you can do now.” Zhang Tiangui grinned coldly.

The Palace-defending Array has always been strictly controlled by the Commandery Prince. If Zhang Tiangui did not break into the palace with masters from the Square Commandery and kill the Array Master in advance, the Palace would not have fallen so quickly.

A commandery, or even an inferior commandery’s defensive power could be very strong.

The Square Commandery Prince ran to the North Gate and stared at Zhang Tiangui above. He shouted from the distance, “Zhang Tiangui, open the array and let me in! Quick!”

Zhang Tiangui gave him a cold and contemptuous look and said, “Elder Huo, once you were the third master in the Square Commandery. How could even you fail to fight against Zhang Ruochen now? If the young master knew of this, he will be very disappointed.”

The Square Commandery Prince’s name was Huo Tianshu. Since he was very powerful in the Black Market of Omen Ridge, he was made an Elder.

Hearing Zhang Tiangui’s words, Square Commandery Prince’s heart sank.

Square Commandery Prince never liked Zhang Tiangui. He thought his cultivation was much higher than Zhang Tiangui's, so he did not want to listen to him.

Just because of this, they looked to be quite friendly with each other on the surface, but they both bore grudges in private.

The Square Commandery Prince did not expect Zhang Tiangui to revenge him by blocking him outside the Palace-defending Array at such a crucial moment.

Zhang Ruochen also arrived at the gate. He stopped behind the Square Commandery Prince and said, with blood dripping down his sword, "Where are you going now, Square Commandery Prince?"

The Square Commandery Prince looked back at Zhang Ruochen. He was only a young man about 20 years old. But, at this moment, in the Square Commandery Prince's eyes, he was more like a god of death gradually approaching.

"Zhang Tiangui! You're doing me harm on purpose!"

The Square Commandery Prince gnashed his teeth together in anger. He glanced at Zhang Tiangui coldly and said, "If the young master knows this, he won't pardon you!"

Zhang Tiangui sneered. He thought to himself, the Square Commandery Prince may be somebody in Omen Ridge, but he was nothing the moment he stepped out of Omen Ridge. A person like Di Yi would never care about him.

Zhang Tiangui believed that, even if Di Yi knew this, he would not say anything. After all, he was much more valuable than the Square Commandery Prince.

Zhang Tiangui said loudly, "Elder Huo, you are a famous Martial Arts master, and Zhang Ruochen is no match for you. I think you'd better give full play to your remarkable skills and slaughter Zhang Ruochen. At that time, I'll definitely ask the young master to record your meritorious deed."

The Square Commandery Prince was furious. He did not want to talk to Zhang Tiangui anymore, so he turned around and stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Indeed, Zhang Tiangui was a sinister man but his words made sense. The Square Commandery Prince thought that if he could kill Zhang Ruochen, he would definitely receive great credit.

He was in the Final State of the Heaven Realm, while Zhang Ruochen had just entered the Heaven Realm. If he risked his life, there might be a chance for him to kill Zhang Ruochen.

With his will growing stronger and stronger, the vigor coming out of the Square Commandery Prince also grew stronger. The bronze halberd on his back shivered greatly, shattered the cloth and flew into his hands.

“Conqueror Halberd!”

Holding the halberd with both hands, the Square Commandery Prince stood there with his legs spread apart. Suddenly, he waved the halberd and the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi stirred. He performed an opening posture as if the halberd and himself were combined together.

POW!

One end of the Conqueror Halberd struck on the ground. It made a loud noise and left deep cracks on the ground.

This halberd was a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms. It had been the weapon of the Square Commandery Prince for decades, by which countless famous masters were killed.

The Square Commandery Prince’s Genuine Qi was very profound, which activated the Inscriptions of the Fire Series in the Conqueror Halberd. The halberd was covered with fire immediately and an illusory image of the Fire Battle Lord in armor was formed.

“Birds Reaching the Clouds!”

This martial technique was called the Wind and Cloud Halberd Skill, which was a Spiritual Stage Superior class martial technique.

This halberd skill contained 36 moves. Once it was practiced to succeed, the warrior could split rivers and mountains and

pierce the clouds and sky. It was one of the most important martial Mysteriums in the Square Commandery.

But the Square Commandery only owned 22 moves. In other words, this martial Mysterium was incomplete, which made it difficult for the warrior to master the skill.

Of course, even though it was incomplete, when it was performed by a master like the Square Commandery Prince, its power was still startling.

One blow turned into a fire cloud and came down from above.

A heat wave blew in across his face.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge. Instead, he rushed forward.

Blue Genuine Qi poured out of his body and formed a Celestial Bodysield around him. He dashed through the fire cloud and slashed toward the Square Commandery Prince's wrist.

The Square Commandery Prince did not expect Zhang Ruochen's sword technique would be so profound. It was only one simple slash, but his Spiritual Stage Superior class halberd technique was broken.

This sword technique turned the foul and rotten into the rare and ethereal.

The Square Commandery Prince immediately changed his move. He turned his arm and stabbed again. The flames condensed into one point and came right toward Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Zhang Ruochen moved his feet and appeared on the left side of the Square Commandery Prince. He slammed on the Square Commandery Prince's head with his palm.

The Square Commandery Prince sensed palm strength rushing toward him so he blocked with his halberd.

POW!

The Square Commandery Prince retreated seven steps because of the strike. Then, Zhang Ruochen ran forward again. He

pinched his right thumb into a Finger Sword and pointed toward the front.

A cold blue Sword Wave flew out of his fingertip.

POW!

The Sword Wave struck precisely on the Square Commandery Prince. But it was blocked by Square Commandery Prince's Celestial Bodyshield.

Square Commandery Prince was not hurt, but he retreated another step.

Zhang Ruochen did not give the Square Commandery Prince any chance to rest. Immediately, he slashed out the second Sword Wave. The Square Commandery Prince's Celestial Bodyshield was finally broken, and the Sword Wave struck on the Square Commandery Prince's body.

The Square Commandery Prince grunted. His robe at the front of his chest was torn apart by the sword Qi. The Square Commandery Prince himself was also badly wounded. White ribs could be seen through his bloody chest.

POW!

The Square Commandery Prince fell on the ground, but he refused to acknowledge his defeat. So he threw his Conqueror Halberd at Zhang Ruochen like an arrow.

At the same time, he released his Martial Soul and mobilized the Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth. Above him, a huge fire vortex formed.

POW!

Zhang Ruochen slashed and hit the Conqueror Halberd away.

Then, he struck out another Sword Wave and turned it into a bowl-sized sword Qi light column, attacking right at the Square Commandery Prince who was currently pulling together his power.

The Square Commandery Prince's Martial Soul pushed with both hands and struck out with the huge fire vortex.

In just a second, Zhang Ruochen's Sword Wave was devoured by the fire vortex.

The fire vortex kept rotating and became bigger and bigger. It reached a diameter of 20 meters then it blew up the slates on the ground and melted them into lava.

The lava turned into a red river. The vortex continued to move and make popping noises.

“Haha! Zhang Ruochen, now you see the difference between the Heaven Realm warriors who have the Martial Soul and those who haven't. I can move the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi through the Martial Soul. I am a martial arts legend, and you are just a little brat! You'll die like a dog if you fight against me!”

The Square Commandery Prince laughed wildly, believing that he was sure to win.

The power of Martial Soul couldn't be stopped by warriors who didn't have Martial Soul.

“You can use the power of Martial Soul, do you think I cannot?”

Zhang Ruochen also released his Martial Soul. A shadow hung over his head and started to mobilize the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. What's more, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul even stole the Spiritual Qi from the Square Commandery Prince's Martial Soul.

The Square Commandery Prince's face changed color greatly. He thought to himself,

“How can this be? You've just reached the Heaven Realm, there's no way for you to have Martial Soul as well!”

The Square Commandery Prince had practiced 30 years in the Heaven Realm to get his Martial Soul. But Zhang Ruochen had just reached the Heaven Realm, so theoretically, he just could not have the Martial Soul.

Besides, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was even more powerful than his.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen releasing his Martial Soul, Zhang Tiangui was almost out of his mind with envy. He thought, “Zhang Ruochen has got the Martial Soul! It... it can't be! Is the gap between us this big?”

Zhang Tiangui had always been called the top genius, so he was very proud and looked down on everyone, including those warriors who had higher cultivation.

But now, his pride and confidence were completely smashed by Zhang Ruochen.

His talent and Zhang Ruochen's talent were like a firefly and a star. He was not even qualified to lick Zhang Ruochen's shoes.

# Chapter 356 - Strongly Overwhelmed

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul in his last lifetime had been much stronger than that of warriors at the Completion of Heaven Realm. The three times he had summoned the Chord of Gods had further improved his Martial Soul and thus it was much stronger than Square Commandery Prince's.

The more powerful the soul was, the more Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi it could control, and the more formidable the power it demonstrated was.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen only used one-tenth of the power of his Martial Soul. Using the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi he formed into a 20-meter huge sword.

**SWOOSH!**

The sword chopped down. The fire vortex was torn apart and it fell above the Square Commandery Prince's head. Before the sword cut down, the sword Qi had already riven the ground below him, leaving a broken sword path.

“No...”

The Square Commandery Prince roared with dissatisfaction.

The marvelous sword radiance swallowed the Square Commandery Prince and enveloped him in the light.

After a while, the sword radiance vanished.

Everyone looked over and found that the Square Commandery Prince's Body of Martial Arts had been severed by the furious sword Qi and only a mangled body remained.



A dominator in the Martial Arts, the once Commandery Prince, died... in this way?

In the distance, many warriors gasped. They were all shocked by Zhang Ruochen's strike could not help but tremble.

They were familiar with the Square Commandery Prince. He was a powerful martial arts legend in the Heaven Realm and he was even stronger than the top master of Yunwu Commandery.

But even for a powerful person like this, there was no escape. And finally, he was killed by the sword of the Ninth Prince.

How mighty he was!

"His... his power has grown so much..." In the crowd, Lin Chenyu looked at Zhang Ruochen, who was standing below the gate with speechless shock.

Pulling Lin Ningshan out of the crowd, Lin Chenyu approached Zhang Ruochen.

With any hesitation, he knelt in front of Zhang Ruochen. With a faint voice he cried and said, "Cousin, the people of the Lin clan were all killed by Zhang Tiangui, even our grandfather was not spared, please avenge him."

Lin Chenyu was cunning. Domestic affection was not actually important to him. The most important thing in his heart was to eliminate Zhang Tiangui.

If Zhang Tiangui could not be killed, his future would very difficult.

At this time, who had the ability to kill Zhang Tiangui?

Of course, that person was Zhang Ruochen.

The power Zhang Ruochen demonstrated just now was much more powerful than that of Zhang Tiangui's.

Lin Chenyu was also a man who was very good at judging the situation and making appropriate decisions. When Zhang Ruochen was sick and weak, he would never stretch out his hand to help him, in fact, he would trample over him.

However, after Zhang Ruochen returned more powerful, he

also didn't hesitate to close their distance again. Even if he had to kneel to Zhang Ruochen, he wouldn't furrow his brows.

You could not ask a really mean person for more.

Lin Chenyu gazed at Lin Ningshan and said, "Ningshan, quickly kneel and beg our cousin, only cousin has the power to avenge us now."

Lin Ningshan sighed and gazed deeply at Zhang Ruochen. She could not see his expression, she could only feel a great power of Martial Arts emanating from him, which was sharper than other martial arts legends.

Not so long ago, this cousin had stood by her side, was concerned about her, cared for her, and loved her. But at that time she was too focused on chasing fame and had not attached much importance to him.

Now, all that had gone with the wind. The man standing in front of her had become an undefeated man.

At the urging of Lin Chenyu, Lin Ningshan finally knelt down. As she thought of the bodies of her family and the blood that flowed into the street, tears came to her eyes. She begged, "Cousin, please avenge grandfather. You know you were his favorite child."

Zhang Ruochen did not glance at Lin Chenyu and Lin Ningshan, he was staring at Zhang Tiangui who was standing on the gate. He said, "You don't need to beg me, I will definitely take revenge."

Lin Chenyu felt happy.

It was impossible for Zhang Tiangui to escape.

But he still feared that Zhang Ruochen would not kill Zhang Tiangui because their brotherhood, so he immediately said, "Cousin, you have to kill him. According to what I know, he is not the Commandery Prince's son, but a bastard of the Queen and another man."

Lin Chenyu had been Zhang Tiangui's servant, so he knew many of Zhang Tiangui's secrets. However, what he just said was only a conjecture.

He could not be sure whether Zhang Tiangui was the son of the Yunwu Commandery Prince or not. He just said this to Zhang Ruochen with an intention to irritate him, so that he could use Zhang Ruochen's hand to completely destroy Zhang Tiangui.

However, he had not thought that Zhang Ruochen's eyes would suddenly become icy cold because of what he said.

CLAP!

Zhang Ruochen slapped Lin Chenyu and sent him flying. A moment later he landed on the ground and tumbled like a dog.

Zhang Ruochen and Zhang Shaochu did not want to expose the secret, because they wanted to retain dignity for the Yunwu Commandery Prince.

But they did not expect for the scandal to be revealed by Lin Chenyu. How could Zhang Ruochen forgive him?

Lin Chenyu did not only dishonor the Yunwu Commandery Prince but also trampled on his dignity.

Zhang Ruochen would rather bear the notoriety of killing a brother than to release that secret.

Zhang Ruochen's slap was extremely cruel and left a bloody handprint on Lin Chenyu's face. Even his cheekbones caved from the strike.

"Cou... cousin, forgive me. I shouldn't have said this out loud..." Lin Chenyu realized his fault and he immediately begged for mercy while endlessly kowtowing.

After hearing what he said, Zhang Ruochen became more furious. He slapped Lin Chenyu again and sent him crashing down to the ground, stunned.

"Brother... brother..."

Lin Ningshan rushed to Lin Chenyu and put out her finger to check his breath. She was relieved after feeling Lin Chenyu's breath, and she knew that Zhang Ruochen had spared her brother's life.

Naturally, the other warriors heard what Lin Chenyu said earlier.

“Zhang Tiangui is not the Yunwu Commandery Prince’s son, is this for real?”

“It’s not a big deal. I guessed it long ago! Zhang Tiangui killed all the members of the Royal Family as soon he became the Commandery Prince. It would be really strange if he was the son of the Yunwu Commandery Prince.”

...

Above the gate, Zhang Tiangui was livid with rage. If he was not afraid of Zhang Ruochen, he would have rushed out to kill Lin Chenyu.

But very quickly, he felt a cold gaze staring at him as if they wanted to kill him just by looking at him.

It was Zhang Ruochen.

What?

Did he want to contend against the Palace-defensing Array just by himself?

Step by step, Zhang Ruochen walked toward the palace. Each step he took enhanced his momentum, “Zhang Tiangui, when you killed father, did you ever think there would be retribution?”

“Haha! Zhang Ruochen, what are you? I don’t need your remarks and criticisms.” Since Zhang Tiangui held a Palace-defensing Array, he did not fear Zhang Ruochen at all.

After seeing the distance between Zhang Ruochen and the palace gate was less than 33 meters, Zhang Tiangui revealed his joy and immediately ordered Array Masters to start the attacking inscription of the Palace-defensing Array.

“Swoosh!”

Driven by Array Masters, illusory images of Spiritual Qi poured from the formation, condensing into the giant body of a Blue Dragon. A single dragon claw, which was more than 20

meters long, lifted from the array and punched down toward Zhang Ruochen.

The power of this attack had far exceeded the strongest power of the Square Commandery Prince.

Only the array could demonstrate such formidable power!

“Nine-folds of Elephant Power!”

Zhang Ruochen struck out nine handprints in a row, which formed a giant palm that was over 20 meters long. It burst out a nine-fold power of attack.

He contended with the Palace-defensing Array with his own strength.

BOOM!

The two forces collided. It seemed the entire palace trembled.

Zhang Ruochen took a slight step back then he rushed toward the array.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are killing yourself. The formation only used a tenth of its strength. Now, it will activate all its power to completely crush you.”

Zhang Tiangui was very confident of the array. Never mind a Zhang Ruochen, even a general warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm would not prevail.

“You have no more chances!”

Releasing the Space Domain, Zhang Ruochen waved an arm and created a Space Crack.

In a flash, a dark and deep crack appeared on the array, which was both like a mouth of a monster and an eye of hell.

“Swoosh!”

The Space Crack madly devoured the power of the array.

When it vanished, a large hole that was seven or eight meters in diameter appeared on the Palace-defensing Array. With a flash, Zhang Ruochen flew out of it and rushed into the array.

After reaching the Heaven Realm, Zhang Ruochen’s power of space had also increased a lot. He just displayed a little bit of

its power.

BAM!

Zhang Ruochen struck out and broke the palace gate into pieces.

After rushing through the gate, Zhang Ruochen took off and landed on the top of the palace. His eyes, like burning flames, were staring at Zhang Tiangui and the Queen, both of whom were not far away.

At this moment, Zhang Tiangui and the Queen still looked stunned.

They did not understand what had just happened.

How can Zhang Ruochen have gotten through the barriers before the true power of the array erupted?

“A tooth for a tooth and an eye for an eye. The minister has already been killed by me. What last words do you need to say?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“You... you actually killed... killed him...”

When the Queen saw Zhang Ruochen, she felt like the sky was falling down. Fear covered her eyes and she kept retreating.

“Swoosh!”

Without hesitation, Zhang Ruochen waved his hand. A sword Qi flew out and passed through the neck of the Queen, leaving a bloody line.

A moment later, the Queen’s head flew up and a long bead of blood rushed from her neck. Blood splattered on Zhang Tiangui’s face.

# Chapter 357 - Encountering a Warrior in Fish-Draagon Realm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Once upon a time, Zhang Tiangui wanted to have a fight with Zhang Ruochen, in which he would defeat Zhang Ruochen and regain his reputation as the first genius of Omen Ridge with his formidable power.

But now that he was truly standing with Zhang Ruochen. The powerful pressure emanating from Zhang Ruochen almost crushed him.

Although he had powerful Martial Arts willpower, he was still terrified.

It was not until this moment did he really understand the huge gap between Zhang Ruochen and himself. Compared with Zhang Ruochen, his so-called talent was nothing.

Zhang Tiangui completely ignored the dead Queen who was lying in blood. Dead was dead, there was no need to look at a dead person. He pretended to be calm and asked, “Zhang Ruochen, how did you escape from Di Yi’s siege?”

Zhang Tiangui thought Di Yi was unfathomable. Even if Zhang Ruochen was powerful, Zhang Tiangui still did not believe that Zhang Ruochen could defeat Di Yi.

Zhang Ruochen did not want to say anything to Zhang Tiangui. He had determined to kill Zhang Tiangui and would not give him any chance to survive.

After seeing Zhang Ruochen's murderous feeling, Zhang Tiangui's heart sank and he immediately turned around to run.

“Do you think you can escape?”

Zhang Ruochen's body moved. It turned into a Shadow, catching up with Zhang Tiangui in an instant and appearing behind him.

POW!

Zhang Ruochen stretched out his palm. The dragon shadow appeared and it struck Zhang Tiangui on the back.

Zhang Tiangui immediately infused Genuine Qi into a Jade Amulet. It formed a light screen to envelop him and tried to resist Zhang Ruochen's handprint.

POW!

The light screen was shattered and turned into strands of light spots.

The handprint sent Zhang Tiangui flying out. A huge bloody handprint was left on his back.

“Argh!”

Zhang Tiangui spat out blood mixed with some pieces of flesh. It seemed like his internal organs had all been shattered by the palm power.

Zhang Tiangui took a Healing Pill while he was lying on the ground. Then, he slowly got up.

However, he had already suffered internal injuries. So he couldn't use any power in his current state even with the help of the Healing Pill. Now, even an ordinary person could easily defeat him with only a punch.

Zhang Ruochen walked over step by step, his eyes were filled with an extremely strong murderous intent.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are too arrogant. Do you really think that I will die today?”

Zhang Tiangui laughed and spared a glance over Zhang Ruochen's shoulders.



A single-armed old man suddenly appeared nearly ten meters behind Zhang Ruochen. He was standing in the air. The man had a head of white hair which was separated down the middle where a wrinkled old face looked out.

Zhang Ruochen naturally felt the aura of the horrific power from behind him. That kind of feeling did not feel like a man was standing behind him, rather, it was like a thousand-year-old ghost was standing behind him.

In just an instant, the cold air from behind him almost froze Zhang Ruochen's entire body.

Instinctively, Zhang Ruochen immediately mobilized his Genuine Qi to form a giant light blue ball and wrapped himself in it.

The Genuine Qi practiced by Zhang Ruochen was Blue Genuine Qi. The Celestial Bodyshield which was made from it had robust defensive power. It was even harder to destroy the shield than to destroy a wall.

“Boom!”

In a flash, the one-armed man struck out with his palm.

The palm, like a five-fingered mountain, smashed the light ball of Genuine Qi and reached to Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Just as the palm dropped down, a golden light rushed from Zhang Ruochen's heart.

In the light, an audible dragon's roar appeared and a powerful force burst forth, defusing the power of that elder.

Even so, that great impact force still sent Zhang Ruochen flying away. He broke a tower and smashed into the ruins of the collapsed wall.

“Who are you?”

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the shambles and dusted himself down. He still stood above the wall and gazed at the one-armed elder.

An incredible look appeared on Zhang Tiangui's face as he saw Zhang Ruochen survive the attack of the one-armed man.

He said, “Zhang Ruochen, the man standing in front of you is the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club, Hua Qingye. Do you think you have the opportunity to kill me today as Predecessor Hua is here?”

Zhang Tiangui has always been arrogant, even a dominator of Martial Arts like the Square Commandery Prince was looked down on by him. However, he dared not to act presumptuously in front of Hua Qingye.

Because Hua Qingye was an existence that had surpassed Martial Arts. His cultivation had already reached the Fish-dragon Realm.

Although Zhang Tiangui had been the first genius of Omen Ridge, he might not be able to break through the Fish-dragon Realm with his talent.

Throughout the entire 36 commanderies of Omen Ridge, there were less than 20 warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm. Each of them was honored by the martial arts legends in the Heaven Realm. A warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm was a real master, a superior among superiors.

There were three Half-Saints in Omen Ridge. They were Half-Saint Kongkong in the School of the Martial Market, Half-Saint Hanjue in the Yuntai Suzerain, and Half-Saint Lingxi in the Tai Qing Palace.

However, Half-Saints were not in Omen Ridge most of the time. They went to the battlefields of Primitive World to open up new territories for human beings. They stayed in the Suzerain for only a little time. Instead of intervening in struggles of major forces, they preferred to seclude themselves for refining and comprehending the Holy Road.

Therefore, warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm were the most powerful in Omen Ridge. They dominated the fate of all warriors here.

Di Yi highly valued Yunwu Commandery. He wanted to unify the 36 commanderies in Omen Ridge and establish a superior class commandery which would be under the control of the

Black Market. And the commandery would be based on the foundation of Yunwu Commandery.

So, he had dispatched Hua Qingye to suppress Yunwu Commandery, in case the School of the Martial Market counter-attacked.

However, even Hua Qingye did not think that Zhang Ruochen would arrive before the arrival of those masters of School of the Martial Market.

**SWOOSH!**

Hua Qingye flew down from above. He stepped onto the ground and stared at Zhang Ruochen coldly, “You can ward off my palm, there must be a splendid amulet treasure on your body.”

An ordinary amulet treasure could not stop a strike of a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm. It must be a top-notch amulet treasure which was worth more than millions of Spiritual Crystals that had such a defensive power.

The amulet treasure of Zhang Ruochen was the Dragon Pearl in his heart.

After knowing the old man’s identity, Zhang Ruochen said with a serious expression, “You have reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.”

“You can see through my realm, indeed you are a genius who can be the top 100 in the Earth Board.”

Slightly lifting eyes and exposing white teeth, Hua Qingye grimly smiled and said, “Do you think I can’t kill you by my power in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm? The gap between the Fish-dragon Realm and the Heaven Realm can’t be compensated by your talent.”

Never mind Zhang Ruochen, even if a legendary genius with nine tricks encountered a master in the Fish-dragon Realm at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm, he would be killed with no power to counterattack.

Moreover, Hua Qingye had great talent to be able to reach the Fish-dragon Realm. He was not an ordinary warrior.

Zhang Ruochen had another trump card, the Sarira. As long as he unlocked the first seal, he would be able to obtain the power of a warrior in Fish-dragon Realm, which was enough to kill Hua Qingye.

But Zhang Ruochen did not want to waste the power of the first seal of the Sarira to deal with Hua Qingye. The power could be used to save his life, it was very valuable to him. So the power would never be used unless there was no other way.

“I’ll have to use the power of Martial Soul!”

After reaching the Heaven Realm, he had never used all of the power of his Martial Soul. And now, it was time to show his strength.

Zhang Tiangui did not know what Zhang Ruochen was thinking, and he thought that Zhang Ruochen was thinking about how to escape. With a joking smile on face, he said, “Zhang Ruochen, it’s too late to escape! Your power that you’re so proud of is even weaker than an ant in front of Predecessor Hua.”

Zhang Ruochen did not talk nonsense and directly released his Martial Soul.

SWISH!

The shadow of the soul stood behind Zhang Ruochen and it emitted a blue light. The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi gathered above Zhang Ruochen’s head and condensed into a blue cloud.

Hua Qingye shook head and said with a smirk, “It is useless, even if you have practiced the Martial Soul. The strength of a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm is not something you can imagine. Let alone you’re just at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. You will never be my match even if you reached the Completion of Heaven Realm.”

Previously, Hua Qingye had seen that Zhang Ruochen using the powerful force of Martial Soul to kill the Square Commandery Prince. So he had some understanding of his power.

Even so, Hua Qingye still looked down on Zhang Ruochen. The battle between Zhang Ruochen and the Square Commandery Prince was just like a horseplay of children to him.

But he did not know that the power of Martial Soul that Zhang Ruochen used against the Square Commandery Prince was only a tenth of what he had.

Hua Qingye also did not want to say anything more. He suddenly charged out, his speed so fast that it could not be captured by naked eyes. It seemed like it was just a moment before he came to Zhang Ruochen and attacked Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul had perceived Hua Qingye's trick in advance. It immediately mobilized Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. A sword was formed and it chopped toward Hua Qingye.

POW!

With just one casual strike, Hua Qingye shattered the spiritual sword with one squeeze on his palm and continued to strike toward Zhang Ruochen's head.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen quickly retreated backward and escaped the attack.

CLASH!

Zhang Ruochen condensed all of the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi into the Abyss Ancient Sword. Then, he made an attack to stab the belly of Hua Qingye.

This attack not only contained the power of himself but also contained the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi which was summoned by his Martial Soul. The power in it had already exceeded the fighting strength of a warrior in the Heaven Realm.

(To be continued...)

# Chapter 358 - The Duel with Hua Qingye

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The power of Zhang Ruochen's attack had almost exceeded the domain of Martial Arts, reaching another realm.

Streams of air were forced back by the sword Qi, forming a diamond-shaped Qi billow. It emanated a red flame.

Hua Qingye gasped and closed his five fingers. He gathered a cloud of Genuine Qi and held back Zhang Ruochen's sword.

His arm twisted and dismantled the power gathered on the sword. At the same time, he attacked Zhang Ruochen with his palm again.

Zhang Ruochen kicked his legs and jumped up, avoiding Hua Qingye's power.

**SWOOSH!**

Zhang Ruochen rapidly backed off far away, landing on the roof of a palace.

At this very moment, he sent out the Abyss Ancient Sword. Standing more than 33 meters away, he used Sword Defending Technique and continuously attacked Hua Qingye.

Zhang Ruochen knew very well that it was not good for him to fight with Hua Qingye at close range. Because his speed was far less than Hua Qingye's, he could only use the power of Heart Integrated into Sword and attack from a distance.

On the Abyss Ancient Sword, there was Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. Every sword attack had giant power. Even if the

sword Qi it emitted could leave terrific sword marks in the Palace.

The duel between Zhang Ruochen and Hua Qingye shattered the magnificent Palace.

Zhang Ruochen actually can exchange blows with Hua Qingye? How... how is this possible...

Zhang Tiangui was not just shocked. He was even a bit hopeless.

Zhang Ruochen was like a bottomless hole. No one knew that how deep he was. The more powerful the warrior he met, the more powerful the strength he showed.

“The Heart Integrated into Sword realm is nothing. Young man, you are too still greatly lacking.”

Hua Qingye roared loudly and sent the Abyss Ancient Sword flying out with one palm. He flew up from the palace wall and shot above Zhang Ruochen's head before stepping down with a foot.

Zhang Ruochen was slightly shocked. He immediately raised his arms and gathered the power in every piece of muscle and bone, striking upward with both his palms.

The Martial Soul that stood behind Zhang Ruochen made the same movements as Zhang Ruochen, striking upward with both his palms.

The naked eye could not see that clouds of Spiritual Qi gushed out of the ground and merged with his Martial Soul. They slowly increased the power of his Martial Soul, turning it into a giant man.

**BANG!**

As Hua Qingye landed, the roof of the palace split open and Zhang Ruochen fell down.

**BANG!**

Zhang Ruochen only felt that there was a mountain crashing down on his head. Within his field of vision, the entire world violently shook once.

When he recovered, he found out that his body below the waist was buried under the ground. His whole body seemed to have fallen apart, extreme pain shot through his body.

The entire ground of the temple cracked, the wall collapsed and the tiles shattered. Even the copper pillars were shaking, like they were going to fall.

CRACK!

Hua Qingye stood on the shattered tile. He walked and approached Zhang Ruochen. One arm was enveloped by Genuine Qi and gathered freezing air. His five fingers were like sharp metal claws.

He coldly stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Young man, you are indeed very incredible and much more powerful than those legendary geniuses. You have actually managed to fight with me for 11 moves with your cultivation in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.”

While Zhang Ruochen gathered his power, he coldly replied, “You think too highly of me!”

Hua Qingye said, “Your Martial Soul is very powerful and much more powerful than mine. It is just because that your cultivation is too weak, so you are defeated by me. If you can reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm and apply the power of Martial Soul, I’m afraid that I can’t defeat you even within 100 moves. What secret are you hiding? If you tell me, I may spare your life.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “I don’t have any secret.”

Hua Qingye’s face darkened. He said, “If you don’t have a secret, how could you succeed in practicing Heart Integrated into Sword? If you don’t have a secret, how can you have such a powerful Martial Soul? Young man, you have to be honest in front of me. Open the door, or I will open it for you.”

To have such terrific strength in the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm, Zhang Ruochen was completely been beyond Hua Qingye’s knowledge.

Zhang Ruochen must have a big secret.



Hua Qingye had already been in the Fish-dragon Realm for 20 years. Although his cultivation was improving, there was no sign of him reaching the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

He knew that his potential had already been exhausted and could not be improved in his life. Unless... he got some good luck.

Obviously, this good luck was in front of him, it was on Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Well! If you really want to know, I'm not saying that I can't tell you, but I have one condition."

"What condition?"

Hua Qingye was so excited. His old eyes were shining. He could not help taking a step forward.

WHEW!

At this very moment, the Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of the temple and turned into a flying streak of light, attacking toward the center of Hua Qingye's back.

Hua Qingye's reaction speed was amazing. In just a brief moment, he instantly moved sideways and stretched out two fingers, pinching the Abyss Ancient Sword.

The Abyss Ancient Sword kept shaking and making sword sounds. However, it could not break loose from Hua Qingye's two fingers.

Zhang Ruochen sighed in his heart. Hua Qingye's martial cultivation was too high and his reaction speed was also too fast. He had secretly regulated the Sword Comprehension to control the Abyss Ancient Sword but there was no success in this attack.

In this case, even if he applied the Space Crack, it would be difficult to hurt this old man.

What should he do? Did he really need to undo the first seal of Sarira?

“You want to secretly attack me, young man, you are too young! When I did that, your father was still a suckling babe.”

Hua Qingye’s fingers turned and he pinched the hilt of the Abyss Ancient Sword. He spared it a glance and sighed,

“What a good sword. It should be a Holy Sword.

Unfortunately, it’s already been broken, and now it can only be a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms. Zhang Ruochen, I’ll give you one last chance. If you still don’t tell me, I can only use this broken sword to cut open your flesh and blood piece by piece and slowly look for the answer.”

“If you do that, you can’t possibly find out my secret.”

Zhang Ruochen said again, “I’ll say it again, if you comply with one of my requests, I can tell you why I have such a powerful Martial Soul. And... for you, this should be an opportunity.”

“Go ahead!”

Hua Qingye was on the alert and was worried that Zhang Ruochen would secretly attack him again.

Zhang Ruochen said, “My request is that you have to help me kill Zhang Tiangui.”

“Kill Zhang Tiangui...”

Hua Qingye spared a glance at Zhang Ruochen. Suddenly, he laughed out loud and became serious. He said, “Young man, you want to use me? Do you think that I am so easily fooled?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “If you think that I am fooling you, then I have nothing to say. However, you have to think clearly. I have fallen into your hands, you just need to raise one hand to kill me. I have no reason to exercise my wits for my personal gain with you. Moreover, with my talent, I have a future. If I could survive, why would I choose to die?”

Hua Qingye said, “Zhang Tiangui is the favorite man of the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall. If I kill him, am I not setting myself against the Black Market?”

“The young master of Black Market Excellence Hall? Di Yi? Don’t you know? I have dug out his Demon’s Heart. He was

badly injured and has escaped Omen Ridge. Maybe he has already died on the way,” Zhang Ruochen said.

“It’s impossible, Di Yi is so powerful. How could you be able to hurt him so severely?” Hua Qingye said.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “If I haven’t defeated Di Yi, how could I leave Tongming River and be here? Moreover, with the strength I just showed you, am I not more powerful than Di Yi?”

Hua Qingye was a bit shocked and said to himself.

Yes, Zhang Ruochen was indeed extremely powerful. If Di Yi had a duel with him, it was not possible for him to win at all.

Hua Qingye had always been told that Di Yi was the most powerful of God’s favored sons among his peers and no one could possibly be his opponent. So, he had ignored Zhang Ruochen’s strength.

When he realised it, he discovered that with the strength Zhang Ruochen just showed, Di Yi alone, or even ten Di Yi together, were not a match for Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen’s secret was a fatal temptation for Hua Qingye.

If he could find out the secret, he could have a meteoric rise. He even could become Half-Saint in future and didn’t need to do things according to Di Yi’s attitude.

One of Hua Qingye arms had been chopped off by the Purple Wind Emissary. So, he had always held a grudge against Di Yi and the Seven Kills Emissaries. It’s just that his strength was far less than the Purple Wind Emissary’s. So he could only swallow the insult and humiliation silently and had to grovel to a junior like Di Yi, like a dog.

Now, since Zhang Ruochen had already hurt Di Yi badly, and it’s likely that Di Yi had already left Omen Ridge, Hua Qingye’s last concern had gone.

Zhang Tiangui, without Di Yi’s protection, was nothing in Hua Qingye’s eyes. Hua Qingye could kill him with just one move.

Of course, Hua Qingye did not totally believe what Zhang Ruochen had said. He gave a dark smile and said, “Zhang Ruochen, if you dare to play tricks on me, do you know what you’ll end up with?”

“I certainly do,” Zhang Ruochen said.

At this very moment, Zhang Tiangui quickly walked in. Seeing Zhang Ruoche, who had been struck to the ground, he was very excited and fawningly said, “Senior Hua is definitely a master in the Fish-dragon Realm. Before you, Zhang Ruochen is a stink bug that can be easily pinched to death.”

Hua Qingye gently turned around and stared at Zhang Tiangui. There was a strange smile on his ferocious old face.

# Chapter 359 - Break the Seal

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“That’s right. It is indeed very easy for me to kill Zhang Ruochen. Similarly, it is even easier for me to kill you,” Hua Qingye said.

Upon seeing Hua Qingye’s cold eyes, Zhang Tiangui felt an indescribable chill. Drops of cold sweat poured out of the center of his back. He stopped walking, not daring to move forward. He said, “Predecessor Hua... why do you say that?”

Hua Qingye grinned, showing a mouthful of yellow teeth. He said, with a smile, “Zhang Ruochen made a deal with me that if I could kill you, he would tell me his secret. Should I trust him? Hoho!”

Zhang Tiangui’s whole body went stiff like he was falling into an ice hole. He hastily said, “Predecessor Hua, Zhang Ruochen is full of craft and cunning, you must never believe his words. It’s best for you to kill him now. Then bring his head to the young master to take the credit. Young master will definitely give you a great reward.”

Hua Qingye frowned, showing a contemplative expression.

Zhang Ruochen did not give Hua Qingye time to think and said, “Unfortunately, Di Yi has already been injured badly and has escaped Omen Ridge. Even if he can survive, given his identity, he will never come to such a remote and insignificant place like Omen Ridge. Hua Qingye, you’d better think clearly before you make your decision. Of course, you can also keep waiting. What happened in Tongming River will be known to Yunwu City of Yunwu Commandery in five days at most. At that time, it’s not too late to decide who you are going to kill.”

Zhang Tiangui said hurriedly, “I can’t wait. Zhang Ruochen is the disciple of Lei Jing, Hall Master of Silver Gowned Elder’s Hall. Since Zhang Ruochen is in Yunwu City, Lei Jing must be here soon.”

Upon hearing Lei Jing’s name, Hua Qingye’s face changed a little bit.

Although he and Lei Jing were both in the Fish-dragon Realm, he was at the first change, and Lei Jing had reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm 50 years ago. His current realm was even more terrifying and was far beyond Hua Qingye’s.

Moreover, he had lost one arm now and his strength has declined greatly. How could he defeat Lei Jing at his prime?

Zhang Ruochen saw that Hua Qingye seemed to be persuaded by Zhang Tiangui’s words, so he kept pushing and said, “In order to show my sincerity, I can tell you the source of my secret in advance.”

“What source?”

Hua Qingye was moved and asked quickly.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “I can reach the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm in three years. And I have reached the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, of course, all these are because I had a great adventure.”

Upon hearing this, even Zhang Tiangui, let alone Hua Qingye, was attracted by Zhang Ruochen’s words. He really wanted to know what happened next.

Zhang Ruochen calmly continued, “Three years ago, I found an ancient cave of the Middle Ancient Times in Omen Ridge by accident and received treasures from a saint monk. I was very weak at that time and didn’t get very deep into the ancient cave. I swallowed a strange white fruit, and left in a hurry. Afterward, I don’t know what happened, my martial cultivation improved greatly. Even my physical quality also seemed to be refreshed by the strange fruit. I actually easily reached the Heart Integrated into Sword.”

Before Zhang Ruochen could finish talking, Hua Qingye's eyes revealed a feverish glare. He said hurriedly, "Is it possible that what you swallowed was the legendary saint fruit of Buddhism, Bodhi fruit?"

"I don't know. The shape of the fruit was like a saint Buddha with his leg crossed reciting scriptures," Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen certainly knew what the Bodhi fruit was and even knew its effect.

He deliberately made up a lie because he wanted to guide Hua Qingye's thought to the Bodhi fruit.

If he took the initiative to bring up what he swallowed was Bodhi fruit, Hua Qingye would definitely not believe him. But if Hua Qingye guessed it out, he would certainly believe it without doubt.

Not only Hua Qingye, Zhang Tiangui who stood at the side also believed in Zhang Ruochen's words.

It was because that Zhang Tiangui knew Zhang Ruochen the best. Three years ago, Zhang Ruochen was just a sick man. If there was no such great adventure, how could he have current achievements?

"Damn it. If I could find the ancient cave and swallowed the Bodhi fruit, I guess I would have already reached the Completion of Heaven Realm. Why does Zhang Ruochen have such good luck?"

Zhang Tiangui stared at Zhang Ruochen with envious eyes.

However, he was injured badly. As he became a bit angry, there was a sharp pain in his stomach and he started to cough.

Hua Qingye could almost be certain that what Zhang Ruochen swallowed was Bodhi fruit. He was shaking from the excitement. Every one of his nerve was jumping. He rushed to get in front of Zhang Ruochen and said, "Where is that ancient cave? Bring me there quickly."

Zhang Ruochen smiled and walked toward Zhang Tiangui. He said, "It seems that you haven't accomplished what you promised me."

Hua Qingye narrowed his eyes, looking at Zhang Tiangui.

Zhang Tiangui said anxiously, “Predecessor Hua, you should never believe Zhang Ruochen’s words. He is driving a wedge between us.”

Hua Qingye hesitated for a moment. Finally, he decided to wait for a few days. When the news from Tongming River arrived, it would not be too late to kill Zhang Tiangui.

Of course, he was also afraid that Lei Jing would be in Yunwu City. Therefore, Hua Qingye took Zhang Ruochen and Zhang Tiangui and left Yunwu City. They arrived at a secret stronghold of the Black Market outside Yunwu City. They settled down, waiting for the news.

It was just five days. Hua Qingye could wait for that.

This stronghold was only 15 kilometers away from Yunwu City. If anything happened in Yunwu City, Hua Qingye could be the first one to know it.

Hua Qingye sealed Zhang Ruochen and Zhang Tiangui’s Meridians and locked them up in a Secret Room.

The Secret Room was a dungeon elaborately built by the Black Market. As long as the stone gate was closed and the array was activated, Zhang Ruochen could not escape even if his cultivation was not sealed, which it was.

Hua Qingye left after the stone gate was closed.

“Ahem...”

Zhang Tiangui was injured badly. Since his Meridians had been sealed, his Genuine Qi could not regulate inside his body.

Without the protection of Genuine Qi, he was an ordinary man. He lay on the ground with a pale face and could not move. He could only wait till his injury recovered itself.

When he was at his highest and in his most vigorous spirits, he never thought that he would have such a tragic day.

Zhang Ruochen coldly stared at Zhang Tiangui. He had no intention to kill him in a hurry and so he sat with his legs crossed and began to practice.



Hua Qingye was obviously very cautious. He not only sealed Zhang Ruochen's Meridians with his Genuine Qi but also inserted a Magic Breaking Needle into Zhang Ruochen's glabella, sealing his Qi Sea.

With double seals, even a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm could only sit in the secret room, waiting for his death.

Unfortunately, Hua Qingye did not expect that there was an odd Meridian inside Zhang Ruochen's body, Vessel of Spiritual Blood. Furthermore, he did not expect that there was a Dragon Pearl in Zhang Ruochen's heart.

Zhang Ruochen absorbed the Qi of the Saint Dragon with the help of the Vessel of Spiritual Blood. Very quickly, he opened up the sealed Meridians.

"Hua Qingye wants to seal my Qi Sea with a Magic Breaking Needle. He underestimates me too much!"

Zhang Ruochen clasped his hands together and regulated the Divine Dragon Strength in the Dragon Pearl. It gathered toward his Qi Sea and quickly pushed out part of the Magic Breaking Needle.

The Qi Sea's seal loosened a bit.

As Zhang Ruochen kept using his strength an almost transparent silver needle slowly came out of his glabella and fell on the ground.

Because the needle was very thin. It was ten times lighter than a hair. So even when it fell on the ground, it made no sound.

The seal was totally unlocked. The Genuine Qi in his Qi Sea instantly rushed toward Zhang Ruochen's 36 Meridians like tidewater.

With his cultivation recovered, Zhang Ruochen was full of energy.

I have to reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm in five days. As long as I do, my power of Martial Soul will be more powerful. In due course, even if I can't defeat Hua Qingye, at least I can try my best.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and, using the Vessel of Spiritual Blood, started to absorb the Divine Dragon Strength of the Dragon Pearl.

SWISH—

There was a thin layer of golden Genuine Qi coming out of his body. Every ray of Genuine Qi contained powerful energy like a swimming legendary small dragon with horns.

After practiced for half day, Zhang Ruochen gathered 13 drops of Vital Essence. There was already Vital Essence in his Qi Sea. Now, he had 32 drops of Vital Essence.

As long as he got 100 drops of Vital Essence, he could reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Originally, a warrior gathering Vital Essence was a very slow process. For Zhang Ruochen, it was as easy as drinking boiled water.

It was because he had the Dragon Pearl.

Originally, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, and others just blended a single drop of Dragon's Blood and they directly reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm from the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

What Zhang Ruochen had was the Dragon Pearl, which was much more powerful than a drop of Dragon's Blood.

As long as Zhang Ruochen actively absorbed the Qi of the Saint Dragon in the Dragon Pearl, he could easily gather Vital Essence.

Predecessor Golden Dragon's Dragon Pearl was indeed good stuff. The speed of increase of my cultivation is faster than I expected.

If Zhang Ruochen's cultivation could be increased at this speed, he was confident that he could reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm within three days.

Zhang Tiangui lay on the ground. Seeing the golden light emitting from Zhang Ruochen's body, he was very surprised.

He knew that Zhang Ruochen had already broken the seal.

“You... you...”

Zhang Tiangui seemed to be trying to say something. However, he was injured badly and could not say a full sentence.

Previously, Zhang Tiangui had Genuine Qi to protect his five internal organs and six hollow organs, so he could still manage to walk. Since Zhang Tiangui's Genuine Qi had been sealed, his injury was getting worse and worse. His face was as pale as a dead man's.

Zhang Ruochen spared a glance at Zhang Tiangui. His eyes showed an intention of killing again, so he stopped practicing and stood up.

**SWOOSH!**

His right palm turned once. He used a ray of Genuine Qi to attract the Magic Breaking Needle on the ground and pinched it between his two fingers. He walked toward Zhang Tiangui.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was walking over, Zhang Tiangui started to twitch. His eyes grew wider and wider, he was becoming more and more terrified.

Stopping in front of him, Zhang Ruochen crouched down and looked at him up close, “Zhang Tiangui, should you pay with your life for a murder?”

Zhang Tiangui violently shook his head. He stuttered, “Ninth... Ninth brother, father... father... was not killed by me... I was forced. It was Hua Qingye. Hua Qingye and Di Yi forced me to do it. Father was dead. I was also very sad...”

# Chapter 360 - Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Is it?”

Zhang Ruochen certainly did not believe Zhang Tiangui’s words. However, he did not want to kill Zhang Tiangui right now. He continued, “Tell me, who killed my mother, Concubine Lin?”

Zhang Tiangui shook his head. He said, “Concubine Lin... is not dead...”

“What?”

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Zhang Tiangui’s clothes, lifting him up. He said, “You’d better not lie to me. Otherwise, I won’t let you die quickly.”

Zhang Tiangui immediately replied, “Ninth brother, Concubine... Lin really is alive. She was saved by someone!”

“Who?”

“I don’t know... I just know that it is a killer of the Hades Department... a killer who is very good at using a sword...”  
Zhang Tiangui said.

He did not lie to Zhang Ruochen and tried his best to answer Zhang Ruochen’s questions. He did not want to irritate Zhang Ruochen. As long as Zhang Ruochen’s heart softened slightly, maybe his life could be spared.

In the future, when he recovered, he would certainly have a chance to stage a comeback. At that time, it would not be too late to slowly deal with Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen lightly loosened his hands. He showed a contemplative expression and guessed that perhaps it was Le who saved his mother.

In the Hades Department, only Zi Qian and Le were acquaintances of Zhang Ruochen.

When the incident happened in the palace, Zi Qian was still at Tongming River. It could not have possibly been her.

It should be Le.

Knowing that his mother was not dead, Zhang Ruochen's mood was much better. He stared at Zhang Tiangui again.

“Ninth... brother, I was wrong. It was my fault. Please spare my life. After all... after all, we are blood brothers...”

Zhang Tiangui stared at Zhang Ruochen with beseeching eyes. He showed a very pitiful look while shedding tears.

At present, as long as he could survive, even if he was asked to crawl under Zhang Ruochen's legs, he would do it right away, much less being asked to admit his mistake.

A real man could take temporary setbacks, that was what Zhang Tiangui thought.

Unfortunately, Zhang Ruochen was no longer a simple youth anymore. Over the past three years, he had seen all the fickleness of human nature. He knew better now that the Martial World was a cruel world. Most of the time, there were only two endings: either your death or mine.

“Since my mother is still alive, I won't be hard on you. I will give you a quick way to die now.”

Zhang Ruochen's eyes were very sharp. He raised his arm and hit out the Magic Breaking Needle, which was turned into a flying light and stabbed into Zhang Tiangui's glabella.

“No... Zhang Ruochen... You can't kill... me...”

The Magic Breaking Needle carried a wisp of Blue Genuine Qi. It pierced through Zhang Tiangui's Qi Sea very quickly.

With a bang, Zhang Tiangui's Qi Sea exploded.

A frantic gush of Genuine Qi flowed out of his Qi Sea and rushed into Meridians inside Zhang Tiangui's body.

A moment later, Zhang Tiangui's Meridians were all broken and he died. His body gradually turned cold and his breath stopped.

Outwardly, there was no wound on him. It was like he was sleeping.

"It's finally over!"

Zhang Ruochen gave a long sigh. He felt very complicated and returned to where he was standing before. He continued to practice.

Spending three days and two nights, Zhang Ruochen finally gathered 100 drops of Vital Essence and he started to break into the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

There was no bottleneck for a warrior to reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm from the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm. As long as he could gather 100 drops of Vital Essence, 99% of warriors could easily reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

It certainly was a piece of cake for Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen broke through the realm in only two hours. He had officially reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

When a warrior reached the Heaven Realm, the strength of the Martial Soul would be increased as he broke through another realm. When Zhang Ruochen was breaking through to the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, he could feel that his Martial Soul was increased again!

PHHT!

The Genuine Qi inside his body kept infusing into his muscles, bones, internal organs, and meridians, nourishing his body and refining his Martial Soul. His entire body seemed to be sublimated.

However, there were still 100 drops of Vital Essence in his Qi Sea.

“Since I have the Dragon Pearl, it is easy for me to reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. But it will be much harder to reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.”

As long as he got 100 drops of Vital Essence, he could reach the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

However, he must have 10,000 drops of Vital Essence before he could reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

The amount of Vital Essence was increased 100 times.

Even if Zhang Ruochen reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm right now and doubled his speed of absorbing the Divine Dragon Strength, it would still take five months for him to get ten thousand drops of Vital Essence. Moreover, he could only do it by secluding himself.

The higher one's martial cultivation was, the harder it was to increase it.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen had the Time and Space Spinel and had three times more time than others. If he secluded himself for refining, he could reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm within two months.

In the last three days, Hua Qingye did not come to the Secret Room. Maybe in his opinion, Zhang Ruochen, whose Meridians and Qi Sea were sealed, could not do anything, so he did not bother himself to pay attention to him.

As for Zhang Tiangui, Hua Qingye did not care about his life at all.

In the past few days, Hua Qingye had visited Yunwu City to ask for news every day.

It was not until the fourth day that Hua Qingye finally got some news which shocked the entire Martial World of Omen Ridge.

“Zhang Ruochen defeated the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall, Di Yi. He dug out Di Yi's Demon's Heart.”

Although Hua Qingye had heard from Zhang Ruochen long ago and he was prepared for it, he was still very shocked when

he heard it for himself. After a long time, he revealed an ecstatic expression.

Zhang Ruochen could defeat Di Yi who had a Saintly Being and Demon's Heart as both of them were in the same realm. It proved that the ancient cave, which grew the Bodhi fruit, was an amazing place. If he could get some treasures from it, maybe he could reach the realm of Half-Saint in the future.

At present, Zhang Ruochen was a giant treasure house.

And he controlled the treasure house. How could he not be happy?

Hua Qingye instantly returned to the Secret Room. He wanted Zhang Ruochen to take him to look for the ancient cave right now. He could not wait anymore.

However, Hua Qingye did not know that Zhang Ruochen had already broken the seal and he had been waiting for him in the Secret Room for a long time.

Hua Qingye put his palm on the surface of the stone gate of the Secret Room, turning off the array. With rumbling, the stone gate was slowly lifted up, exposing Zhang Ruochen who was sitting in the Secret Room with his legs crossed.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are powerful. You actually killed Di Yi. Haha! For Omen Ridge to be able to produce such a blessed talent like you, I am actually rather reluctant to kill you.”

Hua Qingye spared a glance at the corner, setting his eyes on Zhang Tiangui. He discovered that Zhang Tiangui had already died.

He seemed to have expected this and showed no surprise. On the contrary, he smiled and said, “Since Zhang Tiangui has already died. Should you not bring me to the ancient cave right now?”

Zhang Ruochen opened his eyes and stood up. He said lightly, “It seems that the news from Tongming River has been passed to Yunwu City. All right, let's go now.”

Somehow, when Zhang Ruochen stood up, Hua Qingye had a sense of danger.



Why was Zhang Ruochen so calm and so indifferent?

It was not good.

In just an instant, Hua Qingye pushed out with his legs and charged out from the left.

**SWOOSH!**

A three-meter Space Crack split open on the right side of Hua Qingye. It had a powerful sucking force and it pulled Hua Qingye toward the crack.

Zhang Tiangui's dead body was sucked over in a flash. Before it entered the Space Crack, it was torn into pieces and only a skeleton was left.

“What is this kind of martial technique?”

Hua Qingye clenched his teeth and regulated his Genuine Qi all over his body. His feet sank down, and the ground was broken into pieces. His body below the knees sank down into the ground. It was like his whole body was fixed there in order to hold back the power of Space Crack.

Zhang Ruochen decisively struck out, he unleashed both of his hands at the same time and hit Hua Qingye's chest.

**BAM!**

Hua Qingye flew back and crashed into a stone wall, sending cracks spidering across it.

In the middle of the Lines, there was a giant and deep human-shaped pit. Hua Qingye was stuck inside the pit.

With a swooshing sound, Zhang Ruochen rushed to the front of the stone wall. Both his hands kept striking out handprints and they struck on Hua Qingye's chest.

**BANG! BANG!**

Zhang Ruochen's hands quickly struck out. A series of handprints were the only things that could be seen.

In the space of a breath, Zhang Ruochen struck out more than 70 palms. All of them hit Hua Qingye, pushing Hua Qingye

two meters deep into the stone wall. It seemed that he was buried in it.

“Young man, you’re looking for death!”

Hua Qingye roared fiercely and clenched his five fingers together. The Genuine Qi gushing out of the ten thousand pores in his body was like water waves.

BOOM!

The power, which could be owned only by warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm, exploded from his body and turned into a powerful Qi billow. It shocked Zhang Ruochen and made him move backward.

“You are still alive?”

Zhang Ruochen steadied himself, he stared at the giant pit on the stone wall. He took out the Abyss Ancient Sword and controlled it by Sword Comprehension to strike into the giant dark pit.

BAM!

SWOOSH!

Hua Qingye walked out from the giant deep pit and kept striking out fist technique, sending the Abyss Ancient Sword flying out.

Zhang Ruochen’s heavy hitting had badly injured Hua Qingye. There was blood on his chest which was almost collapsed.

Unfortunately, Hua Qingye’s cultivation was too high, so he could bear Zhang Ruochen’s more than 70 palms and could actually walk out of the pit. Only warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm could do it.

Hua Qingye was dejected and depressed. His face, his body and his legs were all covered with blood. And with his thin old face, he was like a ferocious ghost crawling out of the underground.

“Awoo!”

Hua Qingye roared loudly and leaped toward Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen immediately released his Martial Soul, regulating the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. It gathered into a three-meter giant Genuine Qi handprint. His five fingers were like columns and the handprint on his palm could be seen clearly.

BAM!

Hua Qingye was hit and flew backward again. His body hit the stone wall and shook the entire Secret Room.

“Have you already reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm?” Hua Qingye said surprisingly.

How did Zhang Ruochen break through into the realm so quickly?

Zhang Ruochen stood grandly opposite Hua Qingye while emitting a shining blue Spiritual Qi. His entire demeanor had changed like a sharp sword out of its sheath.

There was no need to say more, Hua Qingye knew that he had fallen into Zhang Ruochen’s plot to gain more time. Previously, Zhang Ruochen had deliberately shown his weakness mainly to stall for time and break through into the realm.

# Chapter 361 - Rising Blood Mist

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen attacked him again without saying anything.

“Nine-folds of Elephant Power!”

The shadow of the Martial Soul seemed almost integrated with Zhang Ruochen’s body. The Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi converged in his palm, exploding out with a nine-fold attacking force.

The nine Qi billows, like nine water waves, gathered in front of Zhang Ruochen’s palm and formed a six-meter-long illusory image of a holy elephant.

“HOWL!”

As the power of the handprint was cast, the howl of a savage beast sounded, which shook the underground Secret Room and made pieces of broken stone fall from it.

Hua Qingye had to take this seriously. He spread his legs, bent his knees slightly, and did a horse stance. Then he suddenly punched out with a fist technique.

Unfortunately, he still underestimated the Zhang Ruochen’s current strength. The illusory image of the holy elephant crashed against his body like a hill. He had just exchanged blows with him when he was once again sent flying backward. The Spiritual Blood in his body roiled and the Genuine Qi in his Meridians was in chaos.

“He is that strong?”

Actually, Hua Qingye was very powerful. A man who has entered into the Fish-dragon Realm could not be weak. However, his broken arm reduced his fighting strength.

Previously, he was seriously injured by Zhang Ruochen's sneak attack and so his fighting strength was greatly reduced.

His current power was only 30% of the power at his zenith.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen continued to strike out. He swung his sword to chop off Hua Qingye's head.

“Zhang Ruochen, do you think that only you have Martial Soul?”

Being beaten by a junior in the Heaven Realm, Hua Qingye was so furious that he released his Martial Soul.

He had been proud, so he had not used the power of his Martial Soul.

But the situation here was different. If he did not use the power of Martial Soul, never mind trying to suppress Zhang Ruochen, he would be suppressed by Zhang Ruochen instead.

SWOOSH!

A light column rushed out of Hua Qingye's head. Drops of light spots condensed into a Martial Soul which hung suspended above Hua Qingye's back.

Hua Qingye released his Martial Soul and his power was completely broke out.

BAM!

After a reckless clash, both of them took steps back.

CRASH!

Broken stones continually fell from above. The Secret Room seemed to be falling apart due to the fighting between the two men.

“Zhang Ruochen, you are very powerful but you are still far below a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm.”

“Heaven-combing Fist.”

The bones in Hua Qingye's arms kept ringing. He punched a fist technique that was in the Superior class Spiritual Stage.

The blessing of Martial Soul doubled Hua Qingye's power. The whole underground Secret Room seemed to be filled with his strength after he punched out a fist technique.

Genuine Qi was not only flowing in his Meridians but also pouring out his body. It turned into a river of Genuine Qi, flowing around the Martial Soul.

Heaven-combing Fist had a total of 27 strokes. What Hua Qingye used was the first move, Hammer of Breaking Heaven.

As his fists struck out, the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi that was mobilized by Martial Soul almost all converged in his arm, turning his fist blue. These fists suddenly attacked toward Zhang Ruochen's chest.

"Is this the real power of warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm?"

Zhang Ruochen felt that if he met Hua Qingye head on, he would be seriously injured by Hua Qingye's punch or even worse.

When all was said and done, Zhang Ruochen was only in the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. It was only by his seemingly strange power of Martial Soul that he could fight with Hua Qingye.

Now that Hua Qingye had also burst forth his power of Martial Soul, the situation immediately reversed, which was quite unfavorable to Zhang Ruochen.

"Space Crack."

Zhang Ruochen raised his arms and moved his hands apart. It seemed like a gate of space was opened in front of him.

It was a breach in the space, where fog gathered. The power from it seemed like it could devour the world.

In just a moment, the Space Crack swallowed up the power of the fist technique that Hua Qingye displayed.

Zhang Ruochen wanted to try harder to eliminate Hua Qingye by Space Crack.

He pushed his hands forward. Under the urging of his power, the Space Crack cut toward Hua Qingye.

Previously, Hua Qingye nearly had been beaten by the Space Crack. So this time, he was more cautious. In just a moment, his body moved and he escaped its attack.

PHHT!

Space Crack struck the stone wall behind Hua Qingye and engulfed a large amount of mud. It left behind a pit which was more than 10 meters long.

After seeing the destructive power of the Space Crack, Hua Qingye was shocked and said, “Zhang Ruochen, what the martial technique did you use, why can you tear open space?”

“If you can defeat me, naturally, you will know the answer.” Zhang Ruochen said.

Hua Qingye gave him a black look and replied, “Do you think that I can’t defeat you?”

Hua Qingye fumbled in his clothes and took out a little delicate purple gold bell. The small bell, which was only about 10 centimeters, was engraved with mysterious inscriptions. It gave off a faint icy air.

Zhang Ruochen felt that things were not good after seeing the small bell.

As Hua Qingye infused his Genuine Qi into the bell, it became activated. The little bell gradually became larger, growing from its original 10 centimeters gradually to a full three-meters and became a ancient giant bell.

SWISH!

A purple gold light emitted from the ancient bell, forming a bizarre force that suppressed Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul.

Hua Qingye placed the huge bell in his palm and said with a smile, “Zhang Ruochen, the ancient bell is a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms. It is called the ‘Beating-soul Bell’. Since your Martial Soul is strong, let’s see if you can withstand the attack of the Beating-soul Bell.”

Hua Qingye picked up the bell and attacked Zhang Ruochen while he was talking.

The Beating-soul Bell kept spinning and produced a buzzing sound, then it struck against Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul.

Zhang Ruochen did not fight head-on with Hua Qingye. He made some bodily movements and turned to flee.

Zhang Ruochen's biggest advantage was his Martial Soul. If he lost it, there was no way for him to contend against Hua Qingye.

The bell was specifically used to deal with Martial Soul. If Zhang Ruochen continued to fight against Hua Qingye, he would definitely be at a great disadvantage.

**SWOOSH!**

After rushing out of the Secret Room, Zhang Ruochen returned to the ground and demonstrated the bodily movement for the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon to the extreme. He ran away and each of his steps spanned over 67 meters.

After breaking into the Heaven Realm, the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon became faster.

After all, it was a martial technique of bodily movement that was in the Superior class Spiritual Stage. Only a warrior in the Heaven Realm could exert its true power.

Zhang Ruochen, at the moment, was like walking in the air with his feet above the ground.

Of course, he was not flying off the ground. What he used was the agility of the bodily movement, by which he could shortly run in void space with the help of the wind.

Only by being a Half-Saint could a man fly in the sky without any external forces.

Zhang Ruochen was far from that realm.

At Zhang Ruochen's heels, Hua Qingye rushed out from the underground. Without any hesitation, he tossed out the Beating-soul Bell to attack Zhang Ruochen.



Zhang Ruochen did not turn around, he just threw the Abyss Ancient Sword to meet the attack of the Beating-soul Bell.

POW!

The strike between the Abyss Ancient Sword and the bell caused a large spark.

The Abyss Ancient Sword flew back to Zhang Ruochen's hand.

“Damn.”

Hua Qingye took back the bell. He also displayed a bodily movement to catch up with Zhang Ruochen.

What he displayed was called “Floating Cloud Step”, a martial technique of bodily movement of the mid-class Spiritual Stage.

Although his bodily movement was not as brilliant as Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon, he was a master in the Fish-dragon Realm who possessed superior speed.

Hua Qingye charged out. His speed was faster than Zhang Ruochen's.

Zhang Ruochen turned around. He saw that Hua Qingye was chasing after him just 333 meters away and the distance was narrowing.

About a quarter of an hour later, the distance between Hua Qingye and Zhang Ruochen was about 33 meters. He once again threw the Beating-soul Bell out to hit Zhang Ruochen's back.

Zhang Ruochen had to stop and fight again with Hua Qingye.

“Ten-thousand-feet Prairie Fire.”

Zhang Ruochen stimulated a vision of heaven and earth. In the surrounding area, a blaze of flames was condensed. All of them turned into a vast sea of fire and encircled Hua Qingye.

In the sea of fire, the two men exchanged more than ten strokes before Zhang Ruochen fled again.

In this way, as Zhang Ruochen escaped he fought, all the way from noon until dark. Along the thousands of kilometers, he battled Hua Qingye 13 times.

In the end, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was hit by the Beating-soul Bell and was badly hurt so that he had to take back his Martial Soul.

If it were hit again by the bell, it would certainly suffer severe damage. The consequence did not bear thinking of.

“Zhang Ruochen, now you that you have lost the power of your Martial Soul, you can't escape from me this time! Haha!”

Hua Qingye followed after him. His chest was bleeding, but he seemed to feel nothing. He stared at Zhang Ruochen fiercely and said, “If you still refuse to tell me the location of the ancient cave, I will let you know the top 10 cruel tortures of the Black Market, I'll see if you can withstand them.”

Hua Qingye was seriously injured. In order to chase Zhang Ruochen, he had not stopped to heal.

Now, his injuries were aggravating, but he didn't notice himself. The only thing he wanted was the location of the ancient cave.

With blood on his mouth, Zhang Ruochen gave a long laugh and said, “Hua Qingye, if you don't heal your wound, I'm afraid that your cultivation will get regress. ”

Although his Martial Soul was hurt, Zhang Ruochen was still full of energy and the war intent.

“As long as I can suppress you, the lost cultivation will not be a matter.” Hua Qingye replied.

“You want to suppress me in your current state?”

“What? You are not convinced and want to fight again?”

Hua Qingye knew very clearly about Zhang Ruochen's current state. Zhang Ruochen, who had lost his power of the Martial Soul, was like an ant, even the power of a finger could easily kill him.

PHFFF!

A gust of cold wind carrying the smell of blood blew over from far away and passed over Zhang Ruochen's and Hua Qingye's bodies.

Something strange happened.

A bloody red fog appeared in the wood not far away from them. And the fog was coming from all directions.

The blood fog became more and more dense, even blocking people's sight.

Both Zhang Ruochen and Hua Qingye were shocked by the sudden change. They stopped fighting and warily watched the blood fog around them without moving.

# Chapter 362 - Blood Spirit Queen

Chapter 362: Blood Spirit Queen

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

The blood fog became thicker and thicker not only did it encircle around them but it also covered the entire sky.

How did it suddenly become foggy?

Almost immediately, Zhang Ruochen and Hua Qingye held their breath at the same time, they dared not to inhale the blood fog.

“What happened? Did we break into a forbidden area?”

Hua Qingye frowned and took back the Beating-soul Bell. He pinched it in his palm and was ready to attack.

It was too odd!

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Hua Qingye and said with laughter, “You are the most powerful warrior in Omen Ridge. Are you still afraid to break into a forbidden area?”

Hearing what Zhang Ruochen said, Hua Qingye was no longer nervous. After all, he had a very powerful cultivation, except the death reach in Tongming River and some caves of fifth level savage beasts in Omen Ridge, there was no danger to him in other forbidden areas.

Hua Qingye glared at Zhang Ruochen but he was not in a hurry to beat him. Instead, he looked into the fog and raised his voice, “I am Hua Qingye, the chief chairman of Poisonous Spider Club. Who are you? Please show yourself.”

If it were in the past, as long as Hua Qingye said his name, regardless of whether the other side was a master on the side of righteous or evil, he would definitely flee at the first opportunity.

However, it was very strange today. The blood fog did not dissipate, on the contrary, it became denser and denser.

Some strange sounds came from the blood fog.

Not only Hua Qingye but even Zhang Ruochen began to feel tense. He said secretly, "In Omen Ridge, apart from a few people, who would dare to provoke the chief chairman of Poisonous Spider Club?"

Suddenly, a woman's strange cry could be heard from the blood fog.

**SWOOSH!**

A blood-red shadow flew out of the fog and stretched out her arms to leap at Hua Qingye.

"You dare to sneak attack me, you are courting death."

Hua Qingye coldly and immediately fired out the Beating-soul Bell, which hit the blood-red figure and knocked her to the ground.

It was a woman who dressed in bloody clothes, with Lines of red Blood Meridian on her body.

At the moment Hua Qingye rushed to kill her, she suddenly jumped up from the ground and dashed into the fog again and disappeared.

"So powerful."

Unprecedented seriousness appeared in Hua Qingye's eyes. He had not worn such an expression even when he encountered Zhang Ruochen.

Given his cultivation, people who could directly one of his attacks and not die were at least a warrior in the Completion of Heaven Realm.

The main point was, the other person was still able to flee after being hit by Beating-soul Bell. This strength of body was too startling. Even if Zhang Ruochen were hit by the bell, his body would probably be dismembered.

Zhang Ruochen's fingers held his chin and he showed a look of contemplation. Suddenly, with his pupil lighting up, he

seemed to have thought of something. He said, “Is she a Blood Spirit?”

“Blood Spirit? How could such a ghost thing appear in Omen Ridge? No one can refine it.” Hua Qingye said.

“Don’t be so sure.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “If I am right, it should be her!”

“Who?” Hua Qingye asked.

Just then, a road opened up through the blood fog and a beautiful woman with long hair walked out.

Zhang Ruochen’s and Hua Qing’s eyes were attracted to her immediately.

She looked as if she was in her twenties and an evil breath came from her. There was a light spot in her glabella, which was full of divinity. Divine aura emitted from the spot and formed a sharp contrast to her evil aura.

Behind her were six people dressed in bloodstained clothing, four men and two women. All of their Blood Meridians were prominent and form dense blood-colored Lines.

Of the six people, one woman was the one who was previously hit by the bell.

All of them possessed blood-red eyes, looked devilish, and had long fangs. They were staring at Zhang Ruochen and Hua Qingye with their eccentric eyes.

“They really are Blood Spirits.”

Hua Qingye gasped as he saw the six Blood Spirits with green faces and ferocious fangs. He felt lucky that the six were only ordinary Blood Spirits.

Ordinary Blood Spirits only had a cultivation in the Completion of Heaven Realm. Of course, they had strong bodies, which could be considered indestructible. For common warriors in the Completion of Heaven Realm, meeting an ordinary Blood Spirits meant death.

Only masters at the Completion of Heaven Realm could contend against ordinary Blood Spirits.

Given Hua Qingye's cultivation, he could deal with these ordinary Blood Spirits, though the process might be a little difficult.

What made him most fearful was the beautiful woman who stood in front of the Blood Spirits. Where did she come from? It seemed that those six Blood Spirits all took orders from her.

People who could refine Blood Spirits were definitely formidable.

Zhang Ruochen recognized that woman immediately. She was Lu Han.

Back then, after being killed by Zhang Ruochen in Chikong Secret Mansion, Lu Han's body was occupied by "Half-Saint's Light" which was left by Golden Cloud Half-Saint and turned into a bloodthirsty evil creature.

The School of the Martial Market had sent many masters to capture her, but she still managed to escape.

Since she escaped from Chikong Secret Mansion, she left tracks in many commanderies of Omen Ridge. She caused a large number of slaughters and she sucked people's blood to promote her cultivation. One suzerain had all their warriors turn into dried corpses after she sucked away all their blood and all the people in a city were killed by her who turned the city into a necropolis.

She had become so formidable at this time. If she continued to kill, she would soon completely blend with Half-Saint's Light and turn into an evil Bloodthirsty Half-Saint.

Compared to how she looked when she was just born, she looked much more normal now. Her rage had disappeared and even a ray of intelligence could be seen in her eyes.

Obviously, with the promotion of her cultivation, she had regained some memory and thinking ability. She no longer wanted to just suck blood.

Lu Han seemed to recognize Zhang Ruochen. She stared at him with a pair of eyes that were both evil and beautiful and gave a wicked smile, then she said, "I know you... Zhang Ruochen..."

Zhang Ruochen stood with a sword. He narrowed his eyes and said, "You've actually recovered your memory?"

"Haha! One half of my memories come from Lu Han, and the other comes from Golden Cloud Half-Saint. However, both of their memories are lacking, I could only recall some memories, but they are enough because I want to be a brand new me. From now on, you can call me Blood Spirit Queen."

She continued, "Back then if I weren't killed by you, there wouldn't be such miracle. Zhang Ruochen, how should I thank you for it?"

Suddenly, an air of coldness came from the Blood Spirit Queen.

The long hair on her head flew about without wind. Each hair was like a rapier, flying in the air with a swishing sound.

"Awoo!"

The six Blood Spirits standing behind her also roared. They exposed their sharp claws and teeth.

As long as the Blood Spirit Queen gave an order, they would immediately rush forward and turned Zhang Ruochen into a dried corpse.

Hua Qingye bowed to Blood Spirit Queen and said, "Since Your Excellency is seeking Zhang Ruochen for revenge, I will leave first as to not bother you!"

Hua Qingye wanted to know the location of that ancient cave from Zhang Ruochen, but he did not want to lose his life. The Blood Spirit Queen was obviously not a good person. Given his current state, he would not be her opponent at all.

"You want to go?"

Blood Spirit Queen sneered. She put out a white arm and her five fingers bent to form a claw to use the power of Half-Saint's Light to attack Hua Qingye.

Hua Qingye's face changed, he immediately demonstrated his bodily movement and fled into the distance.



Suddenly, his body, not under his own control, flew up from the ground and was suspended two meters in the air. His body was stretched out and he unable to move.

“How could this be? Who the hell are you?”

Hua Qingye felt extreme dread. He had never encountered such a powerful figure who could easily lift him in the air.

Blood Spirit Queen was expressionless. A strange power condensed in her palm which drew Hua Qingye into her hands.

**SWOOSH!**

Drops of blood spilled from Hua Qingye’s pores and turned into Spiritual Blood which swarmed into the Blood Spirit Queen’s palm and entered Blood Spirit Queen’s body.

“The blood of a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm is really delicious. Absorbing your blood will certainly make me stronger.”

The Blood Spirit Queen revealed an intoxicated expression and she continued to inhale Hua Qingye’s Spiritual Blood. The light spot in her glabella became brighter and brighter until a holy halo was formed.

On the contrary, Hua Qingye was yelling the entire time and the sound coming from him was absolutely wretched.

If Zhang Ruocheng didn’t escape now, when would he do it?

**BAM!**

Zhang Ruochen bent his legs and with the power of ejection, his body rushed out like a bomb. In the next moment, he had landed on a hill that was several hundred meters away.

Without any pause, Zhang Ruochen continued to use Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon to charge into the jungle.

“Given the strength of the Blood Spirit Queen, even if I have refined the Holy Blood of Golden Cloud Half-Saint, I’m afraid that it will still be difficult for me to take back the Half-Saint’s Light. I’ll flee to the School of the Martial Market first, then I’ll consider more.”

Zhang Ruochen was proficient in a secret spell. As long as he had the blood of a Half-Saint, he could take away the Half-Saint's Light easily.

The Blood Spirit Queen had absorbed the Half-Saint's Light of Golden Cloud Half-Saint, while Zhang Ruochen imbibed the Holy Blood of Golden Cloud Half-Saint. If Zhang Ruochen used the secret spell, he would have some chance to take away the Half-Saint's Light in then Blood Spirit Queen.

However, the Blood Spirit Queen was as strangely powerful, even Hua Qingye was defenseless in front of her. Even if Zhang Ruochen used that secret spell, he had only 30% chance to take the Half-Saint's Light away.

The remained 70% was being sucked to death.

He was not even 50% of sure. So it was better for him to run for his life.

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen looked behind him from the corner of his eyes and he felt surprised suddenly.

The six Blood Spirits were following behind him.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was damaged, so he could not use Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi. Therefore, his speed slowed down a lot, quickly, he was caught up by the six Blood Spirits.

"Blood Spirits are really fast."

One of the Blood Spirits attacked Zhang Ruochen. Its two claws aimed to grab Zhang Ruochen's head.

Before it came to him, Zhang Ruochen had scented the smell of blood, he did not know how many people's blood it had sucked.

**BOOM!**

Zhang Ruochen shot an Elephant Galloping towards the Blood Spirit's chest and send it flying out.

The Blood Spirit was not hurt at all. It jumped up and once again attacked Zhang Ruochen again.

“What a freakish defensive power, no wonder it could survive after suffering a hit from Hua Qingye.”

Given Hua Qingye’s cultivation at the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, he would be able to kill an ordinary Blood Spirit, he just needed to spend more effort.

For a warrior at the Completion of the Heaven Realm, if they met an ordinary Blood Spirit, they should immediately flee for their lives and not meet them head-on.

Zhang Ruochen also wanted to escape, but unfortunately, he encountered the six Blood Spirits. Even if he wanted to escape, he could not.

“If my cultivation has entered into the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, my speed will be improved. Then, even if the six Blood Spirits wanted to kill me, I will have a chance to escape.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed, he had just broken into the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. It was too difficult to enter into the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Right now, he could only fight it out.

# Chapter 363 - Mutual Absorption

Chapter 363: Mutual Absorption

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

“Sword Ripple of Center Spiritual Channels.”

Zhang Ruochen stretched out the middle finger of his right hand and gathered the Genuine Qi from all over his body into the fingertip. He then turned it into a cold Sword Wave and struck the body of a Blood Spirit.

When the Sword Wave struck out and a blast of Icing air surged out. Consequently, a long ice road was left on the ground and extended to the front of the Blood Spirit.

Just as the Blood Spirit was struck by the sword radiance, the blood pattern on the surface of its body emerged. It emitted a reddish brilliance and blocked the Sword Wave.

POW!

The Sword Wave failed to puncture the body of the Blood Spirit, but the Blood Spirit was crushed by the impact force and flew out more than 33 meters away.

Its body was sealed by the Icing cold which had become a 10-meter tall iceberg, and it impossible for it to move.

Just as Zhang Ruochen relaxed slightly, the iceberg shook violently and cracks formed across it then it exploded suddenly.

The Blood Spirit, soaring from the iceberg, attacked Zhang Ruochen once again.

“We can’t kill or seal it. Is there no way to defeat the Blood Spirit?” Zhang Ruochen wondered.

Zhang Ruochen released his Space Domain at once and enveloped all six Blood Spirits into it.

At the same time, he began to transfer the Power of Space and gathered into the palm of his hands.

As soon as the Blood Spirit rushed over, Zhang Ruochen unfolded his hands and a Space Crack appeared five meters away from him which swallowed the Blood Spirit.

In a moment, the Space Crack closed again and that Blood Spirit fell into nothingness and disappeared completely.

“Space power is absolutely invincible. Even the Blood Spirits with amazing defensive power could not survive when they fall into Space Crack.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed with relief. Since he had found a way to defeat the Blood Spirits, there was no need to fear them. Even if there were five, he could face them.

The remaining five Blood Spirits were all shocked by Zhang Ruochen’s movement just now. They immediately stopped about 33 meters away and dared not to approach him.

The Blood Spirits had a certain amount of intelligence and they knew to bully the weak and fear the strong.

“Since you are not willing to fight with me, I’ll go first!”

He could not wait any longer. If the Blood Spirit Queen caught up, he would never get away.

Zhang Ruochen immediately demonstrated the bodily movement of Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon and released his Genuine Qi, forming an illusory image of a flying dragon. He was going to leave.

“Haha!”

The laughter of the Blood Spirit Queen rang out and spread throughout dozens of kilometers which stunned birds and shook the leaves.

The voice of Blood Spirit Queen was actually beautiful and pleasing.

However, the voice was accompanied by a blast of Icing air that was frightening and contained powerful energy.

Among the surrounding forests, there existed more than a dozen turbulent airstreams. Zhang Ruochen was caught up and his body rose upward uncontrollably.

“Damn! Was the Bloody Spirit Queen catching up so quickly?”

Zhang Ruochen tried hard to control his form and used his Genuine Qi to condense a blue sword Qi. He swung out with it and broke open the chaotic airflow and rushed out.

The voice of the Blood Spirit Queen rang again, “Zhang Ruochen, you can’t escape today.”

BAM!

Suddenly, a huge Spiritual Blood palm gathered in the air and stretched toward Zhang Ruochen.

That bloody palm was more than 20 meters long and seemed like a blood cloud. In front of it, Zhang Ruochen was like an ant.

“Break for me!”

Zhang Ruochen’s fingers pinched into a sword skill and mobilized the power of Heart Integrated into Sword then the Abyss Ancient Sword flew out of his hand and turned into a sword radiance, hitting the huge blood hand.

PHHT!

Unexpectedly, the Abyss Ancient Sword did not penetrate the bloody hand, rather, it was blocked by it instead. The sword slowly fell backwards and the light on the sword also became weaker and weaker.

Zhang Ruochen immediately withdrew the Abyss Ancient Sword and fell back to the ground from the air. The powerful impact made cracks appear on the ground.

He had just stood up and tried to get away from here...

But he found that Blood Spirit Queen was standing in front of him and he almost bumped into her.

At this moment, the distance between their faces was less than an inch and their noses were almost next to each other. Zhang

Ruochen could clearly see his shadow in the blood-colored pupils of the Blood Spirit Queen.

Her eyes were very beautiful and each of her eyelashes curved upward. Her eyeballs were white as jade and her pupils glittered like two gems.

It was this pair of eyes that brought a powerful murderous feeling and made one feel a bone-piercing chill.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen turned motionless and froze like a stone.

A moment later, he immediately mobilized his Genuine Qi, striking toward the chest of the Blood Spirit Queen.

However, his wrist and Meridians were locked by two fingers of the Blood Spirit Queen as soon as he attacked. A powerful palm power thrust back toward him in a flash.

His Genuine Qi reversed directions and the palm power thrust backward.

It was like Zhang Ruochen's strike just then had landed on his own body. His entire body shook and a great pain spread throughout his body.

Fortunately, his Qi Sea was guarded by Gods Mark. Otherwise, he would have been hurt badly by the power of that previous thrust.

“Zhang Ruochen, I smell the aura of a dragon in your body. Did you swallow the Dragon's Blood? Your blood should also be delicious.”

Standing in front of Zhang Ruochen, the Blood Spirit Queen smiled with her bloody lips tilted upwards, revealing two rows of neat teeth.

Upon closer inspection, she had two long and narrow fangs.

Suddenly, the Blood Spirit Queen rushed at Zhang Ruochen and aimed her teeth toward his throat.

CHH!

Zhang Ruochen's skin was punctured by the fangs and the Blood Spirit Queen began to absorb the blood in Zhang

Ruochen's body.

Zhang Ruochen felt a large amount of blood leave in his body in a flash. His vision grew dark and he had a slight sense of vertigo.

“I must resist and apply that secret spell.”

A coldness appeared in Zhang Ruochen's eyes. Suddenly, he held the slender waist of the Blood Spirit Queen tightly then he flew forward and pressed the Blood Spirit Queen under his body.

The mystical method was called “Evocation Trick.”

The reason why the Blood Spirit Queen was so powerful was that she had merged with the Half-Saint's Light left by Golden Cloud Half-Saint.

The so-called “Half-Saint's Light” was actually the energy that evolved from the Divine Soul of a Half-Saint.

In order to absorb the Half-Saint's Light, the body of the warrior must be in harmony with the Saintly Being of Half-Saint. Zhang Ruochen had refined the holy blood of Golden Cloud Half-Saint, and naturally, he had become even more united with the Half-Saint's Light.

Zhang Ruochen released his own Martial Soul at once by which he deployed the Evocation Trick. At the same time, he attacked towards the glabella of the Blood Spirit Queen.

“Go back!”

Zhang Ruochen could hardly squeeze out any word.

The Blood Spirit Queen's body shook she had been electrocuted by lightning and stopped absorbing Zhang Ruochen's blood.

The light spot between her eyebrows shook violently, and the power of Half-Saint's light surged constantly in her Qi Sea.

**BAM!**

Abruptly, she lost control of her Half-Saint's Light and poured out from her glabella into Zhang Ruochen's glabella through his fingers.



His Martial Soul was absorbing the Half-Saint's Light.

It was only a moment later that the Martial Soul that had been injured was completely healed and was still growing stronger.

If he could fully absorb the Half-Saint's Light, his Martial Soul would be able to achieve the same level of Half-Saint within a short time.

However, when Zhang Ruochen had just absorbed a small amount of Half-Saint's Light, the Blood Spirit Queen had broken free of Zhang Ruochen's control using her powerful cultivation.

POW!

The Blood Spirit Queen struck Zhang Ruochen's chest and sent him flying out.

The Evocation Trick Zhang Ruochen used, disturbed the power of Half-Saint's Light in her body which surged around her insanely and was completely out of her control.

She could not move after that hit and had to fully suppress the power of the Half-Saint's Light.

The Blood Spirit Queen closed her eyes and furrowed her brows slightly, "Take me away at once."

Five Blood Spirits were shocked to see that their queen seemed to have suffered a heavy injury at the hands of an ordinary human being. They immediately lifted the queen and fled into the jungle.

Thick blood fog gradually dispersed.

POW!

Zhang Ruochen fell heavily on the ground from the sky and nearly fainted.

"Thanks to the Dragon Pearl, otherwise my internal organs would be broken into pieces even if the body was not shattered after her hit."

He took a healing Pill and started to run his Genuine Qi in order to recover from the injury.

Just now, it was because Zhang Ruochen had immediately motivated the power of Dragon Pearl that he could resist her attack and save his life.

About an hour later, Zhang Ruochen's injury had probably recovered about 30%. Because he feared that Blood Spirit Queen had suppressed the power of the Half-Saint's Light and had come back.

Thus, he quickly left and was afraid to stay there.

About running for almost 150 kilometers, Zhang Ruochen subdued a second level savage bird called lion ostrich. He sat on its back and went back to Devil Martial City while recovering himself.

Given his current situation, it was impossible to go to Yunwu Commandery. In that case, he would certainly be killed by the Blood Spirit Queen.

Given the current strength of the Blood Spirit Queen, it was probably only Devil Martial City that she didn't dare to try to attack.

Therefore, Zhang Ruoting decided to go back to Devil Martial City. It would be best for him to ask Master Lei Jing for help and kill the Blood Spirit Queen as soon as possible so as to prevent her from fully refining the Half-Saint's Light and becoming an evil monster on a level of a Half-Saint.

“The Blood Spirit Queen probably sucked away 20% of my blood. I only took one percent of the Half-Saint's Light in her body. On the whole, it was a great bargain for me.”

Zhang Ruochen took a Blood Pill, hoping to refine it and restore his Spiritual Blood as soon as possible.

Although he had lost 20% of his blood, Zhang Ruochen still could hang on given to his current martial cultivation. He would be able to surpass his weakest moment in a very short time.

One percent of a Half-Saint's Light was a huge power. As long as Zhang Ruochen thoroughly refined the Half-Saint's Light, it would certainly make his Martial Soul even more powerful.

The Half-Saint's Light was like a cloud of white air suspended in Zhang Ruochen's Qi Sea.

“Refining the Half-Saint's Light should also facilitate my Spiritual Power to reach the fortieth level. By then, I will be able to use Spiritual Power to attack. I could open the heaven, resist death, summon wind and thunder, and learn Astrology.”

Right now, Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Power was at the thirtieth level. He was just one level away from reaching the fortieth level.

With the energy contained in the one percent of Half-Saint's Light, it will be able to further his Spiritual Power. This was a great chance for Zhang Ruochen to reach the fortieth level.

A warrior could enter a mysterious realm if his Spiritual Power reached the fortieth level, and numerous mystical power would follow which excited Zhang Ruochen.

# Chapter 364 - Back to School

Chapter 364: Back to School

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Omen Ridge was located in a bleak area of the Eastern Region. Many places there were desolate and uninhabited, where wild and savage beasts roamed. It gave off a primitive feeling to the people.

At the moment, in the depths of the woods full of purple maple pines, a woman wearing a blood-red robe was sitting cross-legged on the ground, which was filled with fallen leaves.

It was Blood Spirit King.

After half a day, she had finally suppressed the power of the chaos Half-Saint's Light in her body. And as her power was restored, she stood up.

“Zhang Ruochen is proficient in the Evocation Formula and has refined the Holy Blood of the Golden Cloud Half-Saint. He must be killed. Otherwise, I will face endless trouble.”

Blood Spirit King owned a part of the memory of the Golden Cloud Half-Saint. Therefore, she knew what Zhang Ruochen had previously displayed was the Evocation Formula.

The strength of Blood Spirit King was much more powerful than Zhang Ruochen's. However, Zhang Ruochen possessed the Holy Blood of the Golden Cloud Half-Saint, so he could fiercely restrain her.

Even if she became a Half-Saint, she would be suppressed by Zhang Ruochen as long as he was still alive.

A Blood Spirit flew in from the distance and knelt down in front of Blood Spirit King. It said in a husky voice, “Your

Majesty, Zhang Ruochen went to Devil Martial City.”

Blood Spirit King frowned and soliloquized, saying, “There are many great masters in Devil Martial City, over half of the superiors of the 36 commanderies in Omen Ridge are there. With my current strength, I can’t blatantly enter Devil Martial City.”

After pondering for a while, Blood Spirit King finally decided to go to Devil Martial City. Even if it might be quite dangerous there, Zhang Ruochen had to be eliminated.

Of course, she was not going to directly go into Devil Martial City, but prepared to sneak into it, slowly looking for opportunities to kill Zhang Ruochen.

...

.....

When Zhang Ruochen returned to Devil Martial City, he immediately went to the Silver Gowned Elder Pavilion to visit Lei Jing.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had returned to the school safe and sound, Lei Jing’s mood was greatly boosted. But soon he frowned slightly and asked, “Zhang Ruochen, your Spiritual Blood loss is serious and you were severely hurt. Was it really that old donkey, Hua Qingye, that hurt you?”

Returning from the Tongming River, Lei Jing immediately rushed to Yunwu City of the Yunwu Commandery, but it was still too late. At that time, the battle between Zhang Ruochen and Hua Qingye had ended, which left the entire palace in ruins.

Once Lei Jing had searched around and asked the surviving maidservants and eunuchs, he finally confirmed that the one-armed old man who had fought against Zhang Ruochen was Hua Qingye, the chief chairman of the Poisonous Spider Club.

He mobilized all of the manpower of the Martial Market Bank in Yunwu City to look for three days, but he still could not find Zhang Ruochen and Hua Qingye.

As Lei Jing returned to the School of the Martial Market today, he was ready to mobilize all of the manpower of the School of the Martial Market and the Martial Market Bank in the 36 commanderies of Omen Ridge to make every effort to find Zhang Ruochen.

Unexpectedly, however, Zhang Ruochen returned to the School of the Martial Market.

Because of his excessive blood loss, Zhang Ruochen looked very pale. He shook his head gently and answered, "Hua Qingye is dead."

"Dead?"

Lei Jing's eyes just stared as he was a little surprised and he asked, "You killed him?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled and replied, "Master, do you think that I can kill a superior in the Fish-dragon Realm with my ability?"

"That's right, Hua Qingye is only in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, which could be regarded as the lowest level of Fish-dragon Realm warriors. But with your cultivation, even a single one of his hairs cannot be hurt," Lei Jing said.

Lei Jing said this not to belittle Zhang Ruochen, but they were the most realistic words.

Only a few of the warriors who had entered into the Heaven Board could contend with warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm. Let alone that Zhang Ruochen was in the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm and there was still a large gap between him and warriors of the Heaven Board.

Lei Jing asked, "In Omen Ridge, there are only a dozen people who have reached the Fish-dragon Realm. Each one of them is the dominator of a force. So who killed Hua Qingye?"

"Blood Spirit King," Zhang Ruochen replied.

"Is there such a superior in the Martial World of Omen Ridge?" Lei Jing asked.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “Master, do you remember that blood-sucking demon which escaped from Chikong Secret Mansion?”

“Of course I remember that. At that time, the School of the Martial Market dispatched its top 10 masters to kill her. But three of them were killed by her, and in the end, she still escaped.”

“In recent years, almost all of the 36 commanderies in Omen Ridge have experienced blood-sucking tragedies. The people in a village all died from being sucked dry, the people in a city all vanished, and the people in a Suzerain were turned into dried corpses. She might be the murderer of all of these events.”

“Not only the School of the Martial Market, Yuntai Suzerain, the Tai Qing Palace, and the School of Theology, but also the heretics are investigating her. But her whereabouts are so strange, and masters of all parties have never seen her true body. Everyone who has seen her has disappeared. Maybe they’ve been killed by her.”

“According to the information collected by the School of the Martial Market, the number of people who have been killed by the blood-sucking demon is 1.6 million, many of whom were warriors. Sucking the blood of so many people is such a horrifying power. Who knows what level has she reached?”

“Did...”

Lei Jing stared at Zhang Ruochen with a sharp light in his eyes, and said, “Is Blood Spirit King that you mentioned a blood-sucking demon?”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and affirmed it, saying, “It is her.”

“How powerful is her strength now?” Lei Jing asked.

Anyone who could kill Hua Qingye was definitely a dangerous character. If it was necessary, Lei Jing would report the news of Blood Spirit King to the headquarters of the Martial Market Bank in the Eastern Region.

The headquarters in the Eastern Region would then send masters to Omen Ridge to kill her.

Or, the Martial Market Bank would report the news to the imperial court of the First Central Empire and the First Central Empire would send troops to annihilate her.

Since Empress Chi Yao's enthronement, what she emphasized was "internal stability, external expansion". Within the territory of the First Central Empire, any factors that affected stability would be stifled the first time.

Just like the Four-winged Earth Dragon who once dominated Omen Ridge—even if it had become a Saint, it was still suppressed by troops of the First Central Empire.

It was because the foundation of "internal stability, external expansion" that the Martial Arts in Kunlun's Field boomed, and Saints and geniuses came out in succession. The power of the humans became stronger and stronger. It seemed that a flourishing age would soon arrive.

Zhang Ruochen said, "According to my best guess, Blood Spirit King now has the cultivation in the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm."

"She was that strong?"

Lei Jing frowned, deeply lost in thought.

Given the strength of Blood Spirit King, only three people in Omen Ridge could suppress her other than Half-Saints.

And Lei Jing was one of them.

However, if Blood Spirit King wanted to run away, it was unknown whether Lei Jing could hinder her with his strength.

Should a Half-Saint come to solve this?

There was only one Half-Saint now—Half-Saint Han Jue of Yuntai Suzerain in Devil Martial City.

"It seems that I need to find time to travel to Yuntai Suzerain to visit predecessor Han Jue,"

Lei Jing thought.

Given that all of the power of Omen Ridge could suppress Blood Spirit King, it was not necessary to report it. Even if he did report it, the officers of the Empire would analyze the



strength of Blood Spirit King and the final decision would be to let them solve it themselves.

If the cultivation of Blood Spirit King were to reach the Seventh Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, the headquarters of the Eastern Region and the imperial court of the First Central Empire would take it seriously. After all, a superior in the Seventh Change of the Fish-dragon Realm had the chance to become a Half-Saint, and so should be subdued.

Lei Jing's eyes fixed on Zhang Ruochen as he said with a smile, "You were able to escape from her, which means you were quite lucky. Just stay in the School of the Martial Market and don't go out. As for Blood Spirit King, I have a method to deal with her. Once she dares to appear, she will die a graveless death."

Lei Jing thought that Zhang Ruochen's successful escape was due to Blood Spirit King's main aim having been to kill Hua Qingye. So Lei Jing did not ask anything further.

Suddenly, Lei Jing said seriously, "There's another thing. This time, the issue that you defeated Di Yi in Tongming River will cause a sensation. Presumably, the black market and heretics will send many masters to kill you, so you should be prepared."

"You have to go to the Saint Academy as soon as possible. They can do nothing after you enter the Saint Academy.

"You don't have to worry about any issues of the Yunwu Commandery, I will help you arrange them. From now on, you are the Commandery Prince of the Yunwu Commandery."

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly. Actually, he wanted the fourth prince, Zhang Shaochu, to be the Commandery Prince of the Yunwu Commandery.

He did not want to be a Commandery Prince. What he wanted was to pursue the higher realms of Martial Arts.

Lei Jing looked deeply at Zhang Ruochen and said, "I know what you're thinking. You want your brother, Zhang Shaochu, to be the Commandery Prince of the Yunwu Commandery, don't you?"

“I actually think so.”

Zhang Ruochen knew that he could not conceal his thoughts in front of Lei Jing, who held the Martial Market Bank, the biggest intelligence agency. There were few things that he did not know.

So, it was impossible for Zhang Ruochen to hide his views in front of him.

Lei Jing said, “Making you the Commandery Prince of the Yunwu Commandery has profound meaning. Soon, you’ll be going to the Eastern Region to take part in the examinations of the Saint Academy.”

“A Commandery Prince from an inferior commandery is not a big deal for those powerful families that have Half-Saints and Saints.” However, it represents the title of nobility, which means you are a government official designated by the imperial court of the First Central Empire. Anyone that wants to kill you is setting himself against the imperial court of the First Central Empire. And who would dare to do that?”

Zhang Ruochen finally understood what Lei Jing meant and gently nodded. “It turns out that’s how it is.”

Lei Jing laughed and said, “Actually, what you just need is the title of nobility from an inferior baron. Your brother can temporarily help you administer the Yunwu Commandery. In the future, as you become so powerful that you don’t need the protection of the title of nobility, then it won’t be too late to pass the throne to him.”

“Moreover, in my opinion, your brother doesn’t have excellent talent, so his success is limited. How about your sister, whose talents are higher than Zhang Shaochu’s? She is the top master of the Western Campus. I believe that it won’t be long before she enters the Internal Academy.”

“Sister? You mean my ninth sister? She’s become the top master of the Western Campus?”

Zhang Ruochen felt happy. Luckily, his ninth sister had been practicing in the Western Campus so she could escape from

that incident. Otherwise, Zhang Tiangui would not spare her life.

# Chapter 365 - The Chens in Eastern Region

Chapter 365: The Chens in Eastern Region

Translator: Transn Editor: Transn

Zhang Ruochen intended to visit the Western Campus and meet the Ninth Commandery Princess.

There were not many members of the Royal Family left. Furthermore, he had a good relationship with the Ninth Commandery Princess. Before he went to the divine land of Eastern Region, Zhang Ruochen prepared some practice resources to give to her, to help her go further on the road of practice.

“Your injury is very severe, so you shouldn’t go to the Western Campus personally. Just stay at School and recover. I will send a silver gowned Elder to visit the Western Campus and take the Ninth Commandery Princess back to the Internal Academy. I can make an exception for her and have her become an internal student earlier, so she doesn’t need to go back to the Western Campus. In the Internal Academy, she will have a better practice environment,” Lei Jing said.

“Thank you very much, Master.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head and agreed.

It was indeed inappropriate for him to leave Devil Martial City. Regardless of whether he would be assassinated by masters of the Black Market and the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, the Blood Spirit Queen, who might appear at any time, was also a big threat.

If Zhang Ruochen encountered her again, he might not have the good luck to escape again.

“Since it is so, I’ll take my leave first.”

Back at the practice mansion, Zhang Ruochen saw Kong Xuan, who was sitting by the pool with her legs crossed.

She was wearing a spotless white robe and sitting cross-legged on a big smooth white stone. The wings on her back emitted a colorful light. Her long hair hung down from her head and into the water.

Kong Xuan was practicing Sword Ripple of Ten Channels. Her ten fingers kept changing and striking out.

According to Zhang Ruochen's observation, her Shadow Meridan Ripple of Sword Ripple of the Ten Channels had reached the Beginner Realm. Once she infused her Genuine Qi into her fingertips, she could strike out sharp Sword Breaths and easily pierce through a giant rock of about half a ton and about 30 meters away.

Zhang Ruochen stood behind her and watched for quite a while. He nodded his head and said, "Good. You have grasped the true essence of Sword Ripple of Ten Channels within a few months, your comprehension can be regarded as top-notch."

The higher the realm the faster a warrior could practice martial techniques.

Kong Xuan's cultivation was only in the Black Realm. But it was certainly remarkable that she could reach the Beginner level of the Superior Class of Spiritual Stage martial technique.

It was only upon hearing Zhang Ruochen's voice that Kong Xuan knew there was a person standing behind her. She immediately stood up.

When she saw Zhang Ruochen's familiar face, she was unable to hide her joy. She instantly knelt down to Zhang Ruochen, saluting to him.

"Greetings, Master..."

Zhang Ruochen stretched out one arm. A cloud of Blue Genuine Qi gushed out of his palm. The Genuine Qi froze Kong Xuan like a cloud of smoke. He said, "From now on, you don't need to kneel before me when you see me."

“But...” Kong Xuan said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “This is an order!”

“All right!”

Kong Xuan grinned slightly. She straightened her body again and admired Zhang Ruochen even more. He could obviously control her life, but, instead, he gave her more freedom, not treating her like a servant at all.

Meeting Zhang Ruochen was a great stroke of fortune for her.

“Master, has your martial cultivation reached the Heaven Realm?”

When Kong Xuan met Zhang Ruochen for the first time, she could clearly feel that there was a strong power around Zhang Ruochen.

It was an intense aura, it was like a giant mountain that could not be ascended. And the giant mountain was standing in front of her. When Zhang Ruochen struck out with his Genuine Qi, she felt that she could not breathe and move at all.

“I have indeed reached the Heaven Realm.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “You are amazing too. You have already reached the Completion of the Black Realm within a few months. You should be able to reach the Earth Realm after a bit more practice.”

Although Kong Xuan had not reached the Earth Realm, with her current cultivation, she could definitely compete with warriors in the Earth Realm.

If she exposed her cultivation, she could definitely become a God’s favored daughter and become the No.1 on the Profound Board.

After hearing Zhang Ruochen’s compliment, Kong Xuan was too happy to say anything. She actually appeared a bit shy and lowered her head.

It was a fact that Kong Xuan was beautiful. She had a perfect oval-shaped face, beautifully arched eyebrows, glittering and translucent lips, and an exquisite nose. Her skin was white like

mutton fat without any flaws. And she had long eyelashes and each one of them was so curved.

With her cultivation growing higher and higher, not only was her figure becoming even more perfect, but her temperament was also becoming more prominent. She was a startling beauty.

Who could have thought that she was just Zhang Ruochen's maid with her extraordinary talent and beautiful face?

No wonder that every time Huang Yanchen saw Kong Xuan, she was not kind to her.

Not only her, any woman would not be happy that her fiancé had such a beautiful maid.

Kong Xuan seemed to think of something. She said, "Master, there is one thing I need to tell you. Three days ago, a mysterious man sent an old woman to the School of the Martial Market."

Zhang Ruochen asked, "Which old woman?"

"She is the Concubine Lin of Yunwu Commandery. The mysterious man said that she is your mother," Kong Xuan gently replied.

Zhang Ruochen was very delighted. He had not expected to hear from his mother so soon. He said, "Where is my mother right now? Quickly, take me to see her."

Seeing Zhang Ruochen's happy look, Kong Xuan was also very happy. She replied, "She is in your practice mansion. I'll take you to see her now."

"It seems that Zhang Tiangui didn't lie to me. My mother was indeed saved by someone. The mysterious man was probably Le."

Zhang Ruochen immediately followed Kong Xuan and arrived at the compound where Concubine Lin was living.

After seeing Concubine Lin, Zhang Ruochen finally relaxed.

Naturally, Concubine Lin cried happy tears after seeing Zhang Ruochen's arrival. The mother and the son hugged each other.

Afterward, Zhang Ruochen told her exactly what had happened in the palace, including, of course, the massacre of the Lins.

Upon hearing that Yunwu Commandery Prince had suffered a violent death, Concubine Lin's heartbroke and she cried out loud.

Upon hearing the massacre of the Lins, Concubine Lin cried again. If Zhang Ruochen had not continuously infused Genuine Qi into her body, she would have fainted long ago.

Although telling her the truth was a bit cruel, she would know it sooner or later. It was better to have a short, sharp pain than a long, dull pain. So why not tell her right now?

At least right now, Zhang Ruochen was by her side and he could comfort her.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the room after Concubine Lin fell asleep and gently closed the door.

The sky was already dark and a cold wind was blowing in the air.

Zhang Ruochen spared a glance at Kong Xuan who was standing in the courtyard. He walked over and said, "Take good care of my mother for me. She will be very sad these days."

"Master, don't worry. I will certainly take good care of madam," Kong Xuan said.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a moment and said, "Did the mysterious man who sent my mother to the School of the Martial Market leave a message for me?"

Kong Xuan replied, "He did. He said that he had already left Omen Ridge to pursue a more profound Martial Arts. And that he would remember your kindness forever."

"It seems that it is really him. I don't know if we will have a chance to meet again."

Zhang Ruochen slightly shook his head. It was indeed a smart decision to save Le's life that time.



Luckily, he had reached out to help, so that Concubine Lin could still be alive.

Zhang Ruochen took out the School token and gave it to Kong Xuan. He wanted her to receive the Half-Saint's Essence and the Sacred Liquid issued every quarter.

Afterward, he entered the Secret Room of Practice and started to seclude himself for healing.

After entering the Secret Room of Practice, Zhang Ruochen took out the Time and Space Spinel. He infused Genuine Qi into the Time and Space Spinel. A layer of white light came out of the spinel.

“Bam!”

Zhang Ruochen entered the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel and abandoned every distracting thought. He swallowed another a healing pill.

Sitting with his legs-crossed in the Time and Space Spinel for one day and one night, Zhang Ruochen finally recovered with the help of the healing pill.

But the lost Spiritual Blood could not be compensated for in a brief moment through practicing. Zhang Ruochen was still not in his best state.

“The Blood Spirit Queen suffered losses this time. She will definitely name me as her number one enemy. I have to try hard to improve my cultivation. Otherwise, it won't be possible for me to win if I fight with her again.”

Once the Blood Spirit Queen started to guard against Zhang Ruochen, it was possible that Zhang Ruochen would have already been killed before he could use the Trick of Spirit Calling.

Just as Zhang Ruochen prepared to refine the Half-Saint's Light in his Qi sea, Kong Xuan came to outside of the Secret Room of Practice and said, “Master, elder brother Chang and elder brother Si have arrived, they want to see you.”

Since Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong had come to make a visit, Zhang Ruochen was certain to meet them.

Zhang Ruochen walked out of the Time and Space Spinel and put away the spinel. It was said that he had refined for one day and one night. But actually, just a few hours had passed outside the Secret Room.

Distantly, Chang Qiqi's loud laughter could be heard, "Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, you've finally got back to School. You don't know this but ever since we knew what happened to you, elder brother Si and I attacked 23 branches of the Black Market and caused quite a turmoil. However, we still couldn't find you. Unexpectedly, you came back to the School on your own. Eldest brother and I were busy for nothing!"

In the last few days, in order to find Zhang Ruochen, Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong had killed warriors of the Black Market in Yunwu Commandery and they had almost visited every branch of the Black Market. Even some branch gangs of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect had also suffered a lot.

The Greedy Rabbit "Guoguo" pushed Chang Qiqi away and rushed toward Zhang Ruochen. It said, "Master Chen, I was also there. I also wiped out three branches of the Black Market and one branch gang of the heresy."

Zhang Ruochen was deeply touched, because after the disaster, there were so many friends who were worried about him.

In order to find him, they killed those warriors of the Black Market everywhere.

These kind of friends were true friends.

Zhang Ruochen said, "Elder brother Chang, eldest brother, and Guoguo, I won't say something sentimental. Thank you all for what you have done for me."

"You don't need to thank us. If someone has to say it, then it should be us. If it weren't for you, eldest brother and I wouldn't be able to find the Dragon's Blood and have what we have right now. Master Lei has noticed that eldest brother and I are qualified to go to the divine land of Eastern Region to attend the Saint Academy's examination. We will leave in 15 days. If we can get into Saint Academy through the exam, I will be a great man! Haha!" Chang Qiqi laughed loudly.

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Elder brother Chang, since you are back, are senior sister apprentice Huang and senior sister apprentice Duanmu back?”

“Did you now know? Your fiancée, junior sister apprentice Huang, has been picked up by her mother and sent to the divine land of Eastern Region. Junior sister apprentice Chen also has gone there. They left Devil Martial City long ago,” Chang Qiqi replied.

When Zhang Ruochen was in Tongming River, he was in a hurry to get back to Yunwu Commandery. So he did not know what happened afterward.

After hearing Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong’s words, he knew that the Half-Saint who defeated Devil Yuanying in Tongming River was actually Huang Yanchen’s mother.

Also on that day, the Half-Saint took away Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier and went to the divine land of Eastern Region.

Chang Qiqi made a tut-tut sound. He said admiringly, “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, you have no idea, your mother-in-law is very amazing. With only one attack of the sword, she badly hurt the famous Devil Yuanying. I almost knelt before her. It will be great if I could have such a mother-in-law.”

Si Xingkong smiled and said, “Junior sister apprentice Huang’s mother is called Chen Liuli. When she was young, she had entered into the top 50 on the Heaven Board. As a God’s favored daughter of the Chens, I’m not surprised that she could reach the Half-Saint Realm.”

Chang Qiqi said, “The Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market in our Omen Ridge was originally a young talent of the Chens. Although he couldn’t be compared with junior sister apprentice Huang’s mother, he was one of the top 30 genii in the Chens.”

Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi seemed to know the Chens, but Zhang Ruochen did not. So he asked, “Are the Chens powerful?”

Chang Qiqi widened his eyes and said, “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, you are junior sister apprentice Huang’s

fiancé and you don't know the Chens?"

A rare expression of respect appeared in Si Xingkong's eyes. He said, "The Chens are an Aristocratic Family from the Middle Age with more than 100,000 years of history. The Chens's power is deeply rooted in Eastern Region, with its family members everywhere. Even Empress Chi Yao fears them too."

"The Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market in our Omen Ridge, Chen Ying, is a member of the Chens."

"Senior sister apprentice Huang's mother 'Chen Liuli' is the Queen of Qianshui Commandery, which is a superior class commandery. She is also a member of the Chens."

...

"Of course, the real person, who allows the Chens to have unparalleled influence in Eastern Region, is the current leader of the Chens, Chen Yin. At the same time, he is also the king of Eastern Region, ruling thousands of commanderies and the divine land of Eastern Region."

Zhang Ruochen seemed to be talking to himself, "The leader of the Chens is the king of Eastern Region."

"Right! Now do you know how terrifying the Chens are?"

"In this case, the Chens should be the original Chens," Zhang Ruochen murmured and said.

Chang Qiqi did not seem to hear Zhang Ruochen's words. He continued, "The Palace Master of the School of the Martial Market in our Omen Ridge was once the most superior warrior in the 36 commanderies in Omen Ridge. However, he was just a top 30 talent in the Chen family. You have to remember, every ten years, there is a new generation of people. Palace Master Chen was only in the top thirty for during one generation."

Zhang Ruochen certainly knew of the Chen family's power. Let alone in the present, even eight hundred years ago, the Chens were very important in Eastern Region. Although they could not be compared with the Nine Emperors, they were the dominator of a region.

Upon hearing Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong's narration, Zhang Ruochen could match up the Chens in his memory with the Chens they spoke of.

Zhang Ruochen really did not expect that Huang Yanchen had such a relationship with an Aristocratic Family from the Middle Age like the Chens.

After Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong left, Zhang Ruochen entered the Time and Space Spinel once again and started to refine the cloud of Half-Saint's Light. He wanted to improve his Spiritual Power to the fortieth level before he went to the divine land of Eastern Region.

# Chapter 366 - Thunder On a Sunny Day

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

## Chapter 366

The Yellow Realm, the Black Realm, the Earth Realm, and the Heaven Realm were called the four realms of Martial Arts.

In Martial Arts, no matter how high a warrior's cultivation was, they could only be called as a warrior.

For example, a warrior in the Heaven Realm could only be called the Peak of Martial Arts or a martial arts legend.

Only when a warrior broke through the Martial Arts, could he enter the Holy Road.

If a warrior did not enter the Holy Road, they were still a mortal.

If they wanted to enter the Holy Road, they must experience the Nine Changes in the Fish-dragon Realm first. Every change was a Yin-Yang:

First Change: Congenital Embryonic Breath.

Second Change: Skin Refining to Gold.

Third Change: Bone Refining to Jade.

Fourth Change: Yinyu Holy Meridian.

Fifth Change: Yangyu Holy Meridian.

Sixth Change: Yinwei Holy Meridian.

Seventh Change: Yangwei Holy Meridian.

Eighth Change: Blunt Holy Meridian.

Ninth Change: Glazed Treasured Body.

...

Once a warrior entered the Fish-dragon Realm and completed even one change, they would go through an earthshaking change. Their strength would double and they would continuously approach the Holy Road.

After opening up five holy meridians and going through the Nine Changes in the Fish-dragon Realm, a warrior obtained a Glazed Treasured Body, which would not decay and would be immortal. Then they would be qualified to challenge Half-Saint Realm.

It was very hard to reach the Half-Saint Realm and it was far beyond a warrior's imagination.

Hua Qingye of the Poisonous Spider Club was not ordinary. He had practiced for almost 100 years to reach the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, Congenital Embryonic Breath.

The so-called Congenital Embryonic Breath was to swallow one's Internal Qi and hold it. It could change Spiritual Qi into sustenance and allow the warrior to realm of living without food.

Reaching this realm, a monk could lie below water for a year and not be suffocated or starve to death.

So, once a warrior had entered the Fish-dragon Realm, he had exceeded the mortal realm and was not a warrior anymore.

Zhang Ruochen was still far away from reaching the Fish-dragon Realm.

At this moment, he was refining the Half-Saint's Light in his Qi sea.

The Half-Saint's Light was sacred and immaculate. It floated in the Qi sea like a mysterious light flying in the sky and it contained a powerful force of soul.

With just only 1% of Half-Saint's Light, the force of soul it contained could also be comparable to the Martial Soul of a

monk in the Seventh Change or even above in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul was very weak in front of the Half-Saint's Light. It was like the stars and the sun competing about which was brighter.

If he could totally refine the cloud of Half-Saint's Light, his Martial Soul would certainly be greatly improved. Of course, he could not reach such a terrifying realm as the Seventh Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

It was like if a person eats a pound of meat, would they be able to grow a pound of flesh?

Apparently not.

Even if Zhang Ruochen completely refined the Half-Saint's Light, his Martial Soul could only absorb one-tenth of it, which was one-thousandth of the soul power of the Half-Saint's Light.

However even one-thousandth of the soul power of the Half-Saint's light should never be looked down on, it would certainly triple or quadruple Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul.

“BAM!”

Zhang Ruochen put his palms together and released the Martial Soul from his body. It floated above his head.

With the Martial Soul breathing and continuously absorbing the Half-Saint's Light, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul became stronger and stronger, taller and taller, and full of a sacred and majestic feeling.

As one's Martial Soul became stronger, their Spiritual Power would also increase, however, the speed on increase would be very slow.

If the Martial Soul increased greatly, the Spiritual Power would only increase by one level.

According to Zhang Ruochen's estimation, it would at least take him three months to completely refine the Half-Saint's Light in his Qi sea.



However, there was no need to completely refine the Half-Saint's Light if he wanted to increase his Spiritual Power to the fortieth level. It was because Zhang Ruochen's current Spiritual Power was very close to the fortieth level. If he wanted to make a breakthrough, he just needed a small push.

Obtaining the Half-Saint's Light was a great chance for him to make a breakthrough.

Zhang Ruochen had been practicing in the internal space of Time and Space Spinel for almost one month and refined nearly one-third of the Half-Saint's Light. His Martial Soul had nearly doubled, and his Spiritual Power had reached level 40.

At this very moment, Zhang Ruochen felt that his soul seemed to have changed entirely, harmonising with some rule between the heaven and earth.

Streaks of invisible Spiritual Power automatically gathered toward Zhang Ruochen's glabella, forming a light spot. It became brighter and brighter.

Zhang Ruochen only felt a surge of heat coming from his glabella. It seemed that he would be split open by it.

“Open Skyeye.”

On his glabella, there was indeed a light streak, forming a vertical slit shape like an eye. In its middle, there was a pupil like a fireball.

The Eye of Spiritual Power.

Only when one's Spiritual Power had reached the fortieth level, could they open up a Skyeye and see what an ordinary person could not see.

“Haha! My Spiritual Power has finally reached the fortieth level. With the Skyeye of Spiritual Power, I can observe more mysterious things.”

Zhang Ruochen stopped refining the Half-Saint's Light and walked out of the Time and Space Spinel. He went outside of the Secret Room of Practice, carefully feeling the oddness and mysteriousness of the Skyeye.

Zhang Ruochen rose to his toes and flew into the sky. He landed on the highest tower of the Practice Mansion. With his feet on the glazed tiles, he looked into the distance.

Even before Zhang Ruochen could open up his Skyeye, he could see further than others did. He had a stunning vision.

However, when Zhang Ruochen looked to the distance with his Skyeye, he actually saw through the city wall of Devil Martial City. He could directly see the mountains 400 kilometers away.

Most importantly, what he saw was quite clear.

About 400 kilometers away, two savage beasts were fighting. One of them was a tiger with golden hair of more than three meters tall, and the other one was a golden snake with a purple crown.

They fought fiercely, breaking down many tall trees.

In the end, the golden snake with the purple crown won and swallowed the tiger with golden hair in one bite.

This is fabulous and amazing! This counts as being clairvoyant, right?

The Skyeye in Zhang Ruochen's glabella kept flashing. The light it emitted was even brighter.

Other than this, Zhang Ruochen found that the penetrating power of the Skyeye was also extremely powerful. Even if there was an obstacle, it could not block his vision.

Just like the city wall of Devil Martial City which was not only thick and wide but it also had Inscriptions of Array in it, however, Zhang Ruochen could see through it without using much Spiritual Power.

He turned his eyes and looked down at the ground. He could easily see the landforms and the creatures 60 kilometers below in the ground. Soldiers buried deep down, rotten bones, and broken armor...they were all presented in front of Zhang Ruochen.

This was a sight of the underground of the Devil Martial City which other warriors could not see at all.

“By using the Skyeeye and the Sword Defending Technique with my current cultivation, it will be easy for me to headshot someone over 60 kilometers away. “

It was 60 kilometers and not 600 kilometers away because Zhang Ruochen was still in the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm and the Genuine Qi inside his body was not enough.

It was already difficult to control the sword when it flew 60 kilometers away.

Once he could reached a higher realm, he would be able to control it.

Although his cultivation was still in the fourth realm of Martial Arts, with his current strength, he had already exceeded the Martial Arts and reached another level.

He could compete with the Nine Miracles Prodigy of Legend.

The so-called Nine Miracles Prodigy was not as simple as just crossing the nine realms.

Why was he so powerful?

First, they trained their Spiritual Power into the fortieth level when they were less than twenty years old. Since ancient time, there had been few such people.

Second, they had a powerful Martial Soul. With Zhang Ruochen’s current Martial Soul, he could be compared with warriors in Fish-dragon Realm.

Third, Heart Integrated into Sword Realm.

If a warrior at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm had even one of the three conditions, he could be a prestigious favored son of God.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had them all. With his current strength, it would be strange if he could not exceed the Martial Arts.

After absorbing the Half-Saint’s Light, Zhang Ruochen’s Martial Soul power doubled. He could now regulate the Spiritual Qi in heaven and earth.

Zhang Ruochen was confident that he could defeat Hua Qingye if they met again.

“Generally speaking, when a warrior’s Spiritual Power reaches level 40, they can get some special abilities. I wonder what special abilities I have received?”

When one’s Spiritual Power had reached level 40, he could be called a master of Spiritual Power in Kunlun’s Field.

Some of them could use their Spiritual Power to call up thunder and lightning. They would be called Master of Thunder or Master of Lightning.

Some of them could use the Spiritual Power to summon wind and call for rain, they were called Master of Rain or Master of Wind.

...

Zhang Ruochen guessed that his new special ability may be related to thunder and lightning. After all, his Martial Soul included thunder and lightning nature.

So Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and stretched out one finger, pointing at the vault of heaven.

Suddenly, a streak of purple lightning shot out of the originally sunny sky. It was like a dragon flying across the sky. It hit on the square in the center of Devil Martial City.

Immediately after, there was a loud banging sound. The entire Devil Martial City seemed to shake.

Suddenly, all of the Inscriptions of Array around the Devil Martial City were activated, shooting out many columns. They formed many Defense Formations and covered the entire city.

“Boom!”

There was a giant pit with a diameter of more than ten meters in the square center, which was caused by the lightning.

Around the giant pit, there was a large area of blackness on which there were many horrible cracks appearing. Some cracks were one meter wide. It was like the earth had split open.

There were countless densely packed lines of lightning that looked like horned purple dragons. They covered the entire square and made hissing sounds.

The horrible destructive force created by thunder and lightning scared the warriors standing around the square.

It was really like a thunderbolt out of a clear sky.

“Swoosh!”

“Swoosh!”

Masters of the School of the Martial Market and Yuntai Suzerain thought there was a peerless master coming to make trouble in Devil Martial City. They all came at once.

Among them, there was also Master of Silver Gowned Elder Hall, Lei Jing.

Lei Jing released his Genuine Qi. With a banging sound, he fell from the sky and landed on the edge of the giant pit. His mighty body was very tall and upright. With his hands on his back, he looked at the square that was completely destroyed and showed a worried expression. He said to himself, “What a formidable power. Has the Blood Spirit Queen arrived in Devil Martial City?”

He certainly did not think of Zhang Ruochen. After all Zhang Ruochen was just in the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. No matter how outstanding he was, he could not have such a formidable power and influence.

# Chapter 367 - See Through Senior Sister Apprentice Duanmu

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Because of the shocking thunder in the sunny sky, all the warriors in Devil Martial City were nervous, thinking of that there was a powerful enemy coming. All defense strategies were activated at the first opportunity.

On one hand, they were worried that there was a fifth level savage beast or even a beast wave coming to attack.

On the other hand, they were worried that there were evil masters in the Fish-dragon Realm coming to make trouble in Devil Martial City.

Whether it was a fifth level savage beast or evil masters in the Fish-dragon Realm, they could both cause considerable damage. The various forces in the city were all very careful. If there was any carelessness, there would be a terrible catastrophe in Devil Martial City.

Once a fifth level savage beast from the depth of Omen Ridge intruded in on Devil Martial City. It caused thousands of casualties and deaths and it needed the Master of the Yuntai Suzerain to come to suppress them in time. Otherwise, the casualties would have been even greater.

“What a great lightning strike! It’s definitely not a natural thunderbolt.”

“Did the King of Thunder-hawk with the golden crown come to Devil Martial City?”

“It may not be him. It is said the Master of the Hades Department has opened the Sacred Mark of Thunder Evil. The Spirit of Thunder Skill he has practiced also has this strength.”

...

All kinds of guesses spread through Devil Martial City.

Although he was the initiator of this incident, Zhang Ruochen seemed very calm. He slightly nodded his head, showing that he was very satisfied with the power of the attack.

It was enough on a par with a full blow of a Monk in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

“The legend goes that a Spiritual Power master could challenge the warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm. It’s certainly true,” Zhang Ruochen said.

When one’s Spiritual Power reached level 40, they would be known as a “master of Spiritual Power”.

When one’s Spiritual Power reached level 45, they would be known as a “Half-Saint of Spiritual Power”.

When one’s Spiritual Power reached above level 50, they would be known as a “Psychic Sage”.

Spiritual Power and Martial Arts were actually two different roads of Practice.

For example, as long as the Spiritual Power of a well-educated scholar who had never practiced martial arts reached level 40, he would become a top master.

Of course, Spiritual Power and Martial Arts had many things in common and they could be practiced at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen’s talent in Spiritual Power far exceeded his talent in Martial Arts. However, he did not just practice the Spiritual Power but chose to practice both.

In his last lifetime, he had persisted in practicing both.

And in this lifetime, he still persisted in doing the same thing.

The advantage of a Monk of Spiritual Power was not obvious before his Spiritual Power reached level 40. If there were a

fight, he would be far less powerful than a warrior.

Only when a monk's Spiritual Power reached level 40 and above could his advantage gradually appear.

A young woman's laughter came from below. The sound was as beautiful as the sound of windchimes.

"Zhang Ruochen, why are you climbing so high? Aren't you afraid of falling to your death?"

Hearing the young woman's laughter, Zhang Ruochen lowered his head and took a look. He saw a graceful woman standing in the center of the courtyard. She looked like a teenage girl. But her figure was startling. She had snow-white skin, a long thin neck, plump breasts, slender waist, flat abdomen, and a delicate navel. And below there was...ah...

"How could this happen?"

At this moment, Zhang Ruochen's eyes were directly staring at Duanmu Xingling. He swallowed slightly. It was like he was seeing something startling.

"Why does senior sister apprentice Duanmu...come to my Practice Mansion without wearing anything?"

It did not immediately occur to Zhang Ruochen that he had opened the Skyeye and could easily see through Duanmu Xingling's clothes and her close-fitting gauze bellyband.

The scene was very amazing and romantic. And it was extremely alluring.

Probably no man could look away from her even if she was wearing clothes.

Much less her flawless figure being exposed in front of Zhang Ruochen right now.

Of course, the reason that Zhang Ruochen did not look away was not that he had a crush on Duanmu Xingling's body. Actually, he was shocked more than anything else. He was shocked that she came to his Practice Mansion without wearing anything.



Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was staring at her and his expression was becoming hotter and hotter as well as more and more bizarre, Duanmu Xingling blinked her eyes with a smile. She said softly, "It's not so long since we last saw each other. You don't need to look at me like that. Is it that I'm more beautiful than Sister Chen?"

Zhang Ruochen finally recognized what had happened. He was very embarrassed and quickly withdrew his Skyeye.

He looked at Duanmu Xingling again...everything was normal!

Duanmu Xingling wore a silver robe. Her skin looked particularly white with the dress. A green jade belt was attached to her waist with a butterfly-shaped jade pendant hanging from it.

It was like she would never grow old and always have the appearance of a teenager. And her figure became more and more perfect and alluring. She was a truly entrancing figure.

Suddenly, the beautiful scene appeared again in Zhang Ruochen's mind, which made him feel a little uncomfortable.

Duanmu Xingling was very surprised. And her round eyes were opened wide. She walked toward Zhang Ruochen and asked, "Zhang Ruochen, what's wrong with you today?"

Luckily, Duanmu Xingling did not know the truth. Otherwise, she would not be so calm right now and would definitely force Zhang Ruochen to be responsible for her.

Zhang Ruochen coughed drily to cover his inner embarrassment and he answered, "It's nothing. Maybe I have not recovered from the injury a while ago."

Duanmu Xingling had heard about Zhang Ruochen's injury long ago. But Kong Xuan had told her that Zhang Ruochen was secluding to refine himself every time she had come to visit him.

It was not until today that she finally saw Zhang Ruochen.

Duanmu Xingling asked in a concerned tone, "We will be off to the divine land of Eastern Region to attend the Saint

Academy's examination in few more days. You have to recover as soon as possible and try hard to get first place, suppressing all the talents in the Eastern Region, so the Young Geniuses in the entire Eastern Region will see the elegance of the warriors in our Omen Ridge."

Afterward, she took out an icing cold jade casket half a foot long from her storage bracelet and gave it to Zhang Ruochen. She said, "This is a fifth level healing pill, Pill of Dragon Bone. You take and swallow it."

Zhang Ruochen refused, saying, "My injury is not urgent. Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, you don't have to be so good to me."

Zhang Ruochen had already recovered from his injury long ago. He had said that because he was embarrassed. He never thought that Duanmu Xingling would be so warm-hearted.

Duanmu Xingling rolled her eyes at Zhang Ruochen. She said, "Sister Chen is not here. As her best sister, I certainly should take good care of you for her."

Duanmu Xingling seemed to feel that it was inappropriate for her to say this, so she said again, "Right. You have a fortune of one million Spiritual Crystals. Only a fifth-level healing pill is nothing in your eyes."

Zhang Ruochen nodded his head with a bitter smile. He quickly took over the jade casket which contained the Pill of Dragon Bone.

If he did not, he would possibly offend this senior sister apprentice.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen took the pill, Duanmu Xingling was secretly pleased. She did not know why she was so happy. She seemed to be ten times happier than getting a Pill of Dragon Bone herself.

"You talked about the Saint Academy's examination before. Are you also going to the divine land of Eastern Region?" Zhang Ruochen asked.

Duanmu Xingling smiled and said, "Of course. The Saint Academy of the School of the Martial Market has cultivated

many Saints. It has a long history and deep culture. Many Young Geniuses want to get into the Saint Academy for further study. However, the Saint Academy has a very high threshold, which requires cultivation to at least be in the Heaven Realm, and there is also a requirement for age. Warriors who can get into the Saint Academy are all top talents.”

Zhang Ruochen did not worry about the Saint Academy’s examination at all. With his strength and talent, he could pass it for sure or even receive exceptional admission.

It was not a big problem for Duanmu Xingling either.

Recently, Duanmu Xingling had been refining the drop of Dragon’s Blood, even if Zhang Ruochen did not use the Skyeye, he could see that her strength was improved.

However, Zhang Ruochen always felt that there was a layer of mysterious fog covering Duanmu Xingling. It was hard to see the real her.

Her strength seemed to be not as simple as it looked, and even her body and appearance seemed to not be real either. Though Zhang Ruochen had seen them clearly.

In the past, Zhang Ruochen had never had this feeling.

This feeling did not come until his Spiritual Power reached the 40th level.

Duanmu Xingling’s real identity was the Saintess of heresy. She, carefully chosen by the Saint of the heresy, was a representative of the younger generation in the heresy.

With her intelligence, even if she was not invincible, she was among the top of her peers.

Her true strength was certainly not as simple as Zhang Ruochen had seen.

However, she had a seal around her body which had been set by the pontifex himself. Even the Saints with top Spiritual Power in the School of the Martial Market could not see through her disguise, let alone Zhang Ruochen.

If the heresy were not completely sure, they would not dare to send their Saintess to the School of the Martial Market.

Duanmu Xingling wanted to visit Concubine Lin and, naturally, Zhang Ruochen took her with him.

Duanmu Xingling delivered a carefully prepared gift to Concubine Lin in person. It was a Spiritual Dose called Colorful Begonia, which could prolong life.

Concubine Lin liked Duanmu Xingling very much. Seeing her beautiful smile, she felt that the girl was clever and sensible. She pulled Duanmu Xingling over to sit by her side.

In the end, she asked Duanmu Xingling to stay and have lunch with her.

There was another visitor except Duanmu Xingling who was staying and having lunch, it was the Ninth Commandery Princess.

Ten days ago, the Ninth Commandery Princess had been picked up in the School of the Martial Market. But Zhang Ruochen had been secluding himself for refining, so he had not seen her until today.

After lunch, Duanmu Xingling left.

Zhang Ruochen and the Ninth Commandery Princess also left Concubine Lin's courtyard and arrived at the Secret Room, where Zhang Ruochen usually practiced.

They closed the stone door and opened up the array.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was very cautious, the Ninth Commandery Princess became serious. She guessed that Zhang Ruochen must have an important thing to tell her since he brought her along to the Secret Room.

Zhang Ruochen took out a Spiritual Crystal of light series and put it on the stone desk to light up the Secret Room.

The Ninth Commandery Princess said, "Ninth brother, what on earth is it? Why are you so cautious?"

Zhang Ruochen replied, "It's nothing serious. It's just that I will go to the divine land of Eastern Region in a few days, and

I won't get back to Omen Ridge in a short period of time. So, before I leave here, I want to tell you something, and there are something that I want to give to you."

"Oh!"

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was so powerful, the Ninth Commandery Princess somehow always felt that she was the little sister and he was the big brother.

Zhang Ruochen said seriously, "When a warrior's cultivation reaches the Heaven Realm, his hearing and vision will be greatly increased. So I can't talk about something or do something outside, in case someone overhears it or sees it. You must remember this from now on. In the Martial World, you have to be very careful and cautious. Any careless act will be a disaster."

# Chapter 368 - A Bright Future

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Ninth Commandery Princess nodded her head and stood there squarely. She solemnly listened to every word that Zhang Ruochen said.

Zhang Ruochen took out a storage pendant which was made of crystal blue jade. It was exquisitely carved. Holding it in his hand, he could feel a slightly icy air.

Zhang Ruochen took one step forward and put the storage pendant on the Ninth Commandery Princess's neck. He said, "Not only can the storage pendant store things, when you are in danger, just infuse your Genuine Qi into it and it will activate the defense inscription to save your life. But it can only be used three times. Ninth sister, you have to use it carefully."

This was not only an amulet but a Space Treasure. The Ninth Commandery Princess knew clearly its value.

The Ninth Commandery Princess gently touched the crystal-clear and beautiful pendant. She loved it so much.

Zhang Ruochen continued to say, "I put a few things inside the storage pendant for you. There are 550,000 Spiritual Crystals..."

Before Zhang Ruochen had finished, the Ninth Commandery Princess shouted, "550,000 Spiritual Crystals! Ninth brother, I can't spend so much. 10,000 Spiritual Crystals are enough for me!"

550,000 Spiritual Crystals equaled 500 million silver coins, which was more than what was in the Yunwu Commandery's national treasury.

Never mind the fact that the Ninth Commandery Princess was a warrior at the completion of the Black Realm, even for a warrior in the Completion of Heaven Realm, that was a sizable fortune.

Zhang Ruochen said, "If you practice step by step, you won't spend so many Spiritual Crystals by the time you reach the Completion of the Heaven Realm."

"But, I am giving you these Spiritual Crystals because I hope that you will be able to buy the best pills to increase your cultivation and refine your physical quality."

"In the meantime, it can also save you time in terms of going outside to get experience and merits. In this case, you will have more time to practice your Martial Arts. Only in this way can you be ahead of your peers."

"When you are on the road of the Martial Arts, you should not be afraid of spending money. Spiritual Crystal is not as valuable as time. You should improve your cultivation as quickly as you can when you are young. Only in this way can your practicing speed get quicker and quicker, thus leaving your peers far behind."

"Is 550,000 Spiritual Crystals a lot?"

"It's actually not. The top genius in the Saint families and the Half-Saint families spend over 1 million Spiritual Crystals in the Four Realm of Martial Arts. And a top genius like Di Yi probably spends more than 10 million Spiritual Crystals. So, it is impossible for warriors in Omen Ridge to catch up with them."

"Thus the disparity will get bigger and bigger."

The Ninth Commandery Princess thought that what Zhang Ruochen had said seemed to make sense. But she still thought that 550,000 Spiritual Crystals were too much. She did not know how to use them up.

However, Zhang Ruochen did not care about this. He continued, "Except Spiritual Crystals, I also put a more valuable thing in the storage pendant. It is the authentic Half-Saint's Sacred Glyph left by Brightness Half-saint. It is of no use to me. However, it can help you practice your Spiritual Power and understand the Martial Arts of Half-Saint in the glyph at the same time."

The Ninth Commandery Princess's mouth dropped open. She was too shocked to say anything.

She had seen the Half-Saint's Sacred Glyph in the Western Campus. However, that was just a Rubbings Scroll. Even so, she could only perceive it for one day each month.

And now, Zhang Ruochen just given her the authentic Half-Saint's Sacred Glyph. This fortune was definitely more valuable than the 550,000 pieces of Spiritual Crystals.

"Ninth brother..."

The Ninth Commandery Princess blinked her beautiful eyes. She was totally surprised.

In the past, she had just thought that her ninth brother was an amazing genius. However, she had never thought that her ninth brother had so many practicing resources and he was richer than the Master of a great Suzerain.

It could be said that with these resources that Zhang Ruochen gave her were enough to help the Royal Family to recover its strength within 10 years.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "You don't need to say anything. I understand. You are my ninth sister. If I don't give you the treasure like the Half-Saint's Sacred Glyph, then who should I give it to? Ninth sister, it's just a matter of time that your cultivation will exceed fourth brother's. The future of the Yunwu Commandery depends on you!"

In fact, Zhang Ruochen also wanted to write down some rare books of martial technique and give them to the Ninth Commandery Princess.

However, with Zhang Ruochen's current cultivation, he could only write about martial techniques in the mid-class of



Spiritual Stage at most. It was very hard to write down the martial techniques in the Superior class of Spiritual Stage. They could not learn the quintessence of them unless Zhang Ruochen stayed and taught them hand by hand.

Obviously, Zhang Ruochen did not have so much time.

On the contrary, there were many complete martial techniques that they could choose from in the library of the School of the martial Market.

Therefore, it was better to tell Lei Jing and ask him to take more care of the Ninth Commandery Princess and Zhang Shaochu than to have Zhang Ruochen teach them some martial techniques that lacked quintessence.

With just one word from Lei Jing, they could freely choose martial techniques from the School of the Martial Market.

Zhang Ruochen believed that he had such an influence in Lei Jing's heart and Lei Jing would also like to help him.

“Thank you, ninth brother.”

The Ninth Commandery Princess tightly hugged Zhang Ruochen's strong waist with her lotus-root-like arms then she leaned against Zhang Ruochen's chest and cried.

She knew that her ninth brother was going to leave now!

He probably would not even come back in the future. She just wanted to hug him a little longer.

Maybe this was farewell forever.

The eagle would be away from the nest; the roc would fly over thousands of miles, and the hidden dragon would soar up into the sky. The vast world was their home. They might not be back to such a nest as Omen Ridge.

...

In the morning, the sun was just rising. When the first light of the sun shone upon Devil Martial City, the gold-glazed tiles in the city were covered with a layer of bright light.

A Dragon-eagle of more than 40 meters long opened its wings and flew up, emitting a majestic aura of Reckless Waste.

With its wings fluttering, thunder sounded in the sky. Afterward, it shot up to the sky.

At this moment, Lei Jing, Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Duanmu Xingling, Concubine Lin, Kong Xuan, and Guoguo all sat on the back of the Dragon-eagle. They were going to the divine land of Eastern Region to attend the Saint Academy's examination which was held once every ten years.

The Dragon-eagle was Lei Jing's transportation tool. It was a fifth level inferior savage beast. It had golden feathers and a Divine Dragon-like head. It was strong and mighty and could be considered the king of savage beasts.

Originally, Lei Jing had spent three years fighting with it dozens of times to subdue it.

The Dragon-eagle's flying speed was astonishing. It took only one day to fly out of Omen Ridge's field. There were still mountains and hills on the ground. Being covered with fog and cloud, the scene was like a giant map scroll.

Everyone was very joyful and excited and full of expectation because it was their first time visiting the divine land of Eastern Region.

Even Lei Jing also signed with deep emotion because he had not been in the divine land for a long time. He had been staying in a small place like Omen Ridge. The ambition of his youth had been worn away long ago.

Ever since he started to practice the Blood and God Classics, he had gotten his confidence back.

Not only did he want to bring Zhang Ruochen and others to attend the Saint Academy's examination but also he wanted to look for a chance to reach the Half-Saint Realm in this visit to the divine land of Eastern Region.

On the ground.

The Blood Spirit Queen stood on the top of a mountain. She looked at the giant Dragon-eagle and frowned slightly, "Is it possible that they are going to the divine land of Eastern Region?"

In Devil Martial City, the Blood Spirit Queen had not got the chance to attack.

It was not until today that she saw that Lei Jing taking Zhang Ruochen and the others out of Devil Martial City and followed them.

The Dragon-eagle had already flown out of the field of Omen Ridge. It did not want to stop, so the Blood Spirit Queen started to doubt.

“Since it is so, I will also go to the divine land of Eastern Region. Maybe I can merge the Half-Saint’s Light sooner.”

The Blood Spirit Queen turned around and took a look at Omen Ridge. A disdainful smile appeared on her cold and pale face. Afterward, her body turned into a blood cloud and continued to chase after the Dragon-eagle.

On the back of the Dragon-eagle, Chang Qiqi was reading the about the geography of the Eastern Region. The more he read, the more excited he was.

Si Xingkong was also reading the about the geography of the Eastern Region, however, the more he read, the more he frowned.

Chang Qiqi laughed out loud and said, “If I didn’t read it, I would never know it. I was a frog living at the bottom of a well before, thinking of that the 36 commanderies in Omen Ridge were very vast and I would be a big figure if I were famous in Omen Ridge. Now I just found out that Omen Ridge is a tiny little place in the Eastern Region.”

Si Xingkong said, “According to the record of the latest geography of the Eastern Region, there are 106 superior class commanderies in Eastern Region and about 12,000 inferior commanderies and medium class commanderies. There are newly built commanderies and destroyed commanderies almost every year. Only the 106 superior class commanderies are relatively stable, because of their powerful national strength and long history. How vast is the world! I was also a frog living at the bottom of the well.”

Lei Jing was standing on the top of the Dragon-eagle. His body was like a metal tower, majestic and terrifying. He said, “Those inferior commanderies and medium class commanderies were all wild places with ubiquitous savage beasts, barren hills, and turbulent rivers until Empress Chi Yao ascended the throne and built a civilized country. Therefore, Empress Chi Yao’s political and military achievements were matchless. Even if many emperors have appeared one after another since ancient time, no one can compare with her.”

“The inferior commanderies and medium-class commanderies have changed frequently because of their short history and shallow culture. Only those superior class commanderies are more stable because they have a longer history and more profound Martial Arts Inheritance.”

“Of course, the history of superior-class commanderies is not worth mentioning in front of the divine land of Eastern Region.”

“Since ancient time, the Eastern Region that people talked about was the divine land of Eastern Region, which had nothing to do with the commanderies built in the wild.”

“In their eyes, we are just a group of uncivilized barbarians and savages.”

When Lei Jing had been young, he had been pushed aside and looked down upon. Therefore, he knew well the pride of warriors in the divine land of Eastern Region. In their eyes, warriors of the commanderies were nothing.

Never mind the warriors in the divine land of Eastern Region, even the backbone of the imperial court of the First Central Empire did not think much of them either and regarded them as a group of savages.

Therefore, they were allowed to build commandery. Otherwise, the imperial court would have changed the commandery into a shire long ago, building up a more perfect system.

Zhang Ruochen gently nodded his head. He said, “The so-called superior commanderies, medium commanderies, and

inferior commanderies are too tiny, the total area of more than 10,000 commanderies combined is far less than the divine land of Eastern Region.”

“In that vast land, the Martial Arts have been developed to its limit and even diverges from the Holy Road. And, even the Holy Road has been developed to the level of great success. Someone can reach the level of ‘Saint King’, which is the king of all saints.”

# Chapter 369 - Divine Land of Eastern Region, Flaming Red Crow Prince

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“The divine land of Eastern Region is a place where people with unusual ability are to be found, talents come forth in large numbers, and many holy schools are located. Here, if warriors can't become saints, they will always be nonentities.”

Lei Jing signed again, “So you must keep a low profile this time when you go to the divine land of Eastern Region because it is much more difficult than you expect to enter Saint Academy. Of course, you are all lucky to get one drop of Dragon's Blood from the predecessor Golden Dragon. And because of that, you all have a great chance to get into the Saint Academy.”

Lei Jing's words made his point very clear.

He meant that if you did not get a drop of Golden Dragon, you would not be able to get into the Saint Academy.

Dream on!

Recently, Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi were all refining Dragon's Blood and had made great progress. There was a slight dragon Qi emitting from their bodies as they just sat there. Their bones grew dragon lines and even their spirit had gone through a dramatic change as well.

Although they could not become virtuous and talented people, they had already been called rare and precious persons.

Those who were not aware of the situation thought that they were outstanding descendants raised by powerful Saint families.

Zhang Ruochen's progress was obviously greater than theirs. However, Zhang Ruochen's great Spiritual Power could hide his aura perfectly, giving people a feeling of plainness and simpleness instead.

Even Lei Jing was unable to perceive his true strength.

The divine land of the Eastern Region was indeed vast in terrain, it was as if it was endless. Even flying for half a month at the speed of a Dragon-eagle, one could only reach the edge of the divine land of Eastern Region.

It was still very far from their destination, East Region Saint City.

The so-called divine land of Eastern Region covered 70% of the area of the Eastern Region. It was also the most prosperous place, with sacred mountains and Suzerains everywhere. It was unknown how many years humans have reproduced here, leaving many sacred and historical sites.

Everyone continued refining Dragon's Blood and tried their best to increase their strength before the Saint Academy's examination.

Zhang Ruochen was practicing the five Yang-natured Sword Ripples of the Ten Channels. With his Spiritual Power, martial technique practicing was very quick.

After half a month's practice, he had already practiced Sun Meridian Ripple, Void Meridian Ripple, Middle breaking Sword Wave and Heavenly Meridian Ripple into the Succeed Realm.

At present, only the Shaoze Pulse Sword Wave was still in Small Success Realm.

Although the Sword Ripple of Ten Channels was only a Spiritual Stage Superior class martial technique, if one practiced all 10 channels to the Success, ten of their fingers would be linked up and their power would be increased

greatly. They would then possess the power of a martial technique at the inferior class of the Ghost Level.

Even for warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm, if their martial techniques could reach the inferior class of Ghost Level, then they could immediately become masters in the Fish-dragon Realm.

It would be as difficult as to climb up into the sky for warriors in the Earth Realm and the Heaven Realm if they wanted to learn the martial technique of inferior class of Ghost Level.

There are exceptions, of course. For example, Di Yi and the Seven Kills Emissary. However, there were very few of top talents in the entire Eastern Region.

The Dragon-eagle had been flying for about three days and had completely entered the divine land of Eastern Region.

At dusk, there was a red sea of fire in the sky. Its magnificent color gave a feeling of breath-taking beauty.

At the very beginning, everyone had not felt anything, just thinking that it was just the setting sun.

However, as it got closer and closer, the color of the sea of fire became brighter and brighter. Furthermore, they could see lightning and hear the thunder in sea of fire.

Streaks of giant Genuine Qi waves rushed toward the Dragon-eagle like water waves.

Giant Genuine Qi waves contained a huge amount of heat. Luckily, Lei Jing released his Genuine Qi at the first moment and held back the impact of the giant Genuine Qi waves.

Lei Jing widened his eyes. He suddenly stood up and said, "Everyone, be careful. Human warriors and savage beasts are fighting with each other in front."

Lei Jing did not need to say more. They had all stood up one by one and had already seen the scene in the sea of fire.

In the middle of the sea of fire, there was a big silver boat floating in it. It was larger than the Red Spider Vessel. It was obviously a top flying type Genuine Martial Arms.



Thousands of fire crows with three legs surrounded the big silver boat. They kept attacking the defense strategy of the big silver boat, making banging sound.

“They are level three superior-class savage beasts, Flaming Red Crow. There are actually thousands of them, that’s terrifying!” Chang Qiqi’s expression became a bit pale.

The fighting capacity of a savage beast of the superior class in the third level was almost the same as the strength of warriors in the Completion of the Earth Realm.

Thousands of level three superior class savage beasts were thousands of warriors in the completion of the Earth Realm. One could imagine how terrifying the savage beasts were.

No wonder the sky within 50 miles was lit up by the fire. Even the ground had already turned into a flaming fire.

The Flaming Red Crow had the blood of a golden crow, which was a mythical bird in ancient times.

So, even if Flaming Red Crow was a level three savage beast. With the blood of the mythical bird, as long as they practiced hard, they could change and grow, having the chance to turn into level four, level five, or even level six or level seven savage beasts.

The offspring of mythical beasts and mythical birds had no limit with their growth and had infinite potential.

Of course, there were very few savage beasts that could change, which was one in a million. The higher level it got, the harder it would be.

“BAM!”

At this very moment, a golden light broke open the cloud.

A scorching sun actually appeared in the sky.

It was already dusk yet suddenly, the sun rode high in the sky. Time seemed to go backward, becoming noon again.

All the warriors on the silver giant boat had a surprised expression. A young student shouted, “Look, there are two

suns in the sky. One is going to sink over the horizon; and the other one is hung above us.”

“How could this odd scene happen?”

Also on the silver giant boat, an elder in golden martial robe raised his head and looked. His expression changed greatly. He said, “It is not the sun but a Flaming Red Crow Prince, which is a fifth level superior class savage beast.”

The elder in golden robes seemed to be 60 years old with his hair being white and his complexion like a child’s, which gave a feeling of fierceness and power.

His name was He Yunlou, whose cultivation had already reached the Fish-dragon Realm.

Originally, even if there were thousands of Flaming Red Crows, with He Yunlou’s strength and the defense strategy of the Silver Moon Ship, he could still deal with them.

Flaming Red Crow Prince’s presence made his heart sink.

He knew very well that the defense array of the Silver Moon Ship could not possibly hold back the Flaming Red Crow Prince. Once the array was broken, with his strength, could he fight with the Flaming Red Crow Prince?

He would probably be killed by the Flaming Red Crow Prince within three attacks at most.

The disparity was too wide!

What should he do now?

He Yunlou was worried like an ant on a hot pot. He had brought 37 God’s favored sons and God’s favored daughters from the School of the Martial Market of South Cloud Commandery and headed to East Region Saint City, to attend the Saint Academy’s exam.

When he left South Cloud Commandery, he had already promised Palace Master that he could safely bring these Young Geniuses to the Saint Academy.

No one could ever have expected that they would come across many Flaming Red Crows on their way and an annoyed

Flaming Red Crow Prince.

With his strength, even if he could not defeat the Flaming Red Crow Prince, he was still confident that he could safely escape.

But what about the 37 Young Geniuses of the School of the Martial Market who have been carefully nurtured? Everyone's background was unusual. Some had the background of big families and great Suzerains. They were not just genius students.

If they all died here, even if He Yunlou got back, he would probably be severely punished. His cultivation would be decreased by half even if it was a light punishment; he would be forbidden from cultivating for life if it was a heavy punishment.

“Why do I have such a bad luck?”

Sweat beads gathered on He Yunlou's forehead; he was thinking about the countermeasures.

However, what he could think of was of no use when he was faced with the Flaming Red Crow Prince's absolute strength.

He thought it was just a simple task to send dozens of geniuses to East Region Saint City. With the influence of Martial Market Bank, who dared to provoke them? What kind of dangers could he meet?

However, he, unfortunately, came across the Flaming Red Crow Prince.

At this time, the golden “Sun” on the Silver Moon Ship fell from above and let out a sharp cry.

If one looked carefully, one could see that there was a giant golden fire crow inside the golden fireball, which was almost exactly the same as the mythical golden crow.

The Flaming Red Crow Prince began the attack.

Golden giant claws suddenly attacked the defensive light screen of the Silver Moon Ship, which became dented.

Ripples spread out on the light screen.

The two powers clashed together forming golden fire rain which flew in all directions.

“Bam!”

In the time it took to take three breaths, the defensive light screen of the Silver Moon Ship was smashed by the Flaming Red Crow Prince and exposed itself completely.

“Gaaa!”

Thousands of Flaming Red Crows got excited and flew over, attacking the students of the School of the Martial Market on the Silver Moon Ship.

“Bang! bang!”

The students on the Silver Moon Ship were all in the Heaven Realm. And although they had high cultivation and outstanding talent, they were no match for the numerous Flaming Red Crows.

Other than the Flaming Red Crow Prince and thousands of Flaming Red Crows, there were a few Flaming Red Crows that were forth level savage beasts. Each one had the strength of a warrior in the Heaven Realm.

Those genius students fell into despair.

Some of God’s favored daughters who lacked practical experience were very scared. They could not help but walk toward a young man with the most powerful cultivation.

The young man was called Zi Hansha and looked to be in his 20s. He was very handsome with straight eyebrows and star-like eyes. Even as he faced Flaming Red Crow, he did not frown at all and took the initiative to attack.

He was the first superior among the young generation of School of the Martial Market of South Cloud Commandery. He was also the eldest brother and had once reached top 100 on the Earth Board.

Of course, he had long reached the Heaven Realm. Now his cultivation was unfathomable.

Most of the God's favored daughters thought of him as their idol and adored his strength very much. When they met danger, they certainly could not help but walk toward him, hoping to get his protection.

At present, Elder He was dealing with the Red Crow Prince, and could not be in two places at once. They could only put their hope in the eldest brother Zi Hansha.

The moment the protecting light screen of the Silver Moon Ship was broken, Lei Jing finally saw the logo of School of the Martial Market printed on the boat. So he said, "They are from the School of the Martial Market. Zhang Ruochen, you come with me to rescue and help them."

With these words, Lei Jing's robe flew up and he applied the martial technique of bodily movement of Flying over the Galaxy. He flew toward the sea of fire first, directly attacking the Flaming Red Crow Prince.

Following that, Zhang Ruochen applied bodily movement of the Shadow of the Royal Wind Dragon. The Genuine Qi emitted from his body and formed an illusory image of a flying dragon. It rushed toward the Silver Moon Ship.

# Chapter 370 - Assistance

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

On the Silver Moon Ship, flames flashed in all directions.

The many Flaming Red Crows were like fireballs and washed over the group, letting out sharp squawking sounds and going to attack the genius students.

Among them, there was a man with four eyes. His martial cultivation had reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. He was a genius cultivated by School of the Martial Market of South Cloud Commandery.

Although he was young, he had fierce fighting force.

He held a Stick of Wind and Fire and kept swinging it, knocking away the Flaming Red Crows.

Under his feet, there were more than ten dead Flaming Red Crows.

However, less than two breaths later, a golden Flaming Red Crow flew out. It attacked his neck with one claw and pierced through his chin, lifting him up.

In a flash, he was lifted up 33 meters into the sky with screams coming out of his mouth.

“Ah! Elder He...Eldest brother...Help me...”

The golden Flaming Red Crow tossed him up. It stretched out two claws and tore his body in half, which fell down into the group of crows. They ate it all without even leaving a bone.

The Stick of Wind and Fire fell from above and dropped onto the deck with a bang.

One of God's favored sons who had a chance to enter the Saint Academy died a violent death like this before he could truly rise.

Seeing this, half of the students on the Silver Moon Ship were scared witless. Their faces turned pale.

“Chen Yumin...just died like this...Eldest brother, help me...”

Just a moment ago, a very pretty God's favored daughter was grabbed by two Flaming Red Crows, because she froze for one second. She was dismembered and turned to flesh and blood in the Flaming Red Crow's stomach.

At this moment, He Yunlou was working hard to control the Flaming Red Crow Prince. He had no extra energy to help them.

As for the eldest brother Zi Hansha, he was also surrounded by Flaming Red Crows and was busy enough with his own affairs. He could not take the risk to rescue others.

The reason why Zi Hansha could be called the eldest brother was because he was truly a top-level master. Not only had his cultivation had already reached the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, but also he had practiced the Martial Soul successfully.

Furthermore, he was very calm. Even if he was caught in a siege, he could actually remain calm.

Obviously, he was battle-scarred and had experienced the danger of life and death.

Within a very short time, Zi Hansha had already killed more than 40 Flaming Red Crows. Every move he struck out, one Flaming Red Crow must fall down.

All of the genius students could not help but get close to him.

As long as we stand near the eldest brother, it would always be much safer.

“Eldest brother...Help me...”

There was someone asking for help again.

Zi Hansha looked toward the direction of the sound. More than 30 meters away, a young woman, as beautiful as a fairy, was

being attacked by four golden Flaming Red Crows.

After having fought for so long, everyone had an idea about the Flaming Red Crow's ability.

Almost every golden Flaming Red Crow was a Fourth-level Savage Beast.

If it had been anyone else it wouldn't have mattered. But the woman was Xue Yingrou, the first beauty of South Cloud Commandery.

She was not only beautiful but also very talented. She was a real God's favored daughter. There were many warriors who thought her as their lover in dreams.

Loving beauty was part of human nature.

Otherwise, why was there a saying like "Even a hero falls for beauty"?

Zi Hansha was no exception. Seeing Xue Yingrou was in danger, he immediately took out a War Map and put it in her hand, infusing Genuine Qi into the War Map.

"Swish-"

The War Map opened, and eight Icing Cold Birds of Fourth-level Savage Beast rushed out. They beat back the Flaming Red Crows which were surrounding Zi Hansha.

Taking advantage of this opportunity, Zi Hansha rushed toward Xue Yingrou.

However, Zi Hansha had only moved three steps and before he was surrounded by a crowd of Flaming Red Crows again. This put him in a difficult position.

As for the eight Icing Cold Birds, they had long been smashed by the Flaming Red Crow which had rushed over, and turned into streaks of blood fog of Genuine Qi, dissipating in the air.

Just now, Zi Hansha was hit by a golden Flaming Red Crow on his shoulder, breaking his Celestial Bodyshield.

Luckily, he had an amulet treasure with him which just managed to fend off the attack. Otherwise, one of his arms would be severely wounded.



Zi Hansha spared a glance at Xue Yingrou, showing an expression of helplessness. He shook his head slightly. Afterward, he ignored Xue Yingrou and concentrated his effort on withholding the widespread attack from the Flaming Red Crows.

A hero saving a beauty was certainly nice, but the hero had to act according to his ability.

It was not worth it to throw his life in as well. After all, Zi Hansha was fated to be the king of the Saint Academy. He could never die here.

Seeing Zi Hansha moved back, Xue Yingrou was completely desperate. Under the attack of four golden Flaming Red Crows, she had to hide in a corner of the boat and withstood the attacks with difficulty. Her originally perfect body was covered with three bloody marks.

At this moment, Lei Jing yelled loudly, “Ruinous beast, how dare you fight with School of the Martial Market, you are looking for your own death.”

“Rumble, rumble!”

In the sky, there was a loud sound. Lei Jing performed the Blood Magic Shadow as he fought against the Flaming Red Crow Prince.

At the same time, Zhang Ruochen stood, in a silver robe and with a sword his hand, in the void space, coming to assist the Silver Moon Ship from the distance.

His sword did not fly out from the scabbard.

Even so, he could beat the Flaming Red Crows into blood and flesh with the sword scabbard.

When Zhang Ruochen was still about 100 meters away from the Silver Moon Ship, a large group of Flaming Red Crows flew toward him and initiated the attack. Some spat out fire and some struck out claws.

Zhang Ruochen stepped on the back of a Flaming Red Crow and rose up. Then he waved his left arm, striking out a handprint.

“Dragon in the Sky.”

A ten-meter dragon-shaped illusory image flew out of Zhang Ruochen’s palm. He killed 14 Flaming Red Crows, which turned into a shower of blood, falling down from the sky.

Zhang Ruochen spared a glance at the Silver Moon Ship, finding out that the students of School of the Martial Market were all struggling and in peril.

Since they were all students of the School of the Martial Market, if he could rescue them, he certainly would do that.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen withdrew his Abyss Ancient Sword and rushed to Silvermoon at a speed faster than sound. His move was so swift that even turned his figure into a series of shadows.

After the brief moment, those shadows overlapped each other, forming Zhang Ruochen’s body.

At this moment, he had already landed on the boat’s bow. Standing upright, he gave people an elegant feeling of being mighty in spirit and heroic bearing.

Behind him, more than 20 Flaming Red Crows fell from the sky like raindrops.

“What speed in attacking with a sword.”

The genius students on the Silver Moon Ship certainly saw Zhang Ruochen who rushed over to help. At the same time, they also saw Zhang Ruochen’s wonderful swordsmanship just now.

In that moment, before people had seen how he drew his sword, he had already killed more than 20 Flaming Red Crows.

He was too powerful!

Naturally, Zhang Ruochen saw Xue Yingrou who was besieged by four golden Flaming Red Crows. Because he was very close to Xue Yingrou, he immediately rushed over.

Every golden Flaming Red Crow was a Fourth-level Savage Beast.

Among these four golden Flaming Red Crows which were attacking Xue Yingrou, two of them were forth level inferior savage birds; one was a fourth level medium savage bird and one was a fourth level superior savage bird.

The fourth level superior savage bird was the most powerful one, which almost equaled a warrior at the Final State of the Heaven Realm. Otherwise, it could never completely suppress Xue Yingrou.

Furthermore, after reaching the level of Fourth-level Savage Beast, a Flaming Red Crow's defensive power increased greatly. When ordinary Genuine Martial Arms hit on its body, it was like hitting on metal and could not hurt it at all.

If Xue Yingrou did not have an amulet treasure and a combat sword of tenth level Genuine Martial Arms, which made the four golden Flaming Red Crows feel wary, she would probably have been killed long ago.

Even so, she now only in her final struggles.

“Puff!”

With every step Zhang Ruochen moved, he swung with his sword and at least one Flaming Red Crow would be killed.

More and more Flaming Red Crows besieged him. However, they could not stop him. On the contrary, more and more Flaming Red Crows were killed by him.

When he stopped in front of Xue Yingrou, he had already killed more than 100 Flaming Red Crows.

Xue Yingrou, who was standing in the corner, saw Zhang Ruochen's superheroic bearing and was shocked. It was like “One sword attacked. Sword Saint was invincible”.

That was right. At this moment, Zhang Ruochen was like a young Sword Saint. His sword technique had reached the acme of perfection.

While Xue Yingrou was in a daze, a Flaming Red Crow of fourth level medium stretched out its half a meter long claw

and attacked Xue Yingrou's head.

The claw was very sharp and flashed with golden light.

You could imagine that once hit by it, Xue Yingrou's head would definitely be pierced through by the claw.

Xue Yingrou was very scared. However, she was helpless. Not only was her amulet treasure used up, but she was also badly injured. She wanted to dodge but could not.

"I'm afraid I will die here today..."

She thought so in her heart.

"Bam!"

A sword radiance flashed in front of her. The sharp light made her close her eyes immediately.

"Boom!"

When she opened her eyes again, the golden Flaming Red Crow had already dropped to the ground. There was a sword hole on the head of Flaming Red Crow which was bleeding.

Zhang Ruochen grabbed Xue Yingrou by her arm and pulled her to his side to protect her, "Be careful."

Zhang Ruochen struck out his sword twice, and two more golden Flaming Red Crows were killed by him.

At present, only one Flaming Red Crow of the fourth level superior savage bird was circling above Zhang Ruochen and Xue Yingrou.

However, it seemed to be afraid of Zhang Ruochen. It did not attack him immediately but asked three other Flaming Red Crows of third level superior savage birds to attack Zhang Ruochen.

"Swoosh!"

Zhang Ruochen released his Genuine Qi, which formed a blue Celestial Bodyshield with a diameter of five meters. It protected him and Xue Yingrou.

Putting away the Abyss Ancient Sword, Zhang Ruochen struck out Sword Ripple of Ten Channels.

“Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

Zhang Ruochen struck out one finger. A Sword Wave as wide as a bowl flew out and shot down seven or eight Flaming Red Crows.

His Sword Ripple of Ten Channels had reached the Success realm. With ten fingers linked together, it became an inferior Ghost Level martial technique.

When a finger struck out, the power it released was also remarkable.

“Shadow Meridian Ripple!”

“Sword Ripple of Center Spiritual Channels.”

“Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

“Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

...

13 Sword Waves struck out in a row and killed many Flaming Red Crows. On the ground, there were crows' bodies everywhere, stacking into a big pile.

Even the golden Flaming Red Crow of the fourth level superior savage bird was killed by Zhang Ruochen's Sword Wave.

Xue Yingrou stood by Zhang Ruochen's side and was completely shocked. She saw with her own eyes that Zhang Ruochen killed in all directions and was almost invincible. No matter how many Flaming Red Crows flew over, they could not hurt him at all.

“He is too powerful. Even the eldest brother isn't as powerful as he is. Perhaps he is an inheritor of some powerful Saint family?”

Although Xue Yingrou was also a God's favored daughter, she had to admire Zhang Ruochen's strength. At this moment, she raised her head slightly, showing adoration for Zhang Ruochen with tears in her eyes.

It was like how she adored Zi Hansha before.

In a world of showing respect to martial arts, everyone should admit. As long as we stand near the eldest brother, it would always be much safer. The powerful ones, shouldn't they?

“This kind of man should be a true God's favored son!”

Xue Yingrou thought so in her mind.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was so powerful, the students of School of the Martial Market immediately gathered around Zhang Ruochen, hoping that they could survive this ordeal with Zhang Ruochen's protection.

# Chapter 371 - Travelling Together

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

After some time, aside from Xue Yingrou, there were seven talented students gathered around Zhang Ruochen.

“Thank you, my brother, may I know your name?” One of the students asked graciously.

The students of the School of the Martial Market spread all over the world. Although they did not know Zhang Ruochen, they recognized the seal of their school on his gown.

Since they all were the students of the School of the Martial Market, naturally they were fellow apprentices.

Moreover, the power of Zhang Ruochen was so strong that they should respectfully call him “big brother” regardless of his age.

“Let’s attack the Flaming Red Crow first.”

Zhang Ruochen frowned slightly and said, “Well, although you all are the students of the School of the Martial Market, do you have any Combined Attack?”

“Of course we do!”

Standing by the side of Zhang Ruochen, Xue Yingrou immediately took out a fist-sized array of Formation Jade from her sleeves.

Unknowingly, it was Zhang Ruochen’s first time to look at Xue Yingrou right in the face. A feeling of shock overcame him.

A thought immediately surfaced in his mind: “What a striking beauty.”

No matter how strong a person’s spiritual power was and how profound the cultivation was, the appreciation of “beauty” would never change.

Xue Yingrou was the first beauty of the young generation of South Cloud Commandery. Naturally, she was flawless. Whether it be her delicate facial features, or her perfect figure, or even her elegant temperament were all enough to make men infatuated with her.

Of course, Zhang Ruicin was only shocked for a moment, after all, he had already met so many beauties. He then immediately pulled away from his gaze and continued to kill the Flaming Red Crow.

After hearing Zhang Ruochen’s plan, the other genius students took out the Formation Jade together with Xue Yingrou and arranged a Combined Attack.

Previously, Flaming Red Crow Prince had broken through the defense strategy of the Silver Moon Ship with an abrupt charge. They couldn’t retaliate, and they were also separated by countless Flaming Red Crows, so they had no opportunities to use the Combined Attack.

Moreover, they were all geniuses who were arrogant and looked down upon each other. They only treated the elder brother Zi Hansha with reverence and had no respect towards other the geniuses.

Therefore, even though they all belonged to the School of the Martial Market in South Cloud Commandery, they they never talked to each other, in other words, since it was rare for them to unite against the enemy, there was no synergy in their teamwork.

They were still fighting individually when they were in danger. The first thing that came to mind was to save their own lives, instead of using the Combined Attack.

It was not until this moment that the Combined Attack actually worked.



It must be said that they were all talented and indeed extraordinary, and all of them were at the cultivation of the Heaven Realm. After the formation of Combined Attack, the power that erupted out was indeed terrifying.

They dispersed the Flaming Red Crows around for a moment and temporarily eliminated the immediate crisis.

In the other direction, centered on Zi Hansha, the eldest brother, there gathered seventeen talented students.

“Yeah! How can we forget to use the Combined Attack?”

“These Flaming Red Crows are no match for us now that we are using the Combined Attack. Although they can also attack us in groups, we can easily just join together to defend ourselves.”

Zi Hansha looked at Zhang Ruochen at a distance, and he felt that he had been robbed of the limelight. In particular, his eyes grew even colder when he saw Xue Yingrou standing beside Zhang Ruochen.

He did not show any emotion, but ordered,

“Arrange the Combined Attack.”

When those genius students took out the Formation Jades and intended to arrange the Combined Attack, the Flaming Red Crows receded like a tide and turned into a cloud of fire, disappearing into the sky.

They were all amazed at it.

Why had the crows suddenly retreated?

Whatever the reason was, now that the Flaming Red Crows retreated, it meant that they completely survived this attack!

Those genius trainees were naturally excited and breathed out a sigh of relief. The exhilarating feeling of having just survived a disaster was indescribable and they felt like this was worth celebrating.

“CLASH!”

Two silhouettes suddenly dropped down from the sky.

It was Lei Jing and He Yunlou. They nearly landed on the Silver Moon Ship at the same time. The momentum of the body were powerful like two big mountains slamming down onto the ship and shocked the talented students on the Silver Moon Ship.

“My honor, Presbyter He.”

All trainees bowed at He Yunlou.

Although the talented students at present were arrogant, even some were more favored beyond He Yunlou, but does it matter?

He Yunlou was superior in the Fish-dragon Realm which had already surpassed Martial Arts. It was reasonable for him to be admired by other students.

Moreover, even those with high talent may not be able to reach the Fish-dragon Realm. Even with the talent of Zi Hansha, he did not dare to ensure that he would be able to become superior in Fish-dragon Realm.

Since the ancient times, there were countless so-called Five and Six-realm Fighting Geniuses who failed to break through the Fish-dragon Realm and they could only remain as mere mortals and nothing more.

On the contrary, some mediocrities who never performed well, in the beginning, flew into the sky and evolved into dragons from fishes in their Fish-dragon Realm, becoming a saint and great emperor in the end.

Therefore, even with Zi Hansha’s talent, he had to bow down his proud head in front of He Yunlou.

He Yunlou lifted his hands slightly, indicating that they did not have to salute.

Later, He Yunlou moved up to Lei Jing, holding his hands in fists, and said gratefully, “I am He Yunlou, Golden robe Presbyter of the School of the Martial Market in South Cloud Commander, and I’m thankful for your dear friend who defeat the Flaming Red Crow Prince. I’m afraid that our students from South Cloud Commandery would die and get hurt today without your help.”

The talented students from South Cloud Commandery finally came to understand that it was someone who defeated the Flaming Red Crow Prince, so the Flaming Red Crows immediately receded.

They had all seen the gruesome power of the Flaming Red Crow Prince. The one who could defeat it must've been someone extraordinary. Nobody knew what county of the School of the Martial Market did they come from.

Or maybe they were from a mansion of the School of the Martial Market?

The Eastern Region divided into 36 Mansions, each of which was divided into 36 counties. Each county had a School of the Martial Market.

It is the county and the mansion rather than the commandery or offices that really subordinated to the establishment of the First Central Empire.

The magistrate of a county was called "Commandery Magistrate".

The magistrate of a mansion was called "Mansion Master".

According to the area, the size of a county in the Eastern Region was similar to the area of a superior class commandery.

But because this was a divine and fertile land, and it was surrounded with sacred mountains and had a long history, the population of a county was more than ten times than that of a superior commandery.

However, rights of a Commandery Magistrate were much more limited than the rights of a Commandery Prince. Besides, the Commandery Magistrates were also subjected to the direct jurisdiction of the imperial court center and cannot do whatever they like.

Of course, because of the prosperous Martial Arts in the Eastern Region, there were many Half-Saint families, powerful sectarians, and Saint families with a profound background. Young disciples had more choices to go for to

grow their talents. It was not a necessity to join the School of the Martial Market to have a bright future.

Even so, this time the School of the Martial Market in South Cloud Commandery also selected 37 genius who had the opportunity to enter the Saint Academy. They at least were the genius of Three-and-a-half Tricks.

If they went to Omen Ridge, any one of them would've had the talent to rank first in Omen Ridge.

Lei Jing glanced at those genius trainees and sighed in his heart, "This was the Eastern Sacred Region where nurtured so many genius. It could select dozens of top talents in the School of the Martial Market just in a county which was impossible in Omen Ridge."

When Lei Jing looked at Zhang Ruochen, he was getting firm and strong at once. There was nothing to be self-abased. What Omen Ridge used to be could not represent what it is now.

Not to mention that Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong, and Duanmu Xingling, after refining of the Dragon's Blood, also could be at the top level compared with the talented students of South Cloud Commandery.

Lei Jing thought that he would show the old guys in the School of the Martial Market in the Eastern Sacred Region that there also existed talents in Omen Ridge.

Lei Jing and He Yunlou chilled out. After knowing that Lei Jing once was a Saint in the Saint Academy, He YunLou was even more respected and sighed,

"It's no wonder that Brother Lei's cultivation was so powerful. You are the superior of the Saint Academy. I was totally inferior to you and I hadn't even stepped into the entrance of the Saint Academy."

Those talented students in South Cloud Commandery heard it and held Leijing with even more admiration.

What was the Saint Academy?

It was the cradle of saints. There was a rumor that the lecturers inside were all Half-Saints.

None of the monks who came out of the Saint Academy was weak.

Moreover, as the saint of Saint Academy in the past, he must have built up connections in the Academy. He was the leader of this team, so there is a higher chance for the group members to join the Saint Academy.

The beautiful eyes of Xue Yingrou took a look at Zhang Ruochen. She was in a wonderful smile over her face and was admiring,

“It’s no wonder that he was so powerful that his lead teacher was actually a saint from the Saint Academy.”

Afterward, Xue Yingrou looked at Zi Hansha again and could not help but shake her head. Although Zi Hansha was also a genius, when compared with Zhang Ruochen, her talent seemed to be dull.

In the eyes of Xue Yingrou, she felt that Zhang Ruochen was really perfect. She was getting more and more attracted to him.

In her mind, she recalled the scene of Zhang Ruochen rushing out of the Flaming Red Crows and saving her. She felt that her cheek got hot and her heartbeat sped up. The more she recalled, the stronger her admiration was, and the more she favoured Zhang Ruochen over Zi Hansha.

With the invitation from He Yunlou, Lei Jing finally agreed to join them and take the Silver Moon Ship to the East Region Saint City.

Afterward, a Dragon-eagle carried Duanmu Xingling, Sikong Kong, Chang Qi and others to the Silver Moon Ship.

He Yunlou was quite surprised and said,

“Brother Lei, how could you only bring such a few students?”

In fact, He Yunlou just considered Lei Jing as a big figure, thinking that he was a presbyter of the School of the Martial Market of a certain mansion. After all, Lei Jing was so powerful. How could it be impossible to bring such a few trainees? By all rights, he was supposed to bring hundreds of students with him.

Lei Jing only smiled and said,

“Of course there are other trainees, but they have already gone to the East Region Saint City before us.”

In fact, Lei Jing did not say anything wrong. There were indeed a group of trainees who had already gone first to the East Region Saint City, such as Huang Yanchen, Chen Xier, and Luo Shuihan.

He Yunlou suddenly nodded and thought that most of the students had already gone to East Region Saint City and the students with him now didn't join the main group. So He Yunlou stopped asking any more.

Afterward, he gave Si Xingkong, Duanmu Xingling, and Chang Qiqi a slight glance. There was the lingering presence of dragon Qi and they were absolutely extraordinary God's favored son.

Suddenly, He Yunlou was shocked and was more firmly believe in his conjecture.

# Chapter 372 - Zi Hansha

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The School of the Martial Market in the South Cloud Commandery selected a total of 37 talented students. Six of them died after the calamity, leaving only 31.

To He Yunlou, this was already the best outcome despite the heavy loss.

What human wouldn't run into accidents?

And thus, the Silver Moon Ship sailed once again.

Xue Yingrou was an elegant girl with snow-white skin, long golden hair, and a slim figure. She stood right in front of Zhang Ruochen, less than two meters away.

He could clearly smell the light floral fragrance coming from her.

Her voice was soft and gentle, and somewhat shy as she said, "Thank you for saving my life. May I have your name?"

He looked at her and replied, "Zhang Ruochen."

She instantly memorized this name. With a soft, beautiful laugh, she said, "I'm Xue Yingrou. Your sword technique is incredible and you must've already reached the Peak of Sword Following the Heart. Will you show me some guidance?"

"Miss Xue, I think you should first heal your injuries. It's not too late to discuss Martial Arts after." He said.

Xue Yingrou was all smiles. She giggled and said, "I'll consider that as you agreeing! Once I'm completely recovered, you must give me some guidance. You can't go back on your word."

When a beauty like Xue Yingrou smiled, she looked truly beautiful. It was as if she was an immortal who had descended to earth to tug at men's heartstrings.

After she took her leave, Duanmu Xingling jumped off the railing of the mast and landed with a swoosh behind Zhang Ruochen. She smiled at him. "Zhang Ruochen, your charisma is powerful indeed. You've just arrived at the holy soil of the Eastern Region and there's already a girl who admires you so much. You can't be already mesmerized by her, right?"

"How is that possible?" Zhang Ruochen smiled.

"Tch!"

Duanmu Xingling crossed her arms with a look of disbelief. Her eyes shined with mischief and she mimicked Xue Yingrou's voice as she said, "'Once I'm completely recovered, you must give me some guidance. You can't go back on your word.' I really want to slap her when I heard her voice."

Zhang Ruochen smiled helplessly. "Do you think I'm one of those people who can't resist temptation?"

"Who knows for sure? Men! Keeping an eye on the pot while eating what's in your bowl! You're never satisfied. Since Sister Chen isn't here, I naturally have to keep an eye on you in her place. A vixen like her should know her place. Otherwise, I'll have her die in a very nasty way."

Duanmu Xingling pushed out her chest proudly and raised her chin, disdain in her eyes. "Besides, I think she's pretentious and snobbish. If you told her that you're a warrior from an isolated inferior commandery in the Omen Ridge, it'd be a wonder if she still pays you any attention."

Zhang Ruochen stared at her proud expression and saw that she was worried Xue Yingrou would charm him and lead him into a trap.

In reality, it was normal. Warriors from the holy soil of the Eastern Region looked down on warriors from small places like the Omen Ridge. In their eyes, the Omen Ridge was an uncivilized land of savages, a remote and desolate place.



Zhang Ruochen could tell that Xue Yingrou had approached him partially because he had saved her in her most dangerous moment and partially because she had seen that he was God's favored son with a powerful background.

If she knew that Zhang Ruochen was a warrior hailing from a remote and desolate place like the Omen Ridge, she would probably turn her nose up at him and wouldn't even spare him a glance.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen didn't care at all what she thought.

He smiled. "Relax! Senior sister apprentice Duanmu. Do you think I'm someone so easily charmed by beauty? In my eyes, you're much prettier."

"At least you have some oversight."

Secretly, she was happy and bubbling with confidence. How could Xue Yingrou compare with her? If Xue Yingrou saw her true appearance, would that not shock her?

Of course, she didn't show any joy on her face and stared at Zhang Ruochen coldly instead. "You smooth-talking, flattering wastrel! You learned all the bad things from Chang Qiqi!"

She instantly jumped and escaped after speaking, terrified that Zhang Ruochen would see her blushing.

Zhang Ruochen was stunned. Had he not just praised her? How was he a flattering wastrel all of a sudden?

...

Eight genius students were gathered in a cabin with dim lighting.

"Eldest brother, I saw senior sister apprentice Xue find that guy earlier. They were talking and laughing."

A student stood in front of Zi Hansha, his voice shaking with anger. His fists were tightly curled and his face was dark.

Another student sneered. "How hateful! He dares to think about stealing eldest brother's woman. He doesn't want to live, does he?"

“Senior sister apprentice Xue is the most beautiful woman in our South Cloud Commandery. We can’t allow him to steal her. Eldest brother, we all know that you and senior sister apprentice Xue make perfect couple, a match made in heaven.”

Most of the students there were secretly in love with Xue Yingrou. Naturally, they couldn’t stand seeing her interacting with Zhang Ruochen.

However, they knew that they weren’t a match for Zhang Ruochen. Thus, they tried to goad Zi Hansha.

Only Zi Hansha had the power to teach Zhang Ruochen a lesson.

Zi Hansha had always been conceited and contemptuous. In the South Cloud commandery, he had defeated everyone in his generation. None of them was his match. Even if Zhang Ruochen had demonstrated great power before, he still had the confidence that the former would lose.

Furthermore, Zhang Ruochen had stolen his limelight earlier. He was already not too happy about that.

Now, Zhang Ruochen dared to make a move on Xue Yingrou. That completely rubbed him the wrong way. As per the genius students’ words, he had long considered Xue Yingrou his future woman.

Whoever dared to try to get a share would have to die.

Zi Hansha exercised the joints of his five fingers and coldness flashed in his eyes. “Don’t say such nonsense. Junior sister apprentice Xue and I are just apprentice-siblings. Even if I want to, I can’t control who she interacts with.”

The students became anxious, thinking that he wouldn’t interfere in this matter.

Xi Hansha then continued, changing the topic, “But as her elder brother, I have to test whether Zhang Ruochen is worthy of her.”

“So you’ll take care of that guy? Hehe!”

“We’ll just exchange views about Martial Arts,” Zi Hansha said.

A chain of laughter immediately erupted in the ship’s cabin.

...

Zhang Ruochen immediately took out the Time and Space Spinel after returning to his cabin. He entered the internal space of the spinel and continued to refine the Dragon Pearl.

Right now, there were already 696 drops of Vital Essence in his Qi Sea.

If he ran the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean and used his 36 Meridians to refine the Dragon Pearl with all his power, he could probably add 80 drops of Vital Essence every day.

Even at his cultivation rate, it would still waste a lot of time to get to 10,000 drops of Vital Essence.

He could only break into the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm after producing 10,000 drops of Vital Essence.

After seven days, the number of drops of Vital Essence in his Qi Sea reached 1,207 drops. He had finally completely consolidated the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Aboard the Silver Moon Ship, Zhang Ruochen couldn’t always seclude himself for refining. Thus he came out of the space in the spinel after seven days and visited Concubine Lin.

From the Omen Ridge all the way to the ship, it had been Kong Xuan who had been looking after her.

Kong Xuan had done everything she could. As if she had become Concubine Lin’s handmaid, she looked after her in every possible way.

Zhang Ruochen only left after meeting Concubine Lin and giving Kong Xuan some tips concerning her practice.

He barely took a few steps before he saw Xue Yingrou.

Their eyes met and a faint smile appeared on both their faces.

Xue Yingrou’s mood was much better than a few days ago as her injuries had completely healed. Her eyes were

incomparably bright, her skin was clear, and even her temperament seemed more elegant.

Standing on the deck against a backdrop of a cloud sea and blue sky, she looked just like the scroll of an immortal.

“Elder brother Zhang, my injuries have completely recovered. You can now teach me some sword techniques, right?” Xue Yingrou’s lashes were long and her red lips were sparkling. Even her voice was like a sound of nature.

Zhang Ruochen smiled.

He was about to reply when the sound of footsteps came from behind him.

A group of genius students showed up, with Zi Hansha at the forefront. Holding a long purple sword, he smiled and said, “What a coincidence! I’ve also long admired Brother Zhang’s sword technique. Can you first show me some guidance?”

Zhang Ruochen turned around and saw 12 silver-robed genius students walking over to them. The one leading the rest was the School of the Martial Market’s eldest brother of the South Cloud Commandery, Zi Hansha.

He was indeed a prodigy. He was tall with sword-like eyebrows and eagle-like eyes. He commanded a scary aura as he walked up to Zhang Ruochen.

Given Zhang Ruochen’s current Spiritual Power, he could easily tell Zi Hansha’s power even if he hadn’t opened his Skyeeye.

Zi Hansha’s cultivation had reached the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, two entire realms above his own.

Furthermore, he must be highly gifted to give off that kind of aura. It was stronger than some of the warriors at the Completion of Heaven Realm.

“I’m Zi Hansha, the eldest brother of the School of the Martial Market of the South Cloud Commandery.”

Zi Hansha introduced himself to Zhang Ruochen, stopping ten meters away.

So he was the eldest brother. No wonder his cultivation was so strong.

Whether it was the School of the Martial Market or Suzerains, rankings were typically based on power instead of age.

Only the most powerful had the right to be called eldest brother.

Of course, there were exceptions.

If the eldest brother was indeed much older and had an excellent moral character, everyone will still respectfully refer to him as such.

Si Xingkong was an example of this.

Zhang Ruochen glanced at Zi Hansha. "I'm Zhang Ruochen. Greetings to elder brother Zi. You must be joking earlier! With your Dawn State of the Heaven Realm cultivation, how can I show you any guidance?"

Zi Hansha shook his hand. "There's no need to be humble. I had already seen you demonstrate many marvelous sword techniques in your duel with Flaming Red Crow and realized I'm far inferior. I've long wanted to ask for some advice from you."

Of course, deep inside, he didn't really think that he was inferior to Zhang Ruochen.

The higher he lifted Zhang Ruochen up, the harder the latter would fall in their battle later. Wasn't that right?

# Chapter 373 - Why?

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

A student with a thin face beside Zi Hansha spoke in a sharp voice, “We’ve also long wanted to see elder brother Zhang’s sword technique. Will you please instruct us?”

With Zi Hansha leading them, those students seemed to be asking for advice yet it felt more like coercion of Zhang Ruochen. Even an idiot could tell their true purpose.

Xue Yingrou furrowed her brows. “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang has rescued us before. It’s not nice for you to do this now, is it?”

“Junior sister apprentice, we truly just want to be instructed in sword technique. We don’t mean anything else. Don’t misunderstand!”

Zi Hansha maintained his smile but jealousy was ravaging him on the inside. Xue Yingrou had always worshipped him but now she was favoring that bastard Zhang Ruochen.

Did he have to defeat Zhang Ruochen so she would understand who was the truly superior?

Zhang Ruochen naturally could tell why Zi Hansha wanted him to instruct him in sword technique. It had to be related to Xue Yingrou.

She was the so-called femme fatale, indeed. The ancient stories were all true.

Another student stood out and said unhappily, “Eldest brother sincerely wants to learn sword technique from you. You won’t deny him this, right?”

“That’s right! Don’t tell me you’re afraid of losing to eldest brother.” A peculiar voice rang out.

Zhang Ruochen wasn’t one to be pushed around. Since trouble had come to his door, he naturally wouldn’t allow others to think he was afraid of them.

He thought deeply for a moment before replying, “Fine. Since that’s the case, we’ll try a few moves. I hope we can end there.”

“Naturally.” Zi Hansha smiled.

The genius students from the South Cloud Commandery all revealed strange smiles. They backed away and began discussing in low voices.

“Let’s guess how many moves will eldest brother need before he defeats that bastard.”

“How many? Who among our generation in our commandery can block even one of his attacks? Third Wu, you’re also a warrior at the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. Can you do it?”

“I’m not in the same league as the eldest brother. We might be in the same realm but it’s not an easy task to block one of his strikes.”

“That bastard isn’t a weakling either. His sword technique is indeed profound. I estimate he’ll be able to put up a fight against eldest brother.”

“I think eldest brother will definitely defeat him within 10 moves. Eldest brother is a Five-and-a-Half-realm Fighting Genius. There’s no way that bastard would have more.”

“Which among those Six-realm Fighting Geniuses aren’t famed across the Eastern Region? They would also have a chance of being featured in the

Eastern Region Report

. Zhang Ruochen? Hehe, I’ve never heard of his name.”

...

Zhang Ruochen, naturally, had been featured in the

## Eastern Region Report

. However, he was only mentioned once in the final edition. Of course no one would remember his name.

With his defeat of Di Yi, he had the chance of headlining the Eastern Region Report

. But there was still some time before the next issue would be published and the news hadn't yet spread as of now.

Xue Yingrou had also retreated, anticipation growing inside her.

If she just went by their ages, she estimated Zhang Ruochen to be younger than Zi Hansha.

Though Zi Hansha looked to be in his early 20s, he was already 32. Zhang Ruochen didn't seem like he exceeded 25.

When it came to their battle power, it wasn't easy to come up to a conclusion.

After all, she knew Zi Hansha very well. He was a truly powerful warrior and was essentially invincible among his peers. Even among the older generation, few were his rivals.

“Elder brother Zhang is probably weaker than eldest brother, but he's still young. His innate talent far exceeds that of eldest brother.”

“Could he already be a Six-realm Fighting Genius?”

Her heart beat rapidly as a daring guess rose in her mind.

Everything depended on the outcome of this battle. If Zhang Ruochen could really stand his ground against Zi Hansha, then he was probably a Six-realm Fighting Genius.

**SWOOSH!**

In an elegant move, Zi Hansha pulled out his sword and held it up.

The strands of purple Genuine Qi that flowed out from his body enveloped him, forming a thick Celestial Bodyshield.

He hailed from a Half-Saint family, the Zi family. He practiced a mid-class Ghost Level exercise, the Secrets of the Purple



Blood Mark. After reaching the Heaven Realm, he naturally practiced a special Genuine Qi, which was the Purple Cloud Genuine Qi.

Being born into a good family was an enormous advantage. From a young age, he was able to study peak martial arts books and establish a strong foundation. Coupled with his innate talent and hard work, he was destined for greatness.

Disciples from poor families could only start with Human Stage and Spiritual Stage exercises. Even if they later exhibited great talent, it would be difficult for them to catch up to prodigies who had practiced superior level exercises.

Even if they forcefully started practicing a different exercise, their Meridians had long been set and the effects wouldn't necessarily be strong. On the contrary, it will waste a lot of their time. The losses wouldn't make up for the gains.

Zhang Ruochen didn't underestimate his opponent either. He released his Blue Genuine Qi and formed a Celestial Bodyshield.

Zi Hansha narrowed his eyes when he saw the blue Genuine Qi enveloping his opponent's body and smiled. "You've also practiced a special Genuine Qi. Seems like the exercise you practiced is also very powerful. Draw your sword!"

Zhang Ruochen shook his head. "Demonstrating sword technique doesn't necessarily require drawing the sword."

Zi Hansha felt a chill in his heart, feeling like he was being underestimated.

"You're prouder than me. Well, let's see if you have the ability to justify your arrogance."

Without holding back, he immediately executed the most powerful sword technique he had practiced, the Red Sword Form.

It was a Superior class Spiritual Stage sword technique with a total of seven moves. He had long practiced it to the realm of perfection.

**SWOOSH!**

He made the first attack and executed the first move of the Red Sword Form, Waves of the Red Sea.

The sword radiance spilled forth like a waterfall, giving off the impression of endlessness. Each wave of sword Qi was stronger than the last.

In the first place, the two of them had been standing close to one another. In just a flash, Zi Hansha's sword had neared Zhang Ruochen.

Watching the sword radiance cover the sky and ground, Zhang Ruochen stood where he was and gently nodded. Zi Hansha's sword technique attainment was indeed high, already reaching the peak of Sword Following the Heart.

There were practically no flaws when he had practiced his sword technique to this level.

However, Zhang Ruochen's sword technique attainment was more than one level above him. His sword heart had already Integrated. No matter how many illusory tricks Zi Hansha had, how strong his sword Qi, or how many changes it had, he was like a child playing with a sword.

CLASH!

Zhang Ruochen grabbed the hilt of his sword and turned his body to block Zi Hansha's sword, completely sealing his following movements.

“He blocked my Red Sword Form so easily?”

Zi Hansha couldn't believe that his opponent was that powerful. He immediately shifted his sword movement and executed the second move, Red Moon in an Empty Sky.

He instantly followed it up with the third move, Red Hair Dance.

Then it was the fourth move, Red Cloud Blood.

...

The seventh move, Red Heart.

Zi Hansha had dealt all the seven moves continuously. However, Zhang Ruochen's feet never moved the entire time.

Using only one move, he easily blocked all of Zi Hansha's sword movements.

The students standing to the side were stunned.

In their eyes, Zhang Ruochen was like a boulder. He had merely stood in place and dissolved Zi Hansha's attacks like it was nothing.

There was no more that needed to be said. Everyone could see that Zhang Ruochen was so much more superior to Zi Hansha, to the point that the two weren't even in the same league.

Xue Yingrou pulled with her sleeve with her jade-like fingers. Her beautiful eyes were full of tears and she exclaimed in astonishment. She felt that Zhang Ruochen's every move was confident, flowing, and elegant.

"He's too powerful. In front of him, eldest brother is like a child still learning the sword. Why did I even thought that eldest brother was powerful before?"

She gently shook her head. After watching this battle, the lofty image that Zi Hansha had in her heart had completely shattered.

**CLASH!**

Zhang Ruochen turned his arm and once again blocked Zi Hansha's sword.

At the same time, the Genuine Qi in his Qi Sea was rushing to his arm and became a Genuine Qi wave with a push.

An enormous strength spilled out from the sword scabbard and pushed Zi Hansha backward by nine steps.

"Since your sword movements are all used up, let's end this here."

He had no interest in continuing the fight and only wanted to leave.

"Who told you that my sword movements are completely used up? You're not allowed to leave! We'll continue our battle."

Zi Hansha felt his humiliation turn into anger. It was difficult to control his emotions. He leaped up, holding his sword in

both hands. He immersed Genuine Qi into the blade and activated the inscriptions. He then slashed at Zhang Ruochen with all his strength.

He wasn't Zhang Ruochen's opponent when it came to sword technique, that much he was willing to admit.

Since that was the case, then he would no longer compete with sword movements.

He would compare their true strength.

Zi Hansha's sword was a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms and its power was limitless. After he activated the inscriptions in the blade, it exploded with a red light and spat out fire like a waterfall of fire. It aimed straight for Zhang Ruochen's head.

Zhang Ruochen sighed and gently shook his head.

It was at this moment that Zi Hansha suddenly discovered that Zhang Ruochen had disappeared from sight.

When he realized this, he was already one step too late.

Zhang Ruochen appeared next to Zi Hansha on his left. He swung the hilt of his sword, striking Zi Hansha's abdomen.

**CLASH!**

Zi Hansha felt a surge of pain from his lower abdomen and an enormous power at work on his body. Like a kite with its strings cut, he fell back.

Zi Hansha landed on his bottom with a bang on the tough silver-colored deck. He was completely knocked out of his bearings.

Zhang Ruochen floated down like a leaf, landing gently on the ground. "We can end this now, right?"

# Chapter 374 - East Region

## Saint City

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

To think Zi Hansha would actually lose this tragically.

The genius students of the School of the Martial Market of South Cloud Commandery looked at each other in dismay. Feeling a chill creeping on them, they involuntarily took a step back.

Zi Hansha looked as if he had suffered a bad fall, but in reality, he wasn't injured.

Zhang Ruochen's strike had been well-controlled and accurate. He didn't want to hurt anyone.

Though Zi Hansha wasn't injured, he had lost all his face. Staring at Zhang Ruochen with an icy gaze, he slammed his palm on the deck. He used the strength from the rebound of his Genuine Qi to make a flip, ready to battle Zhang Ruochen again.

"Hansha, you've already lost. Back down!"

He Yunlou, dressed in his golden robe, wore an expression of anger as he spat out a mouthful of Genuine Qi. He had his hands behind his back. No one knew when he had come to the deck.

**SWOOSH!**

The Genuine Qi became a gust of hurricane-like wind that stopped Zi Hansha.

Though Zi Hansha was a Genius of his generation whose cultivation had reached the Peak of Martial Arts, he was

unable to break He Yunlou's breath and was blocked behind the wind.

In front of a Monk of the Fish-dragon Realm, everyone was merely an ordinary warrior no matter how genius they were or how powerful their cultivation was.

In the end, Zi Hanshan backed down reluctantly but his gaze remained vicious.

It was clear that a feud had formed between him and Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head, having expected this result when he had decided to 'learn from each other'.

Unless he lost on purpose, it was inevitable for hatred and thirst for revenge to develop between the two of them.

He was also a proud person. If he were to attack, he would never purposely lose to the other party.

He brought his hands together and saluted He Yunlou from a distance before retreating.

After returning to his own quarters, Zhang Ruochen once again entered the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel and began to practice.

He was currently quite powerful but he found that he was still lacking in many aspects after witnessing Zi Hansha.

The first problem was his cultivation realm.

Among peers of the same realm, even the incredible Di Yi with his Saintly Being and Demon's Heart had lost to him. But what if he was fighting an opponent in a higher realm?

Someone like Zi Hansha was already at the martial cultivation of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

Once he made his way to the East Region Saint City, he would surely meet more prodigies like Zi Hansha. He might even come across those with higher cultivation.

He didn't dare to lower his guard. If he could enter the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm before the Saint Academy's examination, that would be for the best.

In the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel, he had three times the usual time to practice. Naturally, he should put this to good use.

In the following two months, Zhang Ruochen began devoting all his energy to refining the Dragon Pearl. He only left his room each night to spend some time with Concubine Lin and have dinner together. He was practicing the rest of the time.

Of course, he would sometimes meet Xue Yingrou.

She wanted to be instructed in sword technique and he didn't reject her. Thus, he pointed out some of her insufficiencies in her sword technique.

Xue Yingrou's cultivation wasn't weak as she had already reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. In terms of talent, she was only slightly beneath Zi Hansha. She had once passed the fifth level of the Jiuju Tower.

She was a Five-realm Fighting Genius.

Given her talent, she would definitely make countless warriors in the Omen Ridge feel inferior. Only Luo Shuihan of the Luo family was slightly stronger than her.

She had reached the peak of Sword Following the Heart of her sword technique attainment. Though she was far behind Zhang Ruochen, she was already much more powerful than many people of her age.

Given her comprehensive strength, she was certainly able to be among the top of the genius students of the School of the Martial Market of the South Cloud Commandery.

However, her sword technique was too soft and lacked a certain sharpness. This prevented her from improving for a long time.

"You lack too much true combat experience. Otherwise, your sword technique would be on a whole different level," Zhang Ruochen said.

Xue Yingrou sighed, her eyes sparkling as she put on a pitiful face. "I was born into a lowly family. I'm unlike like you all who have such illustrious families with elders looking after

you. If I go out to gain experience, I'll either die in some savage beasts' mouth or get captured by those Black Market heretics. That's why I can only stay in the School and practice hard most of the time. Naturally, there are few opportunities for me to experience any battles to the death."

Zhang Ruochen merely wanted to talk to her about Martial Arts and sword technique but her goal wasn't as pure.

One time when Zhang Ruochen was instructing her, she took the initiative to kiss him on the cheek. She then seemed embarrassed and immediately ran off.

She had thought, with her beauty and proactiveness, Zhang Ruochen would grasp her intentions and chase after her.

If it went as scripted, she would then have a set of methods to get him to completely fall for her.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen understood the reason why she had proactively kissed him. She must have thought he was disciple to some great power and wanted to curry favor with him and reach the top in one step.

Her method was incredibly childish.

Furthermore, he could clearly feel the slight tremble of her lips when she kissed his cheek. She seemed nervous. It was probably her first time kissing a man.

She had basically gone all out to curry favor with him!

"If she knows that I'm only a warrior of an inferior commandery in the Omen Ridge, she'd probably cry with regret."

Zhang Ruochen stared at Xue Yingrou as she left, appearing very calm. He didn't chase after her. Instead, he wiped the print of her lips from his face and returned to his Time and Space Spinel to continue his practice.

It wasn't the first time he had been forcibly kissed. He had long developed an immunity to it.

His behavior greatly disappointed Xue Yingrou.



She waited a quarter of an hour in her room and still didn't see Zhang Ruochen. Thus, she quietly walked out and found no trace of him on the deck.

“How is this possible? Doesn't my beauty attract him at all?”

She bit her lip, somewhat irritated. She had even offered her first kiss yet he was still acting indifferent. Did she have to go another step further?

She continued to think about how she could capture Zhang Ruochen.

Unfortunately, she didn't see him again for a while. Only when they reached the East Region Saint City did he stop practicing and walked out of his room.

Two weeks had passed in the external world, yet Zhang Ruochen had practiced for 45 days inside the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

The Vital Essence in his Qi Sea had reached 5,100 drops.

Though he was still far from reaching the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, he had taken a great step forward. His Vital Essence had become even thicker.

It was also this day that the Silver Moon Ship finally arrived at the Tianjun Wharf, 500 kilometers outside of the East Region Saint City.

Standing at the Tiankun Wharf, a person with a strong cultivation could see the giant shadow of East Region Saint City if he raised his head.

East Region Saint City wasn't an ordinary city. To be more precise, it was a star.

Legends had it that, in the ancient times, a star with a diameter of 5,000 kilometers fell from the sky and landed on this holy soil of the Eastern Region. It rocked the entire region, killing countless people and savage beasts. The ash in the sky only settled after 100 years.

Later, an ancient Saint personally went to investigate the star and found that it was actually a treasure star. It contained a wealth of Spiritual and Saint Crystals, and many precious

resources for Refining Weapons. Even the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi was 10 times thicker there. It was then named the Practice Holy Land.

Thus, human warriors all climbed onto the fallen star and established families and Suzerains there.

Over countless years and months, that star attracted thousands upon thousands of warriors. It gradually developed into a giant city and became the center of the Eastern Region.

Later, it was named the East Region Saint City.

Just standing thousands of kilometers away and gazing at that giant spherical shadow covering nearly half the sky was enough to induce a strange fear in people. It emitted a seemingly suffocating aura.

Zhang Ruochen secretly opened his Skyeye and glanced at the East Region Saint City. He could faintly see hundreds of billions of inscriptions floating on the surface of that giant star city that melded with the clouds.

Just one glance was enough to intimidate and terrify.

Through the clouds and inscriptions, large pieces of land and the blue of the water could be seen. It was like an independent land.

“Only a truly great power is capable of building a Saint City that has lasted through the ages on this fallen star.”

Tiankun Wharf was the largest of eight wharves outside of the city. The eight wharves were ordered by the Taiji Sect. They were Qian, Kun, Zhen, Xun, Kan, Li, Gen, and Dui.

Though it was called a wharf, it was more like a city compared to the East Region Saint City.

Warriors from all over the world must take the White Dragon Holy Ship from the eight wharves to successfully enter the city through an opening in the inscriptions in the air.

As students of the School of the Martial Market who had come to participate in the Saint Academy’s examination, Zhang Ruochen and the others naturally already had people from the

School of the Martial Market waiting at the entrance of the eight wharves.

Visitors would have to register their identities before they could take the White Dragon Holy Ship and head toward the East Region Saint City.

Only the students of the School of the Martial Market received special treatment.

For other warriors who wanted to enter the East Region Saint City, it was quite a troublesome process. Not only did they have to spend a fortune on the entrance fees and temporary residence certificate, they also had to wait in line. Sometimes it was normal to wait for a month or two.

The regulations of the East Region Saint City were firm. Even superiors of the Fish-dragon Realm would be captured by the military and thrown into prison if they defied the regulations.

# Chapter 375 - A Ruined Relationship

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“He Yunlou, from the School of the Martial Market of South Cloud Commandery, leading 31 students to attend the Saint Academy’s examination.”

He Yunlou handed over the token and quickly finished the registration. They each got temporary residence certificate of East Region Saint City, and could ride the White Dragon Holy Ship at any time.

Although East Region Saint City was vast in land, it was now overcrowded. An ordinary man would have no qualifications to live in East Region Saint City at all.

He Yunlou’s temporary residence certificate could only let him live in East Region Saint City for three months.

In three months, he would be expelled.

If he wanted to live and practice in East Region Saint City, he had to pay a high price to get a new temporary residence certificate.

So, those who had the right to live permanently in East Region Saint City were not ordinary people. They were powerful or had the extraordinary background.

Having gotten the temporary residence certificate, He Yunlou did not leave at once. Instead, he stood by the side and smiled at Lei Jing, and gestured “Please”.

After all, they came to Tiankun Wharf together, and they should certainly go to Saint City together as well.

Furthermore, He Yunlou was also curious about the story behind Lei Jing.

Was it really like what he had guessed? Was he was a big figure of some mansion in the School of the Martial Market?

If so, when he arrived at the East Region Saint City, he must try to keep a good relationship with them.

Lei Jing smiled back at He Yunlou. He walked straight over and took out the token, passing it to the registrar of School of the Martial Market. He said, "Lei Jing of School of the Martial Market of Omen Ridge leads four students to attend the Saint Academy's examination."

"It turns out to be School of the Martial Market of Omen Ridge...."

He Yunlou nodded his head gently. Suddenly, he became stiff and was a bit shocked.

What?

How come they were from a place with barren hills and turbulent rivers like School of the Martial Market of Omen Ridge?

He Yunlou's eyes almost popped out. A moment later, he stopped smiling. There was even a little bit of disdain in his eyes when he looked at Lei Jing.

A bumpkin from a district shut off from the outside world like Omen Ridge actually dared to call himself a Saint from Saint Academy. Was not he afraid of that he would be exposed?

Other than He Yunlou, even the genius students of School of the Martial Market of South Cloud Commandery were all shocked. They could never think of that those people were actually from a small place like Omen Ridge.

By the way, where was Omen Ridge?

He Yunlou was an old man who had been practicing for almost 100 years. He more or less heard of Omen Ridge. However, the young students had never heard of it.

Thus, how desolate, remote, and uncivilized the land must have been!

Xue Yingrou widened her beautiful eyes. It was like that she was struck by lightning. Her mind was blank. She could not believe what she heard.

A long time later, she came to herself. She spared a glance at Zhang Ruochen who was not far away.

The expression in her eyes seemed to be asking Zhang Rouchen,

“Are ... are you really from Omen Ridge?”

Duanmu Xingling stood by Zhang Ruochen's side. She had a charming and witty smile. With a positive expression, she nodded her head at Xue Yingrou and said jokingly, “Senior sister apprentice Xue, our Omen Ridge is a place with picturesque scenery. You might not like junior fellow apprentice Zhang very much now. But if you marry him in the future, he will definitely treat you well.”

“Damn it. He is actually a poor man from Omen Ridge. I thought he was an inheritor of some powerful saint family.”

Xue Yingrou felt sick when she thought about that she actually took the initiative to kiss Zhang Ruochen, feeling that she was blasphemed. It was like a white swan to kissing a dirty toad.

Hearing what Duanmu Xingling said, Xue Yingrou got angrier. Her eyes turned cold. There was disdain in her eyes when she looked at Zhang Ruochen. She said, “Who said that I like him? We just exchanged views about sword technique. You hold your tongue. Don't tarnish my reputation.”

That was very direct, and whatever relationship they had was ruined. Just like that.

Anyone could hear the condescendence in Xue Yingrou's tone for Zhang Ruochen. She thought that the gossip between her and Zhang Ruochen tarnished her and left a nasty scar on her perfect body.

At the same time, Xue Yingrou did not think that Zhang Ruochen was an amazing talent anymore. How could there be

any talent from Omen Ridge?

It was already quite impressive to have a Genius with Four Unique Skills.

As for defeating Zi Hansha, it was possible only because of his profound martial cultivation.

In her opinion, Zhang Ruochen's cultivation had already reached the Completion of the Heaven Realm. Otherwise, how could he defeat a proud son of heaven like Zi Hansha?

Zhang Ruochen's young handsome look could not explain anything.

As long as he spent some Spiritual Crystals, he could buy Pill of Anti-aging. Maybe Zhang Ruochen had swallowed this pill. He must be over 40 years old.

Thinking of this, Xue Yingrou felt more furious and shameful. She regretted that her first kiss was given to a rubbish like him.

She squeezed her hand with fingers crossed and calmed down after a long time. She thought in her mind, "Forget it. After all, he saved me once. The kiss can be a favor I return to him. From now on, I'd better not to have anything to do with him, for else I will just be demeaning myself."

Zhang Ruochen certainly did not care about Xue Yingrou's disdainful words.

However, Duanmu Xingling was very furious after hearing that. She said seriously, "You must apologize to Zhang Ruochen immediately. Otherwise, the consequences will be serious."

At this moment, Duanmu Xingling did not smile at all. Her eyes were full of murderous intent that pierced through Xue Yingrou's heart.

Even Xue Yingrou's cultivation was high, she was outfaced by Duanmu Xingling for a moment.

How could this be possible? Why were her eyes so scary?

Who was she? She was just a warrior from a remote village like Omen Ridge. Why should I be afraid of her?

Xue Yingrou instantly regulated her Genuine Qi and called up all her courage, sticking out her chest again. She raised her snow-white chin and said, “Apologize? Why would I? Did I say something wrong? You are the one who is talking nonsense. How can I like him? You should be the one doing the apologizing, right?”

Duanmu Xingling showed an angry smile and walked forward. She said, “Well! I am! I am going to apologize to you right now!”

Zhang Ruochen instantly grabbed Duanmu Xingling by her arm, and pulled her back. He shook her head and said, “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, Maiden Xue was right. She and I were just exchanging views about sword technique. Our relationship is not as good as you expected.”

Xue Yingrou slightly nodded her head after hearing this. She thought that Zhang Ruochen was at least sensible enough to not mention the kiss.

Duanmu Xingling’s lips were pursed, and she was furious. If Zhang Ruochen did not stop her, she would definitely have rushed over tried to teach Xue Yingrou a lesson.

Lei Jing got the temporary residence certificate and did not know at all what just happened. He looked at He Yunlou and smiled,

“Brother He, would you like to board the White Dragon Holy Ship with me?”

He Yunlou smiled and said, “I just remembered that I have to deal with something in Tiankun Wharf, which will probably take some time. You can go to the East Region Saint City first. We still have a chance to meet in Saint Academy’s examination.”

“Haha! All right! See you.”

Lei Jing certainly knew what they were thinking. They looked down on warriors of Omen Ridge.



Even if you had saved her life before, in his opinion, you were still inferior to others. In Saint Academy, Lei Jing had been accustomed to seeing such a thing long ago. He was not surprised at all.

He did not point out bluntly and smiled. He led Zhang Ruochen, Duanmu Xingling, Chang Qiqi and others to board the White Dragon Holy Ship and headed toward East Region Saint City.

# Chapter 376 - East Region Saint City, Visiting an Old Friend

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Zhang Ruochen, why did you stop me?”

Duanmu Xingling threw off Zhang Ruochen’s hand after they boarded the White Dragon Holy Ship. She widened her apricot-like eyes and gave him a cold glare. She was obviously very angry.

Zhang Ruochen replied, “Xue Yingrou and I just exchanged views about sword technique. We are not as close as you think. We both are students of School of the Martial Market. Why do we have to cause a scene?”

“Maybe you just wanted to help her with sword technique, because both of you are studying in the same school. But she had a different idea. Don’t you see that?”

“It doesn’t matter what others think. We just have to do the right thing” Zhang Ruochen said.

Duanmu Xingling rolled her eyes. She said, “Is it? She kissed you and I saw it with my own eyes.”

Upon hearing this, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi and the rabbit Guoguo who were eating the Spiritual Dose all turned around, and stared at Zhang Ruochen with surprise.

Everyone was shocked.

Chang Qiqi envied and admired him. He said, “My god! Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, is it true? Xue Yingrou is

someone whose beauty could end kingdoms. She actually kissed you?”

Si Xingkong showed a bit of a smile. He said, “I don’t believe that it is just as simple as a kiss.”

“I don’t buy it either.”

Chang Qiqi said instantly, “No wonder Xue Yingrou hates you so much. It turns out that you have taken such an advantage of her. If I were her, I would definitely hate you as well.”

Zhang Ruochen shook his head bitterly, looked at Duanmu Xingling, and said, “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, how did you know about this?”

“I ... I certainly ... saw it accidentally ... ”

Duanmu Xingling’s face was unnatural. She turned around instantly, fearing that Zhang Ruochen might catch the panic in her eyes.

Luckily, Chang Qiqi helped her out from this predicament. He said unruly, “It is actually true. Junior fellow apprentice Zhang, you are very charming! She threw herself on you just because you guided her with some sword techniques. I have met Xue Yingrou for a few times. But she never looked at me in the eye, and she was as cold as ice. I even thought that she was a fairy from the heavens and doesn’t put us mortals in her eyes. It turns out that that’s not entirely true.”

Guoguo widened its eyes and stared blankly at him. It said, “Master Chen, are you done?”

Zhang Ruochen was unable either to laugh or to cry. He said, “Actually, she doesn’t fancy me either. Didn’t you all just see that?”

Chang Qiqi smiled and said, “When she finds out that the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall was defeated by you, she will possibly regret it again. I have a feeling that your fight with Di Yi will be on the front page of Eastern Region Report. The message of Dragon Sarira coming into the world will definitely shock the world.”

Zhang Ruochen did not seem to feel even the slightest joy. On the contrary, he became very serious.

Although he could be famous after being on Eastern Region Report and became the most popular God's favored son, the evil masters would definitely plan to deal with him.

When the next Eastern Region Report was issued, Zhang Ruochen's life would never be as peaceful as it was ever again.

The giant White Dragon Holy Ship, under the push of energy of a hundred thousands Spiritual Crystals, brought out dynamic inscriptions and flew up into the sky. It flew toward East Region Saint City, leaving explosions behind.

A planet, a city.

Not many have any idea of how long the East Region Saint City was under construction for it to be developed into its present scale. More than 100 million warriors were practicing and living in East Region Saint City.

There was more competition here there than anywhere else.

Of course, there were also more opportunities.

White Dragon Holy Ship flew through the clouds. Standing on the ship, they could see the land and ocean below. There were palaces, pavilions, high towers and martial-arts arenas everywhere. There were grand palace-like buildings on the top of the mountains, island fortresses dotted around the oceans, and majestic Holy Temples that floated in the sky.

An atmosphere of strong Spiritual Qi from heaven and earth flooded over from all directions. As long you exercised the qi in your body, a large amount of Spiritual Qi could be inhaled into meridians through limbs and bones, which could make you feel relaxed and refreshed.

“The Spiritual Qi of the East Region Saint City is ten times thicker than that of the outside. Practicing here will definitely yield twice the result with half the effort. No wonder the warriors would try so hard to get into the Saint City,” Si Xingkong said.

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “The thick Spiritual Qi is just one part of it. The unique learning environment of Martial Arts in the East Region Saint City is more important. There are many suzerains and Aristocratic Families in the Middle Age for the past 10,000 years, the resources of Martial Arts is in abundance. I can easily get the advice of from famous teachers and can get to learn profound exercises and martial techniques.”

Even Lei Jing nodded his head. The practice of Martial Arts did not mean to shut oneself up in a room. One had to get advice from the famous teachers and perceive martial arts of 100 families, getting their specialties. Then one could reach the Sacred Realm.

Practicing exercises without perceiving other martial arts could never reach the Sacred Realm, even if you had practiced the best exercises.

Only a resourceful man could become a saint.

East Region Saint City encompassed five continents, twelve oceans and thousands of smaller islands.

Saint Academy, located in the Seventh District of Jinhong Mainland, was undeniably the most prosperous place in the world. In the entire Eastern Region, countless warriors had come to the Seventh District. Some people came here for pilgrimage, while others wanted to be an apprentice to a master.

In any case, most of them were geniuses with dreams, hoping that a miracle would happen, and they would suddenly be of interest to some Half-Saint master of the Saint Academy, thus becoming their students. And then, they would themselves become Saints of the Saint Academy, standing tall above others.

In the Seventh District, there was not only Saint Academy, but also College, Fist Club, and Sword Club created by other forces. There were thousands of them, of varying sizes.

It could be said that there were numerous God’s favored sons in the Seventh District. They gathered together to discuss

current events, which affected the future pattern of the Eastern Region. It was a place for geniuses in the entire Eastern Region to gather.

Entering the Seventh District, a silver gowned Elder sent by School of the Martial Market led Lei Jing, Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong and others to a Courier Station of Martial Market.

Although it was a Courier Station, it was more of a palace courtyard, which was vast in the land. The wall was built with silver, the column was carved with golden jade, and the ground was covered with marble.

The Courier Station was like a fairyland on earth, surrounded by holy palaces.

“Nanting Courier Station has 36 palaces, 360 training rooms and 720 inferior servants in total. Among them, 27 palaces are inhabited. You will temporarily be residing in the Jadetoad Palace, which has ten rooms. You can allocate the rooms as you wish.”

The silver gowned Elder was very easygoing. He continued, “The first round of Saint Academy’s examination will take place in seven days. You should remember the time and make sure to not miss the examination.”

After going over some other minor things, the silver gowned Elder left.

“The treatment of students in School of the Martial market is so luxurious. A Courier Station is like a Holy Temple the Saint lived in,” Chang Qiqi said excitedly.

Si Xingkong said, “However good it is, we can only live here for three months. After that, if we don’t pass the Saint Academy’s examination, we will have to pack our bags and leave.”

Chang Qiqi said with his fists clenched, “I’m sure I can pass the Saint Academy’s examination. Then I will become a permanent resident in East Region Saint City through my own effort.”

Arriving at East Region Saint City, Chang Qiqi had been deeply attracted by the prosperous scenery and martial arts

atmosphere here. Suddenly, he had a new goal.

After going back to their own rooms and settling down, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi rushed out of Courier Station, heading toward the main street of the Seventh District to explore the prosperous East Region Saint City.

It was unknown when Duanmu Xingling left the Courier Station. She disappeared without a trace.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen sat in the room with his legs crossed and took out the Abyss Ancient Sword. He gently touched the fracture of the blade, showing contemplating expression.

“Blackie’s skill of Refine Weapon is limited. He can only connect basic inscriptions in the Abyss Ancient Sword. No more than one thousandth of the power of the Abyss Ancient Sword has been restored.”

“Since I have arrived at East Region Saint City, it’s time to visit the predecessor. Maybe only he can help me repair the Abyss Ancient Sword.”

There was a figure showing in Zhang Ruochen’s mind. He narrowed his eyes and put the Abyss Ancient Sword back to sword scabbard. He carried it on his back and left Courier Station by himself.

There were 81 city districts in Jinhong Mainland, and every one of them was huge. The number of residing warriors in each of the districts was over 100 million.

There were also some special sacred mountains and Holy Lands other than the 81 city districts.

East Region Saint City’s land was very expensive. Buying a small house in the center of the city would cost a huge sum of wealth, which equaled to all the superior in the Fish-dragon Realm had got.

It was even more difficult to own a sacred mountain in East Region Saint City. Only a real saint or rich Suzerain and their family could do it.

At this moment, after hurrying on with his journey for half a day, Zhang Ruochen came to the bottom of a sacred mountain. Specifically, there were many sacred mountains. There were 18 of them, one connecting to another.

When Sacred mountains were linked together, they could be called a Holy Land.

Hence, the owner of this room was definitely an extraordinary man.

“Sword Sanctum.”

Zhang Ruochen raised his head, looking at a giant stone tablet in front of him. On the stone tablet, there were four vigorous ancient Chinese characters, carrying four overwhelmingly Sword Comprehension.

Four characters turned into four figures, appearing from the stone tablet, who were continuously displaying sword techniques.

Every character represented a sword technique that was highly profound.

800 years ago, Zhang Ruochen had been here and had seen this stone tablet. He also had seen the four characters. Nothing seemed to be changed.

Only the leaves on the ground seemed to have grown thicker.

Sword Sanctum was attached to the Zhangs for generations and it was always loyal to them. 800 years ago, the owner of Sword Sanctum was the sixth disciple of Emperor Ming. He was called Lu Yuanzhi, who had reached the level of Saint Master in refining weapons.

Of course, Sword Sanctum and Lu Yuanzhi’s identity were tightly concealed. Except for Emperor Ming and Zhang Ruochen, the number of the person who knew about this did not exceed five.

At that time, Emperor Ming led Zhang Ruochen to Sword Sanctum, telling him that if he was driven into a corner one day, no one in the world could be trusted except Lu Yuanzhi.



“800 years have passed. Is Elder brother Lu still alive?” Zhang Ruochen clenched his hands. Many thoughts came to his mind.

At that time, eight disciples of Emperor Ming were all over 100 years old. Although Zhang Ruochen was their peers, there was a large age difference between them.

800 years had passed. If Lu Yuanzhi was still alive, he should be 970 years old now.

# Chapter 377 - Natural Divine Iron

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Who dares intrude upon the Sword Stela?”

On the boundless sacred mountain, a cold voice sounded among the clouds.

After a long cry, two young warriors in flashy black martial robes leaped off from the sacred mountain.

They stood on the cliff like two sacred monkeys. Their body movement was subtle and agile. A moment later, they passed through the cliff, the stone forest, and the gully, and landed on a place about a hundred feet away from Zhang Ruochen.

They were a man and a woman.

The man was handsome and tall, giving off a heroic sense of arrogance.

The younger woman looked like she was in her teens. She had a round face and braided a ponytail. Although she was not a startling beauty, she was quite cute.

The so-called Sword Stela was the blue stone tablet of more than 57 meters tall. It stood by Zhang Ruochen’s side, and “Sword Sanctum” was engraved on it.

The rule of Sword Sanctum: Death to all who trespasses.

Zhang Ruochen certainly knew this rule. So, he did not cross the boundary of Sword Stela, but he stood behind the Sword Stela. He said with dignity, “I am a student of the School of the Martial Market, Zhang Ruochen. I’m here to visit Master Lu.”

Both Zhang Ruochen and Lu Yuanzhi's identity were secrets.

Before seeing Lu Yuanzhi, Zhang Ruochen would never expose his real identity.

The young girl was called Lu Xuan.

Her eyes kept darting around. She spared a glance at Zhang Ruochen's feet, seeing that Zhang Ruochen did not cross the Sword Stela. She said, "Let alone you are a student of the School of the Martial Market, even if you are a saint of Saint Academy, you are not qualified to meet the ancestor. I suggest you leave here immediately. Otherwise, don't blame me for being unkind to you."

Zhang Ruochen seemed to have been expecting her response. He took his time and said, "Miss, you haven't reported this to Master Lu. How do you know that he won't meet me?"

Lu Xuan smiled, "There is no need to report it. With enormous power and influence, our ancestor won't even meet a Saint, let alone you."

Lu Fantian carefully looked at Zhang Ruochen and said, "We aren't expelling you by force because you are a student of the School of the Martial Market. Brother, if you don't leave, don't blame us for not being kind to you."

Zhang Ruochen was still very calm. He thought for a moment and said, "I have one line of a poem, please pass it to Master Lu. If Master Lu still doesn't want to see me after hearing this poem, I will leave immediately."

Lu Fantian advised again, "Brother, to tell you the truth, you will never meet ancestor. It is not easy for us to meet him. Please go back!"

Since Zhang Ruochen had already been in Sword Sanctum, how could he leave so easily?

Zhang Ruochen said again, "I sincerely come to visit Master Lu. I hope that you can at least tell him. Don't hesitate to make any requests if you have any."

Lu Xuan was a bit speechless. She said, "We have made it clear to you. Not only you, it's also very hard for us to see

ancestor. How can we help to report it?”

Zhang Ruochen frowned and felt that he indeed underestimated the difficulty of arranging this meeting. After all, Master Lu was the owner of Sword Sanctum. How would he meet a student in the Heaven Realm?

There was a very large disparity between their identities.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen was still standing there, Lu Fantian’s eyes turned cold. After stretching his fingers, he slightly swung his palm and lift up a grass without touching it. He pinched it between his two fingers.

Genuine Qi was infused into the grass. Suddenly, it turned into a sharp sword.

“Swish!”

The frantic Sword Breath sputred out circling around Lu Fantian.

Lu Xuan stared at Zhang Ruochen. She said, “Why are you still standing there? My brother’s strength is ranked in the top ten among the younger generation of Eastern Region. He was unbeatable and people call him ‘Earthshaking Bully’. He is now angry. Once he draws his sword, you are a dead man!”

Lu Fantian’s mouth twitched. He severely stared at Lu Xuan, wanting to seal her mouth.

Zhang Ruochen certainly could feel the powerful momentum coming from Lu Fantian. But he was fearless and he stood firm. He slightly cupped his hands and said very politely, “I know that you have your own difficulties. However, I have to meet Master Lu today. This is the only choice I have.”

Zhang Ruochen had to find out what happened 800 years ago.

This was an emotional entanglement. He had to meet Lu Yuanzhi.

After finishing his words, Zhang Ruochen took one step forward and crossed the boundary of Sword Stela.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had crossed the Sword Stela, Lu Fantian narrowed his eyes. A stroke of icing air came out of

his body. He decisively struck out his sword.

There was just a grass between his two fingers. With the help of Genuine Qi, it became a sharp magic sword which could cut clean through iron as if it was mud.

“Swoosh!”

All Sword Breath gathered at the tip of the grass, turning into a dazzling light shuttle.

Lu Fantian’s cultivation was very high, reaching the Medium State of the Heaven Realm. His strength was much higher than Zi Hansha’s.

Zhang Ruochen became serious and immediately gathered his Genuine Qi into his left middle finger, striking out a Sword Wave.

“Medium Pulse Breaking Sword Wave.”

“Phew!”

His left middle finger burned with flames, from which a red Sword qi flew out. Its explosive strength spread across like a flaming road.

The flaming road, like a fire snake of Sword Breath, was as wide as a bowl mouth.

“Bam!”

The grass sword suddenly started to burn after being attacked by the Sword Wave and turned into ashes.

The scorching hot Sword Breath spread over Lu Fantian’s arm.

Lu Fantian was surprised and immediately regulated the Genuine Qi into a silver bracelet on his wrist.

Streaks of inscriptions appeared on the surface of the bracelet.

“Swoosh!”

A nail sized armor popped out of the bracelet, stretching out toward his arm and fingertips.

A short moment later, Lu Fantian’s arm was totally wrapped up by the silver armour, becoming an armguard and blocked the Sword Wave.

“Bam!”

Although the silver armguard withheld the attack of Sword Breath, Lu Fantian was still shocked and the powerful impact pushed him backward.

However, his cultivation was powerful. After releasing the Celestial Bodyshield, his body shape was immediately stabilized. He lightly landed on the ground as if nothing had happened.

“Brother, you are weaker than I thought. Didn’t you just call yourself one of the top ten masters of Eastern Region and ‘Earth-shattering Bully’?” Why can a common warrior defeat you?”

Lu Xuan put the hands on her hip. She shook her head and signed with disappointment.

“What do you know?”

Lu Fantian glanced at Lu Xuan. He said unpleasantly, “What he used is Sword Ripple of Ten Channels of Taiji Doctrine, which had reached the Completion. It can be parallel to a martial technique in the Inferior Class of Ghost Level. I just used a grass, so I was slightly weaker.”

“What? Martial technique in the Inferior Class of Ghost Level?”

Lu Xuan stared at Zhang Ruochen, showing a curious expression. Her eyes were lightened up, like she was looking at a rare animal.

Even some masters in the Fish-dragon Realm could not successfully practice a Ghost Level martial technique.

But a warrior in the Heaven Realm actually did it.

How could they not be surprised?

Seeing Zhang Ruochen’s strength, Lu Fantian no longer despised him. He said solemnly, “Are you a student of the School of the Martial Market, or are you a disciple of Taiji Doctrine?”

With Zhang Ruochen's strength, he was absolutely a top talent among the younger generation of Eastern Region.

Such a God's favored son must have very high status no matter he was in the School of the Martial Market or in Taiji Doctrine. He was by no means not a common person.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I will say this again. I want to meet Master Lu."

Lu Xuan's impression of Zhang Ruochen had changed a bit. She said, "Hey! What do you want? Why do you have to meet ancestor?"

Being able to defeat her brother who was very excellent, he was not an ordinary person. So, Lu Xuan took the initiative to ask Zhang Ruochen, giving him a chance to speak.

Only warriors with strong strength could be respected.

Zhang Ruochen certainly would not expose his true identity. And even if he did, they would possibly not understand the relationship between the Sword Sanctum and the Zhangs.

So, Zhang Ruochen drew out the Abyss Ancient Sword and put it flat on his hands. He said, "I have a broken sword, hoping that Master Lu can help me repair it."

"Ah! I thought it was something important. It turns out to repair a sword."

Lu Xuan clapped her hands and commended, saying, "Our Lu family has been refining weapons for generations. The Sword Sanctum is a sanctum of refining weapon. I'm not boasting ourselves, but every one of us is a master of refining weapon. Repairing sword is a small matter. I can help you."

Lu Xuan stretched out one of her white hand and took over the broken sword from Zhang Ruochen's hand.

With the fame of Sword Sanctum, she certainly would not snatch his sword. So Zhang Ruochen was not worried at all. He handed over the Abyss Ancient Sword to her.

As the old saying went "The expert will prove the truths or reveal lies." Lu Xuan deserved to be the inheritor of Sword

Sanctum. As she took over the Abyss Ancient Sword, she stopped smiling and her face changed.

“How ... How can this be possible ... ”

She instantly held it with both her hands and observed it carefully. The more she looked, the more shocked she was. There was an unbelievable expression in her eyes.

“Miss, can you repair this sword?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Lu Fantian was very confident in his sister’s skill of refining weapon. Although she was only 16 years old, she was the top one genius in Spiritual Power of a millennium in Sword Sanctum. Her Spiritual Power had reached level 38, and she became a fifth-grade weapon refiner.

A fifth-grade weapon refiner of 16 years old would definitely make those weapon refiners of Omen Ridge feel ashamed.

Lu Fantian cast a glance at Lu Xuan, seeing that she was still observing the broken sword. He suddenly felt confused and asked, “Can you fix it or not? It is just a broken sword. Why are you just staring at it?”

“What do you know?”

Lu Xuan raised her head and stared at Lu Fantian. Exposing two of her tiger teeth, she said, “This broken sword was made of Natural Divine Iron. Do you know anything about Natural Divine Iron? According to the record in Canon of Ritual Items, in the entire Kunlun’s Field, only Empress Chi Yao got one piece of it 800 years ago. And it was cast into the Blood Drop Sword which was so invincible that could sweep the world.”

Hearing this, not only Lu Fantian was surprised, even Zhang Ruochen was shocked.



# Chapter 378 - Jade Saint

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Previously, when Chi Yao had given the Abyss Ancient Sword to Zhang Ruochen, Zhang Ruochen only knew that it was made of special material and had powerful strength. But he never expected it to be forged out of Natural Divine Iron.

Chi Yao must have made two swords when she first acquired the Natural Divine Iron. One of them had been given to Zhang Ruochen, and the other had been left for herself.

Why would Chi Yao give him such a precious sword?

Was it because of love?

If it was love, then why did she kill Zhang Ruochen with her own hands?

It 's too difficult to understand her thought.

Suddenly, countless thoughts filled Zhang Ruochen's mind. He became even more confused.

Lu Fantian stared at the broken sword in Lu Xuan's hand. He asked her doubtfully, "Girl, you must have seen wrongly! This the Blood Drop Sword?"

"Of course not."

Lu Xuan rolled her eyes and said, "Legends say that the blade of the Blood Drop Sword used to be as white as polished jade. It contains divine vital essence and could devour blood of humans and savage beasts to raise its grade. Later, the sword turned into a blood-red one for it was stained with the blood of millions of people. Given its strength, once the sword is drawn, blood clouds will appear in the sky that would spread out for tens of thousands of miles."

Lu Fantian was more confused and asked, “You just said that only Empress Chi Yao had gotten a piece of Natural Divine Iron in the whole Kunlun’s Field. But how can there be another sword which was made of Natural Divine Iron? Besides, it’s a broken sword. Are you sure you are not mistaken?”

Lu Xuan’s fingers gently touched her chin, and she said, “I have some doubts, too... However, the material of this broken sword is the same as the Natural Divine Iron that the Canon of Ritual Items described.”

“According to the legend, when Empress Chi Yao cast the Blood Drop Sword, she called upon ten of the best weapon refiners in the Kunlun’s Field. It took them 81 days to successfully forge the sword in the Sun and Moon Pool. And the ancestor of our Sword Sanctum was one of the ten weapon refiners. Since that’s the case, I’ll take the broken sword to see our great-grandfather. Maybe he’ll know some secrets.”

Lu Fantian nodded his head and said, “It seems like that would be the best choice for now.”

And then, he turned his eyes to Zhang Ruochen again. He was more curious about Zhang Ruochen’s identity,

“Was he not a student of the School of the Martial Market or a disciple of the Taiji Doctrine, but an envoy that Empress Chi Yao sent?”

As Lu Xuan was prepared to return to Sword Sanctum with the Abyss Ancient Sword, she suddenly stopped and turned around, asking, “Hey! What’s your name? And tell me the poem you said earlier. I’ll help you ask.”

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Zhang Ruochen then read out the poem, “No one knows that I’m in the deep forest, only the moon accompanies and sends me light. Thank you, lady.”

“Just call me Lu Xuan! Hehe!”

A silvery laughter rang and then Lu Xuan disappeared in the sacred mountains with a few moves.

Lu Fantian still stood in place, he curiously stared at Zhang Ruochen and asked, “Zhang Ruochen. Why have I never heard this name before? With your power, you shouldn’t be unknown. Is this your real name?”

Zhang Ruochen said, “I don’t need to use a fake identity. It will be easy to find out my true identity with the influence of the Sword Sanctum.”

Lu Fantian nodded and continued to say, “Your strength is not weak, but your realm of cultivation is a little bit low. If we really fight each other, you may not be able to withstand ten strikes from me.”

It was unnecessary and impossible to conceal his identity in front of a master like Lu Fantian. He had already roughly understood the stage of Zhang Ruochen’s realm through the previous fight.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen had also guessed Lu Fantian’s strength. He was indeed a powerful opponent.

Previously, Lu Xuan had said that he was able to rank in the top ten warriors of the young generation in the Eastern Region. It was probably not a lie.

...

Sword Sanctum, Jade Saint Divine Mountain

Jade Saint Divine Mountain was the lord of the 18 sacred mountains. The owner of these sacred mountains was Lu Huaiyu, who was called “Jade Saint”.

The grey-haired and wrinkled Jade Saint looked like he was already in his eighties or nineties. He was so thin that his bones were protruding out his skin. However, his eyes, as bright as the stars, seemed like they contained infinite wisdom and emit light like some holy deity.

Holding the Abyss Ancient Sword, Jade Saint was so excited that his hands kept trembling. He muttered:

“No one knows I’m in the deep forest, only the moon accompanies and sends me light.”

“No one knows I’m in the deep forest, only the moon accompanies and sends me light.”

...

Jade Saint repeated the poem three times, then he calmed down. He placed the Abyss Ancient Sword on the stone table beside him. Then he expectantly gazed at Lu Xuan and asked, “What’s his name? How old is he? What else did he say?”

Lu Xuan politely knelt in the center of the Holy Temple and she slightly looked up. It was her first time to see her ancestor being so excited.

Ancestor was a Saint who had already lived for more than 400 years.

How could he be so excited over something like this?

Next to her, her grandfather, Lu Jingyuan and great-grandfather, Lu Chongyu were also reverently kneeling in the Holy Temple.

Lu Jingyuan immediately stared at Lu Xuan as he found that Lu Xuan had not answered the ancestor’s questions. He lowered his voice and asked, “Xuan Er, the ancestor is asking you a question. What’re you daydreaming for?”

After hearing his words, Lu Xuan shivered and immediately kowtowed to the ancestor. She quickly replied, “Ancestor, the man’s name is Zhang Ruochen. He’s probably about 20 years old.”

When Jade Saint heard the name “Zhang Ruochen”, he slightly frowned and pondered. After a moment, it seemed that he had thought something and his face changed. “How could it be this name?...”

Light of wisdom shone from his eyes, he asked again, “Where is he?”

“He is in Sword Stela,” Lu Xuan answered.

Jade Saint said, “Immediately invite him to Jade Saint Divine Mountain. Treat him politely and don’t give him the cold-shoulder.”

He seemed to feel a little uneasy and added, “Lu Chongyu, you go to pick him up. You must remember that don’t let outsiders see him and directly bring him to me.”

After Lu Chongyu left, Lu Xuan and Lu Jingyuan also walked out of the Holy Temple.

Lu Xuan stuck her tongue out. She felt a little puzzled and said in a low voice, “Grandpa, who is that man? Ancestor gives him so much honor that he ordered great-grandfather to pick him up personally!”

Lu Jingyuan looked serious and said, “Xuan Er, the man’s background is probably stronger than we thought. Ancestor just sent me a message to tell me to keep the secret.”

Lu Xuan showed an unbelievable look with her mouth wide open. The figure of Zhang Ruochen appeared in her mind again. She felt a little uncomfortable and muttered, “He seemed to have nothing extraordinary except for his handsome face.

...

A moment later, led by Lu Chongyu, Zhang Ruochen came to the Holy Temple of Jade Saint Divine Mountain and saw the Jade Saint, Lu Huaiyu.

Lu Chongyu went out and there were only Zhang Ruochen and Jade Saint in the Holy Temple.

Jade Saint carefully looked Zhang Ruochen over. After a while, he asked, “Are you from Ming Hall?”

Ming Hall was a force that established by the old subordinates of Emperor Ming. Like the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, Ming Hall had always been active in Kunlun’s Field and kept fighting against the rule of Empress Chi Yao.

However, the power of Ming Hall was mainly distributed in Nine Provinces of Middle Earth. Its power in the east, south, west, north was relatively weak.

Therefore, the influence of Ming Hall in Eastern Region was not so strong.

Although Zhang Ruochen did not come into contact with the people of the Ming Hall, he knew of its existence. So he was not surprised that the Jade Saint asked him this.

Zhang Ruochen answered: "I'm not from the Ming Hall."

Jade Saint said, "If you're not from Ming Hall, how do you know the poem?"

Zhang Ruochen looked up, the old man sitting above was not his sixth elder brother, Lu Yuanzhi. Therefore, he was still defensive and dared not to speak his own identity.

Zhang Ruochen thought for a while and said with obeisance, "I have some private reasons, so I'll only answer some questions in front of elder Lu Yuanzhi."

Jade Saint frowned slightly and said, "Lu Yuanzhi is my grandfather. You may not know but he passed away 300 years ago."

"What? He has... died..."

Although Zhang Ruochen had already expected this result, he was still sad when Jade Saint told him.

Eight hundred years had passed; time had brought a great change to the world, even a Saint would reach the end.

Jade Saint continued to say, "Now, I'm the master of Sword Sanctum. If you have any problem or message, you can directly tell me. Perhaps I could help you."

It was impossible for Zhang Ruochen to tell Jade Saint his identity because he only trusted his sixth elder brother, Lu Yuanzhi.

Can I believe trust other people?

What happened in the past had been too odd. Even Zhang Ruochen's lover had killed him personally, who else he could believe?

And Chi Yao had been reigning for 500 years, the force of the imperial court was uncontended under the heavens, sweeping away all disobedience and ruling the whole wide world. How could Zhang Ruochen easily expose his identity?

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and bowed again, he said, "I just come to repair my sword. There is nothing else."

Disappointment appeared in Jade Saint's eyes, he looked at the broken sword, and then he laughed and said, "I would like to ask, where did you get this broken sword?"

Zhang Ruochen replied calmly, "I found it in the Martial Market of Yunwu Commandery. I bought it for its special material. Then I asked many weapon refiners to repair it, but they all failed. And I just heard of that Sword Sanctum is a Holy Land of refining weapon, so I come here to visit Master Lu, wondering if he can help me. But I didn't think that Master Lu had died 300 years before."

Jade Saint said, "It means that you didn't know the sword was made of Natural Divine Iron before today?"

"Yes." Zhang Ruochen replied.

Jade Saint smiled and said, "Sword Sanctum also participated in the process of casting the sword. I know some secrets about Natural Divine Iron and the sword. Do you want to know?"

Zhang Ruochen knew that the Jade Saint was deliberately testing him.

# Chapter 379 - Divine Altar

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Zhang Ruochen knew Jade Saint was only testing him, but he did not refuse, because he also wanted to know the origin of the Abyss Ancient Sword.

He did not let any emotion show and said, "I would like to know about it."

Jade Saint was sitting at the head position with an extraordinary bearing. Divine brilliance was flowing through in each of his hair. A wisp of Spiritual Qi streamed around him as if he was in the center of heaven.

That was the bearing of a Saint.

"You should have heard of the legend of the Natural Divine Iron," he spoke, "that legend is not the truth. Was Empress Chi Yao the person who got the Natural Divine Iron 800 years ago? She wasn't."

"It was her father, Emperor Qing, who get the Natural Divine Iron."

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised to hear about this at all.

800 years ago, Chi Yao was still a teenage girl. How could she invite the top ten weapon refiners to cast swords at the same time?

Only Emperor Qing had such power and influence.

Jade Saint continued to say, "Nature is divided into Yin and Yang, life and death, black and white. So what they previously forge isn't only one sword, but two."



“Top 10 weapon refiners racked their brains and used various methods to divide Natural Divine Iron into two parts. One was black, and the other was white. And then, it took them eighty-one days to successfully cast two swords. One was ‘Death Sword,’ the other was ‘Life Sword.’”

Zhang Ruochen squinted his eyes and said, “The white Blood Drop Sword of Empress Chi Yao is the Death Sword?”

“Unfortunately, it has been dyed blood red,” Jade Saint nodded and sighed.

Zhang Ruochen pointed at the Abyss Ancient Sword and asked, “Why did the Life Sword break?”

“Only the Death Sword could break the Life Sword. And only the Life Sword could cut off the Death Sword,” Jade Saint continued.

Zhang Ruochen did not say anything.

After a while, Jade Saint said again, “Do you know why those swords were called ‘life’ and ‘death’?”

“Why?” Zhang Ruochen asked.

Jade Saint said, “The so-called Death Sword can absorb the blood of the common people in the world, through which it can constantly gain more power and eventually turn into a Natural Divine Sword. Therefore, if someone wants to develop the Death Sword, massacres is unavoidable. The more blood the Death Sword absorb, the more powerful it will be.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Then how did the Life Sword get its name?”

Jade Saint answered, “The Death Sword can absorb the blood of the man to grow continuously. But the Life Sword can enhance itself by absorbing and integrating all kinds of weapons into its blade.”

Zhang Ruochen nodded and said, “I understand! Weapons are killing tools. And Life Sword can save the world by absorbing all weapons.”

“Exactly.”

Zhang Ruochen sighed and said, “Unfortunately, the Life Sword is broken.”

Jade Saint stroke his beard and smiled, he said, “It’s not impossible to repair the Life Sword. At least, the Sword Sanctum has the ability. Because we participated in the forging of the two swords and we understand the process. If you trust us, you can put the Life Sword in Sword Sanctum. Once it is repaired, I would personally send people to give it back to you.”

Zhang Ruochen asked, “Can I trust you?”

Jade Saint smiled and said, “Do you think you can walk out of the Holy Temple if the Sword Sanctum wants to grab your Life Sword?”

“You’re right.”

Zhang Ruochen took a deep breath and bowed to Jade Saint with his fist gripping, then he said, “Since it is so, thank you. How about the cost of repairing the Life Sword?”

“No one knows I’m in the deep forest, only the moon accompanies and sends me light.”

“The owner of this poem has some relation with the Sword Sanctum. Since you know the poem, you don’t need to pay anything.”

Jade Saint said again, “I’ll ask you again, do you really have nothing else to say?”

Obviously, Jade Saint was still expecting. After all, he had waited for the poem for 300 years.

Zhang Ruochen shook his head and said, “I don’t understand what you mean. Farewell.”

Zhang Ruochen saluted again and then walked out of the Holy Temple.

Jade Saint stared at the departing figure of Zhang Ruochen with a serious look. He thought quickly, and a moment later, he called Lu Chongyu in through sound transmission.

Lu Chongyu knelt down and kowtowed to the Jade Saint, and asked, “Ancestor, what are your orders?”

Jade Saint said, “Arrange someone to find out his identity. There can be no omission.”

Lu Chongyu doubtfully asked, “Ancestor, you have paid so much attention to this young man, who is he?”

Jade Saint sighed and said, “There are some things that you shouldn’t know of yet. Go now!”

After Lu Chongyu left, Jade Saint turned into a white light and flew out of the Holy Temple.

In the underground area of the Sword Sanctum, a Divine Altar of up to 330 meters tall was cast. It seemed that the cylindrical altar was made of white jade.

The surface of the altar was engraved with complicated lines. If someone looked closely, he would find that blood was flowing in those lines.

Jade Saint came to the bottom of the white altar, he devoutly put his palms together and worshipped the altar. And he said, “Grandpa, the poem appeared!”

“CRASH!”

The lines of blood on the white altar began to flow quickly, sending out an immense sound of rivers surging. The sound was endless and deafening. The Spiritual Qi of heaven and earth became violent.

Wisps of smoke rose from the center of the white altar. They gathered together and turned into a Divine Soul.

If Zhang Ruochen were there, he would recognize the Divine Soul. It was his sixth elder brother, Lu Yuanzhi.

The Divine Soul of Lu Yuanzhi suspended above the white altar. It exuded white brilliance and made an ethereal sound, asking in excitement, “Is it Emperor Ming?”

Jade Saint shook his head and said, “It’s not Emperor Ming, but a young man about 20 years old.”

The Divine Soul of Lu Yuanzhi was disappointed and sighed, saying, “Before 800 years ago, I received an order from Emperor Ming to build the ‘Divine Altar.’ It took me 500 years to build it. But unfortunately, the emperor has been missing for 800 years. There is still not even a trace of him. Perhaps he died in the hands of Emperor Qing and Empress Chi Yao.”

The altar beneath Lu Yuanzhi’s Divine Soul was the “Divine Altar”.

800 years ago, Emperor Ming issued a secret order— pour out all resources to let Lu Yuanzhi build the Divine Altar.

The Divine Altar was used to preserve the Divine Souls of Saints so that their Divine Souls would not dissipate. Meanwhile, it could accumulate the power of Saints.

The project was so massive that it took 500 years and all of the resources of Emperor Ming and Sword Sanctum to be completed.

Lu Yuanzhi indeed had died from the depletion of his lifetime 300 years ago. But with the magical power of the altar, his Divine Soul had been preserved.

Jade Saint pondered for a while and said, “Although he is a young man, his name... is a little weird. Moreover, he owns the Life Sword.”

Lu Yuanzhi was already disappointed after knowing the man was not Emperor Ming. But after hearing Jade Saint’s words, he had energy again and immediately asked, “Is it the Good-luck Sword that Emperor Qing ordered to cast?”

“Yes,” Jade Saint said.

Lu Yuanzhi asked, “You said the name of the young man is weird. How so?”

Jade Saint said, “His name is Zhang Ruochen.”

“Zhang Ruochen.”

Lu Yuanzhi repeated after him. Suddenly, his Divine Soul fiercely shivered and said, “Are you sure about the name?”

“There’s no mistake. When I heard the name, I was surprised, too. After all, the Crown Prince was dead for 800 years. Even if he were alive, he would be over 800 years old.” Jade Saint said.

The Divine Soul of Lu Yuanzhi closed eyes and murmured, saying, “Zhang Ruochen, the Good-luck Sword, and the poem. How could this be so coincidental? Is he really my little junior fellow apprentice?”

Jade Saint asked, “Grandpa, how should we handle this now?”

Lu Yuanzhi’s Divine Soul opened his eyes and said, “It’s too odd. I don’t know who he is. If he is my little junior fellow apprentice, we should make every effort to help him. But I’m worried that this is a fraud of Empress Chi Yao.”

Jade Saint’s face changed and said, “Is grandpa worried that this Zhang Ruochen is the person that Empress Chi Yao sent to test us?”

“It’s possible.”

Lu Yuanzhi said, “The relation between the Sword Sanctum and the Zhangs is secretive. However, Emperor Qing used to have a good relationship with Emperor Ming; maybe he’ll know some clues. Although the possibility is small, we still have to take precautions.”

“And for this Zhang Ruochen, we can talk to him and try to help him. But we can’t tell him all of our secrets; something must be reserved.”

“Next, try to find out his identity. Make sure to look through every single detail.”

“And, you need to pass on this message to the people of the Ming Hall. Let the people of the Ming Hall contact Zhang Ruochen. Sword Sanctum dares not to publicly confront Empress Chi Yao, but Ming Hall does.”

“Besides, the divine ancestor of Ming Hall had a close relationship with the little junior fellow apprentice. If she knew that little junior fellow apprentice might still be alive, she would definitely come to the Eastern Region. Only when

she confirms the identity of little junior fellow apprentice, will things be completely safe.”

Jade Saint still felt worried and asked, “What if he is really a person that Empress Chi Yao sent to investigate us?”

“Haha! Empress Chi Yao is decisive. If she really suspects us, no matter what we do, it will be impossible for us to survive the great calamity. Just follow my instructions, we just need to make a good relationship with Zhang Ruochen, and leave the rest to Ming Hall.”

Lu Yuanzhi continued to say, “Give the Good-luck Sword to me. I can help him repair it with the help of Divine Altar. It’s time for the Life Sword to reappear in the world and compete against the Death Sword of Empress Chi Yao.”

After Jade Saint presented the Abyss Ancient Sword to Lu Yuanzhi, he took three steps back and left the underground Divine Altar.

After returning to the Holy Temple, which was at the summit of the sacred mountains, Jade Saint immediately recorded messages of Zhang Ruochen on a Signal Flare.

“I hope he really is the Crown Prince.”

Jade Saint deeply exhaled and infused a Spiritual Qi into the Signal Flare.

“SWOOSH!”

The Signal Flare immediately turned into a streamer and flew to Middle Earth.

# Chapter 380 - The Same Courier Station

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

After leaving Sword Sanctum, Zhang Ruochen returned to the Courier Station of Martial Market in the Seventh District, not knowing what had happened afterward.

When Zhang Ruochen entered the Courier Station of Martial Market, he suddenly heard a noisy crowd. He looked over and in the distance, saw Zi Hansha, Xue Yingrou and other gifted students of South Cloud Commandery. They were actually living in the Nanting Courier Station.

At this moment, they were standing in the middle of the spacious martial-arts arena and measuring the Courier Station with their eyes.

Among them, a younger gifted student shouted with a surprised, “Wow! It’s indeed a Courier Station of the School of the Martial Market. It’s so magnificent!”

“East Region Saint City is a real Holy Land for martial arts practice. I must enter the Saint Academy. I will stay here forever and never go back!”

...

...

Even if they are gifted students of South Cloud Commandery, for most of them, it was their first time to come to East Region Saint City.

They were shocked by its prosperity. Even a Courier Station was more splendid than a grand palace. Most of the people

were determined to live here and became permanent residents of East Region Saint City.

It seemed that being a permanent resident of East Region Saint City was a kind of supreme pride.

Zi Hansha crossed her arms and stood proudly. Seeing those junior fellow apprentices and junior sister apprentices who had not seen much of life, she showed disdain in her eyes and said, “If you want to stay in East Region Saint City forever, you have to be able to buy a mansion. As far as I know, the cheapest mansion costs at least two million pieces of Spiritual Crystals. As for the mansion in the Seventh District, you could not possibly buy one with ten million pieces of Spiritual Crystals.”

Zi Hansha, an outstanding talent of a Half-Saint family, had been visited East Region Saint City. So, he had some understanding of East Region Saint City.

Hearing Zi Hansha’s words, the enthusiasm of those talented students almost died out.

A mansion of East Region Saint City was too expensive. Even if their martial cultivation reached the Heaven Realm and they had worked hard for decades, they would probably still be unable to afford it.

Furthermore, even if they could earn several million pieces of Spiritual Crystals, they would rather spend them on training. No one would randomly buy a mansion.

So it was almost impossible for a warrior in the Heaven Realm to buy a mansion in East Region Saint City.

Zi Hansha spared a glance at Xue Yingrou and said proudly, “Our Zi family is a Half-Saint family, so we have many houses in East Region Saint City. Before we arrived here, our master had said that as long as I could become a Saint of the Saint Academy, I could get one of the mansions.”

Hearing the words, those gifted students were all surprised, and they walked closer to Zi Hansha, before they tried to start flattering him.



“Eldest brother is indeed powerful and definitely an inheritor of a Half-Saint family. We are far below you level.”

“From now on, eldest brother, please give me support in East Region Saint City.”

...

Especially those talented female students, who were adoringly stared at Zi Hansha, sighed with emotion. A Half-Saint family is profound and deep-seated. It actually had power in East Region Saint City.

On the contrary, Xue Yingrou was very calm.

Ever since seeing that Zhang Ruochen defeated Zi Hansha, she was very disappointed at Zi Hansha. It was just a Half-Saint family. In East Region Saint City, there were many more of it.

He at least had to become an inheritor of a powerful Saint family to be worthy for me.

Zhang Ruochen just cast a glance in the distance and shook his head. He walked inside the gate, heading toward Jadetoad Palace.

Someone from the group saw Zhang Ruochen and shouted, “Eldest brother, senior sister apprentice Xue, look! Zhang Ruochen is also living in this Courier Station.”

Those gifted students all looked at Zhang Ruochen with disdain clear in their eyes.

“I’m actually living in the same Courier Station with those hillbillies, which really degrades my identity,” Zi Hansha thought so in his mind. He stopped smiling and just hummed.

Xue Yingrou frowned, she had a bit indescribable feeling inside her heart. She did not hate Zhang Ruochen. However, she was very disappointed in him.

Zhang Ruochen did not bother talking to them. He passed through the martial-arts arena and returned to his room.

“I must keep practicing and try my best to reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm as soon as possible.”

Zhang Ruochen went into the internal space of Time and Space Spinel and sat in the middle with his legs crossed. He cleared his mind, took a deep breath and closed his eyes. He ran exercises to fully absorb the Divine Dragon Strength of the Dragon Pearl.

In Sword Sanctum, although Zhang Ruochen only fought with Lu Fantian for one move, he could clearly feel the powerful strength of Lu Fantian.

“Lu Fantian’s cultivation must have reached the Medium State of the Heaven Realm, which is three realms higher than mine. If I fight with him without using the Martial Soul and the Spiritual Power, I will lose for sure.”

The powerful Martial Soul and Spiritual Power were Zhang Ruochen’s last important card. However, as an inheritor of Sword Sanctum, did Lu Fantian not have his last card?

So, if there was a real fight, Zhang Ruochen would not be sure that he could defeat Lu Fantian.

At present, he had to increase his cultivation as quickly as possible. Only if he reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, his strength could be increased. So that he would be more confident to fight against the top talents of the Eastern Region.

There were more than 5000 drops of blue Vital Essence floating in his Qi sea, which was like a sky full of sparkling stars.

God marks appeared one after another on the Qi sea wall. Some had a human body and a dragon head. Some had a human body and a snake tail. Some had three heads and six arms...

With the running of exercises, the god marks seemed to be alive, turning into illusory images of gods and infusing into Zhang Ruochen’s Vital Essence.

Every drop of Vital Essence was infused into an illusory image of God.

From afar, it was like a God suspended in a bubble, emitting sacred light.

“Prebiotic Blue Sky.”

Zhang Ruochen ran the fourth level exercise of the Scripture of Emperor Ming’s Empyrean. A vortex appeared in his Qi sea, making drops of Vital Essence start spinning.

Suddenly, the speed of the Vessel of Spiritual Blood absorbing the Divine Dragon Strength doubled.

20 days later, the number of the Vital Essence in Zhang Ruochen’s Qi sea was 9700 drops, close to 10000 drops.

If Zhang Ruochen had three more days, he would be confident that he could reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Unfortunately, the first round of the Saint Academy’s examination took place today. Zhang Ruochen had to stop practicing and walked out of the internal space of Time and Space Spinel.

Only six or seven days had passed in reality, while 20 days had passed in the Time and Space Spinel.

In the morning, the breeze was cool. Mist was rising. Vermilion overhanging eaves and colored glaze tiles could be seen vaguely in the distance among the fog.

Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong, and Chang Qiqi had waited outside long ago. They were wearing neat Silvery Martial Robes, which made them look very vigorous and energetic.

Seeing that Zhang Ruochen had walked out, everyone’s eyes suddenly lightened up.

Even Lei Jing whose cultivation was very profound also stared at Zhang Ruochen deeply. He asked, “Zhang Ruochen, does your cultivation reach to another level?”

Although Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation did not reach another level, due that Gods Marks were integrated with his Vital Essence in his body, it became more mysterious and strange.

Every drop of his Vital Essence was like those of a God’s.

It was because of this that they also felt strange, thinking of that Zhang Ruochen had reached another realm.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen's strength was indeed increased greatly.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, "I haven't even reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm for too long. How can I breakthrough to the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm that fast?"

Hearing this, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi felt relieved.

Chang Qiqi patted his chest and said, "I'm scared to death. Luckily, you haven't reached another level. Otherwise, it's just too crushing and overwhelming! I have hard been refining the Dragon's Blood. Till now, I've just refined 1800 drops of Vital Essence."

# Chapter 381 - The First Day of the Saint Academy Examination

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“I am better than you,” Si Xingkong said afterwards. “I have practiced with 2400 drops of Vital Essence and greatly increased the speed of our practice with the Dragon’s Blood. By my calculations, I can reach the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm before the year is out.”

Chang Qiqi also nodded his head. Without the Dragon’s Blood, it would have taken him three or five years to reach his current Cultivation Realm.

Because of this, he owed thanks to Zhang Ruochen.

If Zhang Ruochen had not brought them to the Underwater Dragon Palace, it would have been impossible for them to gain the Dragon’s Blood, and even more impossible for them to attend the exam at Saint Academy.

Thanks to his Dragon’s Blood, he had gained the long-cherished opportunity to become a Saint of the Saint Academy.

Everybody was talking and laughing; only Duanmu Xingling remained silent. She seemed to be upset about something.

Zhang Ruochen cast a glance towards Duanmu Xingling and noticed her difference in mood. “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu,” he said, “what are you thinking?”

Duanmu Xingling was startled by Zhang Ruochen’s words. “It’s nothing,” she hastily said. “I’m just very happy to see

senior sister disciple Luo and Sister Chen again.”

“Indeed! Luo Shuihan, Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier will be attending the exam here in Saint Academy to attend the exam,” Chang Qiqi said with excitement. “We’ll finally be able to reunite!”

Following after Lei Jing, Zhang Ruochen, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi and Duanmu Xingling rushed to the Saint Academy.

Crowds of people had gathered outside the Saint Academy all of them internal students of the School of the Martial Market. Their numbers could not be counted at a glance.

Some of them had been waiting here since last night.

Some of the prestigious students rode in on elegant carriages drawn by savage beasts, directly entering the gate of the Saint Academy without needing to queue up. This roused the envy of the other students.

“That’s Xu Qing, the God-favored son of the Saint Xu Gentry.”

“There goes a Half-Saint from the Saint Xu Gentry; he’s a lecturer at the Saint Academy.”

“No wonder Xu Qing doesn’t have to queue up; he can directly enter the Saint Academy to attend the first round of the exam.”

...

While others were talking, Zhang Ruochen glanced towards the carriage. He saw a young man in a white embroidered robe sitting in the carriage, a fellow with sharp eyes and a dignified air.

Four brute elephants in golden armour pulled the carriage along, marching forward at a slow, seemingly momentous pace.

Behind the carriage came 36 young warriors, men and women who had all cultivated to the Heaven Realm.

Each of them was brimming with spirit and had Spiritual Blood filled with vigor. Spiritual Qi circulated through

100,000 of the pores in their bodies. They were obviously not common warriors.

36 of these young warriors were also outstanding talents cultivated by the Saint Xu Gentry, sent to attend the Saint Academy's examination along with Xu Qing.

"These Saint families are definitively powerful if they can actually cultivate this many Young Geniuses," Si Xingkong said in a shocked tone. "If this current generation of Saint Xu Gentry students are so outstanding, how terrible will they be dozens of generations from now?"

Lei Jing said, "That is the intrinsic, insurmountable difference between powerful Saint families and other clans. Who knows how many powerful Saint families there are in the entire Eastern Region?"

The appearance of dozens of genius Saint Xu Gentry students outside the Saint Academy truly caused quite a stir. Everyone was talking about it, some with whispers of awe, others with hisses of envy.

The genius students from the South Cloud Commandery stood among the crowd and stared at the Saint Xu Gentry carriages.

Xue Yingrou looked at Xu Qing as he sat in the carriage, a strange look visible in her beautiful eyes. There was no doubt in her mind: only someone like Xu Qing, the God-favored son of a powerful Saint family, would be a match for her.

If she could become a woman like Xu Qing, someday she could stand in that very spot.

In that moment, a sound like a tsunami came from the crowd.

"The God-favored son of the East Region Saint Mansion is here!"

"My god! The East Region Saint Mansion actually sent much more geniuses than the Saint Xu Gentry did."

"The Chens are a Aristocratic Family from the East Region Saint Mansions that date back to the Middle Ages. Their power is leagues above that of the common Saint Families; they truly are one of the top clans."

...

Zhang Ruochen was shocked. He thought about Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier; weren't they from the East Region Saint Mansions?

Zhang Ruochen scanned the ranks of East Region Saint Mansion members, looking for Huang Yanchen.

The East Region Saint Mansion contingent was led by three Violet Gold Carriages more than ten meters tall. These vehicles, less carriages and more like three small palaces, slowly lumbered forward.

These three Violet Gold Carriages were each pulled by a fifth level savage beast, a Kylin.

These three Kyilins pressed forward bridle to bridle, emitting a powerful savage beast aura that squashed the momentum of the Saint Xu Gentry.

Three talents sat alone in each of the three Violet Gold Carriages, two men and one woman. They were the most outstanding talents in the current generation of Chens.

Though they were not Saintly Beings, their strength was very close to that of Saintly Beings.

Behind the Violet Gold Carriage marched 157 young warriors in the Heaven Realm, talents cultivated by the Chens who had come to attend the Saint Academy exam.

Even after looking for quite a while, Zhang Ruochen did not find Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier. He was a bit surprised.

At that moment, Zhang Ruochen felt the sensation of someone staring at his back. It was Huang Yanchen's aura.

Zhang Ruochen smiled slightly and twirled around to look.

Huang Yanchen, dressed in a silver robe, stood more than 30 meters away in a silver robe, her hair colored a royal blue. She stood there, chest outthrust with pride, holding a white combat sword in her hands.

She raised her chin with pride, a bitter icing air pouring off her body. She seemed to be keeping her distance from the others.



Before Zhang Ruochen could walk over, Duanmu Xingling reached Huang Yanchen and hugged her. “Sister Chen, I missed you so much!” She said excitedly. “Say, why aren’t you with the Young Geniuses of the East Region Saint Mansions?”

Chen Xier walked up to them from behind. “We are students of School of the Martial Market in Omen Ridge,” she pointed out with a smile. “Since we’re going to attend the Saint Academy’s examination, we certainly ought to be by your side.”

Upon saying those words, she cast a glance towards Zhang Ruochen and provocatively fluttered her eyelashes.

Luo Shuihan, clad in a white veil, walked out of the crowd and stared at Zhang Ruochen. “Junior fellow apprentice Zhang,” she said in a cold voice, “I have succeeded with my practice!”

Nobody but Zhang Ruochen knew what Luo Shuihan meant.

Luo Shuihan must have succeeded at practicing the movement of the first Half-Saint’s Sacred Glyph technique left by Luo Xu. She had awoken her Saintly Being and gone through a metamorphosis.

Zhang Ruochen was very pleased. “Congratulations, senior sister disciple Luo,” he said in a bright tone.

“I must thank you. Without your help, I couldn’t possibly have succeeded.”

Although Luo Shuihan stood right in front of Zhang Ruochen, she was cloaked in clouds of fog that flowed around her. It was like she was standing in a distortion of space and time, obscuring her beauty in people’s eyes.

Without the use of his Skyeye, even Zhang Ruochen could not perceive her.

She must have succeeded in mastering her Saintly Being.

Chang Qiqi laughed out loud: “Now that we’re all here, today is the day we redeem the name of School of the Martial Market in Omen Ridge. Today’s the day we show up everyone who looks down upon us and thinks that people from a remote

area like us can't do anything. Everyone try your best to pass the exam and become a Saint.”

“Today the first round of the exam will take place; this round is not so strict,” Luo Shuihan said. “With this Saint Academy token of mine, we can directly enter Saint Academy to attend the exam without queuing up. Everyone follow me!”

Luo Shuihan took the first step forward. Zhang Ruochen and the others followed behind him.

...

# Chapter 382 - Stairway to Heaven

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The forefather of the Luos, Luo Xu, was a Saint from Saint Academy of very high status.

With his token, Luo Shuihan could go practically anywhere in the Saint Academy.

Very soon, the people of Omen Ridge reached the place for the first round round of the exam, Stairway to Heaven.

Stairway to Heaven was the highest building of Saint Academy, made entirely from snow crystal meteorite. Every piece of it weighed 50,000 kg. There were 99 stairs in total, which rose straight into the clouds, giving people a feeling of expansive magnificence.

At the top of the 99-stair way was a white Holy Temple that emitted white holy light. Seen from afar, it resembled a round moon hanging in the sky with the Holy temple itself at the very center.

Such a wonderful scene could only be seen at the Saint Academy.

It was said that since ancient times, every saint of Saint Academy would leave behind an article to be reserved in the Holy Temple.

At the same time, the Holy Temple worshiped the stone figures of these Saints, which contained their residual Saint Power, ensuring that students of the younger generation would worship them forever.

To worship these figures, they first had to climb the Stairway.

In the Holy Temple atop the Stairway to Heaven, the large quantities of Saint Power gave off a powerful aura, pale streaks that pressed down from above and shackled them like chains.

With every stair step they ascended, the pressure would double.

Only students who could reach the 30th stair were officially counted as passing the first round exam.

When Luo Shuihan, Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi and Chen Xier came to the foot of the Stairway to Heaven, they saw hundreds of people who were ascending and continuing to ascend the Stairway.

On the 30th step of the Stairway stood a giant Jade Tablet nine meters high.

Students who reached the 30th stair needed to carve their names on the Jade Tablet with their fingers to pass the first round exam.

Genius students who ascended to the 30th stair were usually not satisfied with this and kept going up.

Some of them had actually already ascended to 50th stair and were still climbing.

“The higher one’s qualifications are, the higher he can ascend,” Huang Yanchen said. “Therefore, many people who have passed the first round exam choose to keep ascending to prove their superiority.”

“Stairway to Heaven is a very famous historical site even in the Eastern Region. As long as you show your outstanding talent and win over all other warriors here, you immediately become famous worldwide.”

“A man wants to establish his reputation like a tree wants to cast its shadow. Chances like these don’t come often.”

Chang Qiqi rubbed his palms. “Haha!” he said with excitement. “Today seems to be the day I will become

famous.”

Besides Chang Qiqi, Si Xingkong, Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier were also very excited; this very rare opportunity was a chance for them to prove their strength and compete with the God-favored sons of the entire Eastern Region.

Nevermind the chance to study at the Saint Academy:

It was also possible that many Half-Saints were standing in the darkness and observing the Stairway to Heaven.

As long as they were outstanding enough, they could be directly enrolled as the students of the Half-Saints.

This had happened in the past examinations of the Saint Academy. So, though it was just the first round exam, they all tried their best to show their strength.

Zhang Ruochen and the others did not ascend the Stairway right away; they were still observing and in the hopes of learning the abilities of the Eastern Region geniuses.

A short moment later, the genius students of the South Cloud Commandery, who had also come to the foot of the Stairway to Heaven, rushed towards the Stairway.

Even for an outstanding inheritor of the Half-Saint Family like Zi Hansha, it would definitely be a great joy for him if he could be enrolled as the student of a Half-Saint.

This reason for this was that the Zi family had only a single ancestor of Half-Saint level, who did not often reveal himself.

If their Half-Saint ancestor accidentally died without leaving a successor, the Zi family would be kicked down into the mortal world and lose their status of Half-Saint family. At the same time, they would suffer at the hands of other Half-Saint families seeking to carve up their property.

If Zi Hansha could become the student of a Half-Saint, his status in the Zi family would rise as well. Hee would definitely be designated to inherit the position of Zi family leader.

Even the status of the Zi family would also possibly increase.

“The Stairway to Heaven...wonderful. Today will be the day I become famous. If I can win the favor of a Half-Saint and become his student, who will dare to disrespect me when I return to the Zi family house? Xue Yingrou, that little b\*\*ch, will surely throw herself at me.”

The more Zi Hansha thought, the more excited he got. After taking a deep breath, he kicked his legs to fly up the stairs and land on the 21th step.

“Boom!”

Zi Hansha’s amazing performance caused quite a stir.

“Who is that man? He skipped straight to the 21st stair; that’s really amazing.”

“There are actually masters like this attending the Saint Academy’s examination?”

Zi Hansha heard the gasps of amazement down below and grew excited. He kept ascending the stairs– the 22nd step, the 23rd step...

Without stopping for a moment, he reached the 30th stair.

Purple light gathered around his fingertip. With three swooshing sounds, he carved the name ‘Zi Hansha’ deeply into the Jade Tablet.

Afterward, he kept ascending.

However, the Saint Power from Holy Temple grew stronger and stronger from the 30th stair onward, which forced Zi Hansha to ascend slower and slower.

It took him 15 minutes to get to the 40th level.

Afterward, his speed decreased even further. It took almost three minutes for him to ascend a single step.

Even so, Zi Hansha’s performance was still top-notch, as there were only 23 genius students who had ascended the 40th stair and above till now.

“Zi Hansha is actually the first Martial Market school master from the South Cloud Commandery. He truly is strong,” Zhang Ruochen thought.

At that very moment, there were fresh gasps of amazement from below.

The 24th genius student had ascended to the 40th step.

They all gasped at this genius student, a startlingly slim beauty with skin like cream and long hair like a golden waterfall. She was the very picture of a fairy, standing silhouetted against the holy light of the Stairway to Heaven.

Zhang Ruochen also cast a glance toward the woman and gave a slight nod. He had to admit that Xue Yingrou's beauty was outstanding. Her delicate and attractive temperament in particular made her very adorable, filling men with the temptation to embrace and love her.

"This woman is tiresome, but her talent is high." Duanmu Xingling said.

"You know her?" Huang Yanchen asked.

Duanmu Xingling grinned and cast a glance at Zhang Ruochen. "I only know of her," she replied with a smile, "but Zhang Ruochen has a very deep relationship with her. He not only saved her life, but also taught her sword techniques..."

Duanmu Xingling would have eagerly kept talking had Zhang Ruochen not interrupted her with two loud coughs.

Huang Yanchen, who grew angry at even trivial matters, was grumpy from the start. Hearing Duanmu Xingling's words, her mind was filled with many aesthetically "romantic" scenarios.

"Hum! Is she beautiful? I don't think so!"

Huang Yanchen clenched her snow-white teeth and stared intently at Zhang Ruochen. Her five fingers clenched and made a crackling sound.

Zhang Ruochen smiled and echoed her words: "Nah. She really isn't very beautiful."

"Hmmm," Huang Yanchen said, a doubtful expression on her face. Suddenly, she started dashing up the Stairway to Heaven.

With the instruction of her mother and the strength of Dragon's Blood, Huang Yanchen had greatly improved her

cultivation—she had greatly surpassed her former self.

“Swoosh!”

With just a single movement, Huang Yanchen directly ascended to the 22nd step of the stairway. With a mere four more leaps, she reached the 30th step as if she was flying with wings.

Leaving her name on the Jade Tablet, she instantly ascended to the 31st Stairway and chased after Xue Yingrou.

Men liked to fight for the leading role; women were no different.

Seeing Huang Yanchen chase after Xue Yingrou, Zhang Ruochen felt even more helpless. He glanced over towards Duanmu Xingling. “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu,” he said, “You know how temperamental senior sister apprentice Huang can be; why did you set out to irritate her?”

“I merely told her the truth; was that so wrong?” Duanmu said with a giggle. “I didn’t tell her about Xue Yingrou kissing you...”

Chang Qiqi looked at Huang Yanchen and her position on the stairway. “How can Junior sister apprentice Huang be so strong?” He asked. “Did she completely refine the Dragon’s Blood?”

Huang Yanchen’s truly amazing performance seemed to surpass the power of Zi Hansha.

Chang Qiqi had practiced so hard, but had only refined a mere third of the Dragon’s Blood. Currently, he was far less powerful than Huang Yanchen.

“Haven’t you heard?” Chen Xier said. “Her mother is a Half-Saint who has already helped her completely refine the Dragon’s Blood...among other things.”

“Not just the Dragon’s Blood?”

Chen Xier nodded and continued: “Do you still remember the Half-Saint heart of Di Yi? They handed that heart over to my cousin after it was dug out. In recent months, my cousin has been practicing with the Half-Saint’s heart. With the help of



my aunt, her cultivation has reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm and seems to be approaching the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.”

“Ah! How wonderful to have a Half-Saint mother. If I had gained the help of a Half-Saint, I would have refined the Dragon’s Blood long ago. If I had had a Half-Saint’s heart, I would also have broken through into a new realm long ago.” Chang Qiqi said with a deep sigh.

Huang Yanchen truly had made great progress refining the Dragon’s Blood. For some reason—maybe because she strove to completely regulate her Genuine Qi— the streaks of golden light pouring off her body gathered into the illusory image of a golden dragon.

“Awoo!”

A loud dragon roar echoed from her body, creating a powerful pressure.

In mere moments, she ascended three stairs in a row, and reached the 42th step right behind Xue Yingrou.

Xue Yingrou was obviously shocked by the powerful pressure she felt behind her. She turned and saw an Iceberg Beauty with long blue hair.

“Awoo!”

Another dragon roar.

The beauty with long blue hair held out one palm. Golden light gathered in the middle of her palm and formed into a dragon claw that attacked Xue Yingrou’s shoulder.

“Who are you? What are you doing?” Xue Yingrou said with shock.

Xue Yingrou was also a powerful God-favored daughter with quick reflexes. She darted sideways with a twist of her slender wrist, dodging Huang Yanchen’s attack.

“Divine Dragon Moves the Mountain.”

Huang Yanchen instantly pursued her and lashed out with both hands. One hand grabbed Xue Yingrou’s waist while the other

seized Xue Yingrou's neck. Both hands, each curled like two dragon claws, pushed downward and hurled Xue Yingrou down the Stairway to Heaven.

“Bang! Bang!”

The startingly beautiful Xue Yingrou was hurled down the Stairway to Heaven in a state of sheer misery.

Many of the Young Geniuses regularly fought with each other on the Stairway to Heaven each year during the Saint Academy examination. Most of them were well prepared for this.

None of them, however, expected to see two startling beauties like these fight so fiercely. Before their eyes, one of these beauties was cast down from on high, her image destroyed and reputation discredited. Truly she was in a miserable state!

# Chapter 383 - Duel with Saint Xu Gentry

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Below the Stairway, the gifted students were stupefied. Some were surprised by Huang Yanchen's power, while others showed pity on Xue Yingrou.

Any man would have compassion for a beauty like Xue Yingrou, who was directly thrown down from the Stairway.

“The blue-haired woman just used some martial techniques from the

Divine Dragon Techniques

. Is she a descendant of the Chens or the East Region Saint Mansions?”

An arrogant voice came out from the crowd. That person snorted and said, “Don't you know her? Her mother is the youngest Half-Saint in the Chens. Her name is Huang Yanchen.”

The speaker was Xu Qing, the first prodigy of the Saint Xu family.

He wore a white embroidered robe and his hands were clasped behind his back, which was straight like a long spear. He walked from the distance with an awe-inspiring strength. The onlooking students were frightened and drew back to make way for him.

Only a few people remained calm in front of him.

Chen Xier said with a smile, “That man is Xu Qing. In the Saint Xu family, he's favored by a Half-Saint forefather. He

also has outstanding talents. It's said that his martial cultivation has reached the Peak of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

“The most important thing is that he met my cousin in the Chens and was startled by her beauty. After that, he visited my cousin many times and sent her many rare treasures. But, regrettably, all of those treasures were thrown out by my cousin.

“But, he continued to send things to my cousin's mansion. Moreover, what he gave her each time was more precious than the previous one. Even though he knew that my cousin was engaged, he didn't give up. Moreover, he intended to take her away from you.”

Zhang Ruochen looked calm. Chang Qiqi snorted and said, “Unexpectedly, he attempted to snatch someone else's fiancée. Doesn't he have a clear estimation of himself?”

Chen Xier laughed, saying, “As a descendant of Saint Gentry, he could easily carry off someone's wife, not to mention a fiancée. Senior Brother Chang, Xu Qing can kill you with half a movement.”

Chang Qiqi was not convinced and activated the circulation of Genuine Qi within his body. On the surface of his skin, hard golden scales were generated.

After refining Dragon's Blood, Chang Qiqi's body mutated. As long as he mobilized the Genuine Qi, dragon scales would generate to cover his entire body. And then, he would become invulnerable and powerful enough that he could move mountains and drain seas.

Chen Xier showed a little disdain, saying, “The power of Dragon's Blood will be maximized only by practicing the Divine Dragon Techniques

. Have you ever seen my cousin utilize Dragon's Power? You're too far behind her. Even if you possess the Dragon Scales for protection, how many movements can you withstand?”

“You've also practiced the

## Divine Dragon Techniques

, right? Let's have a fight.”

Chang Qiqi was enraged by Chen Xier. He sank his legs so that his ligaments and meridians became tense and his power gathered in both hands.

“Are you sure?”

Chen Xier rolled her eyes and was even more disdainful. When she held her 10 scallion-white fingers tightly together, wisps of golden Genuine Qi emitted from inside. Each wisp of Genuine Qi was like a flying dragon.

Zhang Ruochen felt somewhat unpleasant and said coldly, “Today, we've come here to participate in the Saint Academy's examination, rather than watch your competition. If you dare to, please go to the Stairway to Heaven to compete with students from the other Schools of the Martial Market.”

After being rebuked by Zhang Ruochen, the haughty Chen Xier immediately contained her Genuine Qi and dared not to challenge Zhang Ruochen.

In the distance, Xu Qing was highly praising Huang Yanchen in a loud and clear voice, “Junior Sister Huang's ‘Divine Dragon Removing Mountains’ was displayed perfectly. She really deserves to be imparted by the Golden Dragon.”

“Golden Dragon? Which one?”

Upon hearing Xu Qing's words, many people were confused.

“The Golden Dragon used to accompany Buddhist Emperor. Junior Sister Huang obtained its Dragon's Blood, so she got its inheritance. After refining the Golden Dragon's blood, her physical quality absolutely reached the top level, even though it can't be compared with the Saintly Being.”

“I've also heard of the Golden Dragon. It's said that the Dragon Sarira also emerged with it.”

“In the entire Kunlun's Field, the Golden Dragon Tribe is the most powerful. A drop of Dragon's Blood is enough to last a lifetime, let alone a Dragon Sarira.”

...

Xue Yingrou, who had fallen from above, was just standing up. When she heard Xu Qing praising Huang Yanchen, she was even more jealous of her.

Originally, Xue Yingrou fell in love at first sight with Xu Qing. She wanted to become a daughter-in-law to Saint Gentry by throwing herself at him.

Xu Qing, however, did not like her at all.

Xu Qing had been staring at Huang Yanchen, God's favored daughter, on the Stairway to Heaven.

"Who on earth is she? Did I offend her? Why has she been against me?"

Xue Yingrou squeezed her fists and clenched her teeth. Her eyes were full of fury, envy, and some killing intent, as if she would tear Huang Yanchen up.

Although Huang Yanchen ignored him, Xu Qing was not angry. He laughed and stretched out his two arms like a great hawk spreading its wings. And then, he rushed to the Stairway to Heaven.

Xu Qing reached the 26th level of the Stairway after taking just a single step.

Xu Qing directly reached the 30th level after the second step. After he signed his name on the Jade Tablet, he immediately rushed up and chased after Huang Yanchen.

Later, 36 gifted students cultivated by Saint Xu Gentry also rushed to the Stairway to Heaven to escort Xu Qing.

"He's really shameless. Zhang Ruochen, let me teach him a lesson for you," Chang Qiqi said indifferently.

Before Zhang Ruochen could stop him, Chang Qiqi had rushed to the Stairway to Heaven in a storm of anger.

Previously, Chen Xier had told him, "Xu Qing can kill you with half a movement." But Chang Qiqi was not convinced. He was outraged and wanted to vent his anger.

Chang Qiqi quickly caught up with a gifted student of Saint Xu Gentry. He grabbed his vest, blocked his Sacred Meridian, and raised him over his head.

“You people of Saint Xu Gentry are shameless.”

Chang Qiqi swore and powerfully threw the student with his arms.

“Bang!”

The student fell from a height of 10 meters and as he landed down on the ground, it slightly shook.

Besides the gifted students of Saint Xu Gentry, those below the Stairway to Heaven were also stupified. It was unbelievable that someone had dared to abuse the people of Saint Xu Gentry so shamelessly.

He really had some nerve.

Saint Xu Gentry had a great influence and many masters, so even the descendants of other Saint Gentries could not easily swear like this.

Was his background stronger than that of Saint Xu Gentry?

Someone noticed that Chang Qiqi was completely covered up by Dragon Scales. They speculated that he must have refined a lot of Dragon’s Blood. But it was unlikely that he had refined the Dragon’s Blood of a Golden Dragon because no ordinary people could refine a large amount of Dragon’s Blood.

How could a common warrior afford such a large amount of Dragon’s Blood?

All the people were speculating about Chang Qiqi’s identity. Since he dared to challenge Saint Xu Gentry, he had to be a hero.

“Who is this man? Doesn’t he fear the retaliation of Saint Xu Gentry?”

“Since he cursed all the people of Saint Xu Gentry, he’s absolutely not an average person. Perhaps he belongs to another Saint Gentry that is ready to do battle with Saint Xu Gentry on the Stairway to Heaven.”

At that moment, Xue Yingrou scoffed, “Him? You’re really overestimating him. He is just a common warrior from Omen Ridge, a deserted place. He obtained Dragon’s Blood probably because of his good luck.”

“What? A warrior from Omen Ridge? I know that place. It’s at the edge of the Eastern Region and is very barren. It didn’t even have any human civilization until recently, so it’s very poor. For decades, it was very difficult for anyone from there to get admitted to the Saint Academy.”

“It’s true that unruly people come from the badlands.”

“And he dares to curse Saint Xu Gentry like that. Wait and see, he’ll surely be beaten miserably.”

...

When all the people were discussing him, Chang Qiqi flung away another two gifted students of Saint Xu Gentry and they tumbled down the Stairway to Heaven.

As the power of the Dragon’s Blood was activated, his power greatly increased. He looked like a ferocious human-shaped brute dragon, howling with a roar like a dragon.

Standing on the 39th level, Xu Qing looked down with indifference. Then he ordered, “You can’t let him sign his name on the Jade Tablet. Break his legs and throw him down the Stairway to Heaven.”

If it was not forbidden to slay in the Saint Academy, Xu Qing had probably ordered to kill Chang Qiqi.

Was he not courting death that he dared to curse the people of Saint Xu Gentry?

After receiving Xu Qing’s order, those gifted students of Saint Xu Gentry exasperatedly rushed toward Chang Qiqi one after another.

Finally, Chang Qiqi had met his match.

Attacked by a gifted student of Saint Xu Gentry, whose cultivation was at the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm, Chang Qiqi constantly drew back and was even punched twice.



Luckily, he was not injured because of his amazing defensive power.

“Damn.”

Si Xingkong snorted and the Genuine Qi inside his entire body burst out. His arms rattled like the crashing together of metal. His skeleton expanded and pieces of Dragon Scales were generated.

A moment later, Si Xingkong’s arms were seven times thicker. They turned into two three-meter-long Golden Dragon claws with 10 sharp toes, like 10 golden blades.

He directly rushed up the Stairway to Heaven and ran toward Chang Qiqi in an instant. As he swung a claw, the gifted student of Saint Xu Gentry who was fighting with Chang Qiqi was beaten back.

Si Xingkong was initially already stronger than Chang Qiqi. As the power of Dragon’s Blood was activated, his power naturally increased.

Si Xingkong continuously struck three times. The fourth strike hit the gifted student’s chest and left a bloody trace of a dragon’s claw. He was knocked into the sky and tumbled down the Stairway.

“How amazing! As a top 10 young master of Saint Xu Gentry, Xu Zhu was defeated after just a few movements. Who is that guy?”

“Look! His arms turned into dragon claws. Has he also refined a lot of Dragon’s Blood?”

“When did Dragon’s Blood become so worthless?”

“Isn’t that guy a warrior from Omen Ridge? Is Omen Ridge so powerful?”

...

It was undeniable that Si Xingkong’s power was really amazing, and even those descendants of Half-Saint families were fearful.

In small places such as Omen Ridge, it was unlikely that a genius with such power could be cultivated.

# Chapter 384 - A Half-Saint Desires to Accept an Apprentice

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Saint Xu Gentry was an old power for over 10,000 years in the Eastern Region, it had a solid foundation. In its history, there were many Saint-level powerhouses. And in its heyday, it could command all of the Eastern Region.

Even though it was worse off now, it still existed as a colossus. There were a lot of young geniuses, whether in its lineal juniors or its adopted hangers-on and disciples.

Xu Zhu, who was just defeated by Si Xingkong, was ranked 10th among the younger generation of Saint Xu Gentry.

A loud scolding arose. “You have guts. It’s unbelievable that there are so many daredevils. If you’ve pissed off our Saint Xu Gentry, you are out of luck.”

Xu Yuanzhi, who ranked fourth among the younger geniuses of Saint Xu Gentry, jumped up from the 27th Stairway and displayed the “Wind Bird Snow Palm”.

It was a Superior Class palm technique of the Spiritual Stage. Xu Yuanzhi had practiced it to the Realm of Success.

As he threw the palm, a snowstorm began to rage.

A current of icing air swept through that seemed to freeze the entire space. Then, it became a Genuine Qi handprint and beat on Si Xingkong’s chest.

Xu Yuanzhi had reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, one realm higher than Si Xingkong. Moreover, the exercise that he practiced was the mid-class Ghost Level,

Invincible Skill

. As for the warriors of the four martial realms, it was a really powerful exercise.

If the exercises were more advanced, they would be harder to understand and practice. In case of any carelessness, a cultivator would probably be possessed by the Devil and doomed eternally.

Therefore, even as the descendants of Saint Gentry, most of them only practiced Spiritual Stage exercises in the four martial realms. Only those top-class people chose to practice the Ghost Level exercises.

Most people did not start to practice the Ghost Level exercises or King's Stage exercises until they had reached the Fish-dragon Realm.

That was to say, Xu Yuanzhi was really something since he could successfully master the

Invincible Skill

, a mid-class exercise at the Ghost Level.

Si Xingkong stood below and suddenly turned his arms to attack Xu Yuanzhi.

“Pow!”

After the strike, both of them fell back. They were well-matched in strength.

He has real skill. But I only used 30 percent of my strength.

Xu Yuanzhi's body ballooned as if there were gas in his clothes. The Genuine Qi inside constantly surged and his strength immediately increased by 20 percent. And then, he attacked Si Xingkong once again.

It was another movement of the Wind Bird Snow Palm. As a result, his palm hit Si Xingkong's right dragon claw.

“Whoosh!”

Si Xingkong was overwhelmed by the power of the Icing Cold and almost half of his body was frozen.

Xu Yuanzhi is indeed formidable. He's much stronger than the top-class people in the Half-saint families. In particular, his Wind Bird Snow Palm has reached the pinnacle of perfection.

All the gifted disciples were amazed that someone who was only a fourth genius of Saint Gentry was already so amazing. Xu Qing was the first master among the young generation of the Saint Xu family. Thus, it was easy to imagine Xu Qing's martial attainments.

“In terms of their natural gifts, Xu Yuanzhi is superior to Zi Hansha. So, he could be counted as a top-notch powerhouse,” Duanmu Xingling said.

Zhang Ruochen said, “If in the same realm, the Eldest Brother should be able to combat with Xu Yuanzhi. Unfortunately, the Eldest Brother is one realm lower than Xu Yuanzhi now, so he might take a beating.”

Duanmu Xingling asked, “Should we go to assist them now? The Eldest Brother and Senior Brother Chang can not contend against all the junior masters of Saint Xu Gentry.”

Luo Shuihan slightly frowned and said, “I think we'd better wait for a moment. If we also launch attacks, that means we declare war against Saint Xu Gentry. You can't imagine the background of a Saint Gentry. Moreover, Saint Xu Gentry has a history of 10,000 years, so it has a large fortune and a lot of offspring all around the world. Even our Saint Luo Gentry can't compare with Saint Xu Gentry.”

Saint Luo Gentry only had a history of 200 years. And although Luo Xu's power was far beyond that of the Saint of Saint Xu Gentry, in terms of comprehensive strength, they were not at the same level.

Chen Xier said, “Senior Sister Disciple Luo is right. We ought to be cautious. You need to know that each Saint Gentry has many benefit-based relationships through marriage and cooperation, so they are interconnected. Once we declare war

on Saint Xu Gentry, the other Saint Gentries will definitely get involved.”

“All the descendants of Saint Gentries are conceited. So, they won’t turn a blind eye if Saint Xu Gentry is suppressed by our Omen Ridge. That’s to say, even if we can defeat the juniors of Saint Xu Gentry, we’ll still need to battle with all Saint Gentries. When that time comes, will we be able to win?”

In every place, the group of top-level people would form a circle of interests. They could compete with each other, but they would not allow the lower people to get promoted.

And when some of the lower people attempted to show themselves, those people would definitely be jointly dealt with.

For example, Lei Jing had been pushed aside by the people of Saint Gentry during those days.

Only those people with unrivaled talent, like Luo Xu, could stand firm in the Saint Academy. Moreover, the title of Saint was conferred on him in defiance of nature when he was being suppressed by Saint Gentry.

...

The Saints’ statutes stood in the Holy Temple at the top of the Stairway to Heaven.

And beside them, the Half-saints sat cross-legged on the ground.

As Saint Academy’s examination was held once every 10 years, many Half-saints were certainly attracted to take a look. They were curious to know who would be God’s favored sons this year.

If some incredible talents appeared, they would take the opportunity to take apprentices to become like themselves.

Although all Half-saints were lecturers of the Saint Academy, most of them belonged to a gentry or suzerain, so they had different relationships of interests.

Only a few Half-saints were utterly isolated.

There was a Half-saint who had a four-meter-high bulky figure, wearing a sackcloth with a bare chest. There was a string of prayer beads hanging around his neck and he sat cross-legged like Maitreya Buddha.

His body was like a hill.

His name was Demi-saint Alan, one of the lecturers of the Saint Academy. He used to practice in the Thousand Buddhas Sect for some time.

Demi-saint Alan laughed and said, “Interesting, it’s really interesting. The two disciples of Omen Ridge must have obtained the Dragon’s Blood of a Golden Dragon. Their physical qualities have mutated. One has grown dragon scales, while the other has grown dragon claws. If they’re carefully taught and some knowledge of the Golden Dragon inside is awakened, their achievements will be limitless.”

“So? Demi-saint Alan, are you going to take them as your apprentices?” Demi-saint Lingshu asked while looking with a sideways glance.

Demi-saint Lingshu wore a red robe and carried a Holy Sword on her back. The impression she made was overbearing.

However, she was totally different from Demi-saint Alan. As she sat cross-legged on the ground, she was only the size of a fist with a three-inch-high figure.

One was four meters high, while the other was only three inches high.

“Of course.”

Demi-saint Alan said with a smile, “The Golden Dragon has a deep relationship with our Buddhism. The two guys could obtain Golden Dragon’s Blood, signifying that they are related to Buddhism naturally. Moreover, the most important thing is that they are so brave that they dare to challenge Saint Xu Gentry. So, it’s really interesting.

“However, it’s too early to talk about taking apprentices. I have to wait until they pass at least three rounds and officially become Saints. If they fail to pass three rounds, they’re unqualified to be my apprentices.”

Half-saints were extremely strict in taking apprentices.

Even if Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong had a deep relationship with Buddhism, they still needed to pass the examination. Only if they passed all the tests would Demi-saint Alan consider to accept them as apprentices.

There was a huge difference between taking apprentices and taking students.

In the Holy Temple, an indifferent voice emanated.

“Unexpectedly, the two guys dare to insult our Saint Xu Gentry. I’m afraid that their cultivation will be destroyed in the first round. Demi-saint Alan, I fear that you won’t have the chance to take them as your apprentices.”

The speaker was a Half-saint of Saint Xu Gentry named Demi-saint Sandao.

Demi-saint Lingshu, the three-inch-high red-robed woman said with a smile, “Demi-saint Sandao, I heard that 50 years ago, Lei Jing offended your Saint Xu Gentry and was expelled from the Saint Academy. Originally, Lei Jing swore that he would go back to the Saint Academy with a brilliant prodigy to wipe out the descendants of all the Saint Gentries.

“Now, Lei Jing leads the gifted students of Omen Ridge to the Saint Academy. What’s your opinion on that?”

Demi-saint Sandao snorted and said, “Lei Jing? He’s just an unscrupulous junior. 50 years ago, I didn’t take him seriously. And in the future, I still won’t.

“As for the two geniuses of Omen Ridge, even if they have obtained the Golden Dragon’s Blood, they can be considered first-class geniuses at most. They still can’t compete with the top-level prodigies. The gifted students among the juniors of our Saint Xu Gentry will easily suppress them.”

Demi-saint Lingshu said, “I’ve heard that several prodigies were born in Omen Ridge. Moreover, the female prodigy of Saint Luo Gentry has practiced the Saintly Being. In the entire Eastern Region, how many young students can withstand that?”



“And worse still, I’ve heard that Lei Jing took an apprentice who has the inheritance of Buddhist Emperor. But, I don’t know if that’s true,” Demi-saint Alan said.

Although the news that Zhang Ruochen had defeated Di Yi had not been spread, many big shots of the School of the Martial Market had still gotten wind of that event.

For this reason, so many Half-Saint’s came here today. They wanted to see if Lei Jing had really accepted a great apprentice.

Incredibly, Lei Jing, a notorious rebellious student, had dared to challenge Saint Gentry.

Even the Half-saints had also heard his name.

Demi-saint Sandao remained calm. “The female prodigy of Luo’s family is indeed a Saintly Being. However, she represents Saint Gentry, rather than Omen Ridge. As for Lei Jing’s apprentice, who knows if he is as powerful as Lei Jing boasted?

“Moreover, this year’s students are more advanced in their overall strength than last year’s. Empress Chi Yao has managed everything for 500 years. Farmers are blessed with propitious winds and rains. Martial Arts is prosperous and Saints come forth in large numbers. Young Geniuses are also more and more plentiful. Even if one more genius appears in Omen Ridge, it would be normal. But unfortunately, no matter how powerful he is, Lei Jing’s disciple is doomed to be suppressed by Xu Qing, a gifted disciple of our Saint Xu Gentry.”

Demi-saint Sandao mentioned Empress Chi Yao, so who dared to argue further with him?

If anyone were to argue further, it would be regarded as being impolite to Empress Chi Yao.

All the Half-saints remained silent and split their Divine Souls. They continued to look toward the Stairway to Heaven and waited to see what would develop next.

# Chapter 385 - The Battle Escalates

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The fight between Xu Yuanzhi and Si Xingkong grew extremely fierce. No one thought that a student of Omen Ridge could struggle against the fourth-ranked master among the Saint Xu Gentry juniors for so long.

“The Omen Ridge student seems to have only reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm,” an outstanding individual from the East Region Saint Mansions observed. “He is withstanding Xu Yuanzhi with physical qualities, rather than profound cultivation.”

Thanks to reaching the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, this person had gained insight into Si Xingkong’s own realm.

“If memory serves me, Xu Yuanzhi has reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. Is the Omen Ridge student superior to Xu Yuanzhi in terms of physical quality?”

The outstanding individual from the East Region Saint Mansions shook his head. “Not necessarily,” he said. “Xu Yuanzhi hasn’t yet used his full strength during this duel. However, the student of Omen Ridge has been pushed to the limit; he’ll be defeated any moment now.”

On the Stairway to Heaven, the the gifted students of the Saint Xu Gentry assaulted Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi more fiercely.

Seven or eight gifted students launched their attacks at the same time, besieging Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi. The students strongly pressured the two with all kinds of martial

techniques, including Celestial Bodysield Genuine Qi and the Light of Thunderbolt.

Even after they had refined Dragon Blood and attained ample strength, their opponents were still not weak; they were students of the Saint Gentry, after all.

“Xu Yuanzhi; if you can’t defeat him, I’ll disable him for you,” A dark-hued female student of the Saint Xu Gentry said coldly.

Her name was Xu Su. She had strong power thanks to reaching the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. She ranked fifth among the juniors of Saint Xu Gentry, a little bit lower than Xu Yuanzhi.

Xu Yuanzhi laughed grimly. “He’s just a hillbilly from a backwater. Who says I can’t defeat him? I was just using him to practice my palm techniques. If I display my full strength, I’ll disable him with just three moves.”

This was why Xu Yuanzhi fought with Si Xingkong for so long; he wanted to display his strength before all the people present.

He rarely got the chance to fight on the Stairway to Heaven. Only in the Saint Academy examination could he have such an opportunity to stand in the limelight.

Perhaps even those at the Half-Saint level would become invested in this battle.

“Such nonsense. Who said prodigies can’t be born in a backwater like Omen Ridge?”

Duanmu Xingling rushed up the Stairway to Heaven. She mobilized the Genuine Qi and released the golden Dragon force within. Two small dragon horns grew on each side of her forehead.

“PHHT!”

Golden lightning arced between the two horns, pouring forth and surging through her entire body. Lightning gathered in her palm.

BAM!

BAM!

She threw her palms outwards. Two students of the Saint Xu Gentry were blasted back down the Stairway, spitting blood from their mouths.

Duanmu Xingling shook out her arms, and condensed the golden lightning into a long lightning sword. She swung her sword toward the void space, piercing through the Celestial Bodyshields of three gifted students at the same time.

“Cloud-Churning and Rain-Making.”

“Vigorous Qi of Nine Serenities.”

“Overbearing Fist Strength.”

Three students immediately unleashed their martial techniques. Some threw palms and some swung fists. None of them, though, could withstand Duanmu Xingling’s Sword Breath. They tumbled down the Stairway like gourds bouncing on the ground.

Because her Sword Breath contained ice power, these three students were coated in a layer of white ice crystals.

Warriors weren’t allowed to carry weapons on the the Stairway to Heaven. However, if one reached the Peak of Sword Following the Heart, they could use Celestial Bodyshield Genuine Qi to condense a sword.

Duanmu Xingling condensed an enormously powerful Genuine Qi sword, containing both the lightning of Thunder Dragon and the force of Icing Cold. No ordinary student could withstand such congealed power.

“Has another Omen Ridge powerhouse appeared?”

“Omen Ridge is just a barren wilderness. How can it give birth to so many powerhouses?”

...

Duanmu Xingling’s performance shocked the audience; many couldn’t believe their eyes.

At the same time, Duanmu Xingling’s recent comments had displeased and offended nearly all the attending Sage Gentries

and descendants of Half-Saint families.

A descendant of one Half-Saint family snorted. “How dare these Omen Ridge students act so haughtily while displaying their slight skills before us?” he said.

“I hope that the Saint Xu Gentry is strong enough to crack down on these inexperienced, greenhorn hillbillies,” Another Half-Saint family descendant said coldly as they flexed some of their finger joints. “I don’t feel inclined to intervene myself.”

Zhang Ruochen had long known that Duanmu Xingling loved throwing the world into chaos and had a knack for stirring up trouble. This time, though, she had surpassed all expectations and dared to involve all the Half-saint families and Saint Gentries.

How will this all end?

Everything had gone out of control. The gifted students of Saint Xu Gentry were very angry. Additionally, those Saint Gentries and descendants of Half-Saint families were also eager for a fight to chastise the students of Omen Ridge.

“Have you discovered whether Duanmu Xingling’s power is much stronger than Eldest Brother’s? Chen Xi’er asked. “Does she hide her actual strength most days? Is she displaying her truth strength today?”

Duanmu Xingling’s power was so strong that five geniuses of the Saint Xu Gentry had been defeated in an instant.

Zhang Ruochen long suspected that Duanmu Xingling had an extraordinary identity she concealed by hiding her cultivation. “Perhaps,” he said furtively, “she hasn’t displayed her actual strength. What is she trying to do?”

Zhang Ruochen had always assumed that Duanmu Xingling was more than a brainless woman with shapely breasts. Her provocation of the Saint Gentries and Half-Saint families was too effective to be anything but deliberate.

As the Saint Maiden of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, Duanmu Xingling definitely wasn’t entering the Saint Academy to become a common Saint.

Instead, she wanted to become a disciple to a Half-Saint or even a fully minted Saint.

This was the only way she could become a high-level member of the School of the Martial Market and Martial Market Bank.

Originally, she had chosen to deceive the public by practicing at the Martial Market School of Omen Ridge, lest the School of the Martial Market discover her real identity.

Who would have thought that the Saintess of Moon Worship Demonic Sect had been training in Omen Ridge for so many years?

If she had originally entered the School of the Martial Market of East Region Saint City, the huge Intelligence System in the Martial Market Bank headquarters would have discovered her true identity early on.

After practicing for a long period of time, the School of the Martial Market would grow less suspicious of her, making it more difficult for people to discover her real identity.

Today, however, was different.

Today, she needed to show she had a sufficiently high aptitude in order to be noticed by the high-level figures.

The bigger the sensation, the more high-level figures of the Saint Academy would pay attention.

Therefore, upon taking action, she immediately declared war on all the Half-saint families and Saint Gentries.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, Luo Shuihan and Duanmu Xingling's other team members were roped into this mess due to her behavior. The Half-saint families and Saint Gentries found them all equally offensive.

As the Saintess of a demonic sect, she had no other recourse.

The shame and unease she had felt over her plan had caused her worried look earlier that morning. Despite that, she said nothing when Zhang Ruochen asked whether something was on her mind.

“Such boldness! I would witness your abilities myself to understand why you dare set yourself against our Saint Xu Gentry!”

Xu Su, fifth-ranked among the young powerhouses of Saint Xu Gentry, glared down at Duanmu Xingling from her place on the 37th step. She immediately swooped straight down and simultaneously threw out her palms.

Two wisps of Genuine Qi burst from her palms and turned into a pair of phantasmal pythons. They bared their fangs to bite down Duanmu Xingling.

Duanmu Xingling, reluctant to show any weakness, brandished her combat sword of Genuine Qi and displayed a sword technique.

“Broken Moon.”

Duanmu Xingling raised her arms and channeled Genuine Qi into sword. With a sudden stroke, she chopped the two pythons into pieces.

Xu Su’s handprints suddenly became formless and powerless.

In the blink of an eye, Duanmu Xingling darted in and stabbed at Xu Su’s left rib.

Xu Su displayed profound martial arts of her own. She turned into a residual shadow and moved at an angle to avoid Duanmu Xingling’s sword stroke.

The two people engaged each other in a dog fight. Duanmu Xingling subtly gained the upper hand, suppressing Xu Su and forcing her to constantly retreat.

In the other direction, the battle between Xu Yuanzhi and Si Xingkong flared incandescent.

Rather than concealing his cultivation, Xu Yuanzhi abruptly launched a series of attacks, displayed three increasingly fiercer palm techniques that hit Si Xingkong like three overlapping ocean waves.

**BAM!**

The palm's power broke Si Xingkong's Celestial Bodysield. Struck in the chest, he was forced nine steps back.

Thanks to the protection of Dragon's Blood, he suffered a minor injury, but nothing major.

Huang Yanchen, who had already climbed to the 47th Step, had a perfect vantage point to see the chaos below. More than ten gifted students of Saint Xu Gentry were besieging Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi.

With a solemn look on her face, she turned back to jump down. "You're disgracing the name of the Saint Xu Gentry by bullying others with your superior numbers. As a student of Omen Ridge, today I want to personally witness the difference in power between my school and the Saint Xu Gentry."

Huang Yanchen waved her arms and conjured a wind-blade more than seven meters long. She slashed at the gifted students of the Saint Xu Gentry.

After Huang Yanchen's participation, the fight between Saint Xu Gentry and Omen Ridge intensified once again. The current situation was out of control.

Zhang Ruochen forced a smile onto his face and glanced at Luo Shuihan. "I suppose this fight was inevitable this day," he said.

Luo Shuihan, feeling helpless, sighed gently.

Neither Zhang Ruochen nor Luo Shuihan hoped this battle would go so far. After all, the Saint Gentry were influential and powerful, and their fame was widespread. At the moment, they could not predict the outcome of this battle. Supposing they won today, all the attendees would think that the Saint Xu Gentry was unworthy of their name. How would the Saint Xu Gentry be able to endure after that?

With their current strength, offending the Saint Gentry so severely was a useless endeavor.

And yet, as they watched the how the conflict escalated, they found they could not bear to watch Si Xingkong, Duanmu Xingling, and others fight the whole Saint Xu Gentry. They had to join the fight.



# Chapter 386 - The Buddha Emperor's Descendant

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Luo Shuihan took a step forward and channeled power into his legs. He leapt, soared, and fell onto the Stairway to Heaven.

“Boom...”

Glowing blue Genuine Qi burst forth as he landed and rushed in all directions.

Both sides were separated from each other by this strong power.

“Everybody stop!” Luo Shuihan exclaimed.

The gifted students of the Saint Xu Gentry, frightened by Luo Shuihan's strength, stopped attacking.

Xu Yuanzhi recognized Luo Shuihan and knew she was the Saintly Being of the Saint Luo Gentry. “Miss Luo,” he said, daring not to offend her, “please don't interfere in this matter. Our Saint Xu Gentry must teach these unscrupulous hillbillies a lesson.”

“Who are you calling hillbillies?”

Chang Qiqi's face turned red. He clenched his fists and prepared to throw himself into a desperate fight with Xu Yuanzhi.

“Warriors from the distant and savage Omen Ridge lack experience and knowledge,” Xu Yuanzhi said with an apathetic laugh. “They are as complacent as frogs in a well. What else can you call them but hillbillies?”

Upon hearing this, Luo Shuihan frowned slightly.

Chang Qiqi had launched the first attack that started this all. Since Omen Ridge was to blame for the conflict. Luo Shuihan sought to help resolve this conflict.

After all, there was no good reason for Chang Qiqi to offend the Saint Gentry, considering his cultivation and background.

As she listened to Xu Yuanzhi's words, Luo Shuihan understood that the most fundamental point of conflict between the two sides was over who launched the first attack, but the conflict between the Saint and humble families. Their quarrel could not be resolved so easily.

"I'm also from the School of the Martial Market of Omen Ridge," Luo Shuihan said. "Do you think that I'm such a narrow-minded person?"

"Miss Luo is also a student of Omen Ridge?" Xu Yuanzhi said, slightly shocked.

Although he had heard of a Saintly Being that came from Saint Luo Gentry, he did not know this Saintly Being had previously trained in the Martial Market School of Omen Ridge.

"Today is the date of the Saint Academy's examination," Luo Shuihan said. "It is pointless to escalate our conflicts; why can't you turn your hostility into friendship?"

The gifted students of Saint Xu Gentry hesitated for a while, Xu Yuanzhi and Xu Su among them. After all, Luo Shuihan was a Saintly Being. Even if they joined forces, they could not defeat her.

It would be best for them to resolve this conflict.

However, one of them was unwilling.

Xu Qing, one of the top young masters of the Saint Xu Gentry, strolled down from above and stood on the 39th level Stairway. "No wonder students of Omen Ridge are so arrogant," he said indifferently. "There's a Saintly Being behind them. Miss Luo, you've also heard the words they spoke moments before, words that brought great shame to our

Saint Xu Gentry. If they aren't destroyed today, how will our Saint Xu Gentry bear this humiliation?"

"Why do you have to be so heartless and cruel?" Luo Shuihan asked. "Is there no other solution?"

Xu Qing folded his hands behind his back. "Of course," he said with a smile. "Our Saint Xu Gentry has a long history spanning 10,000 years. There's no need for us to exterminate them. As long as Zhang Ruochen comes out and kneels before all the students of our Saint Xu Gentry in apology, I'll forgive these three people and pursue the matter no farther."

Xu Qing had fallen in love with Huang Yanchen at first sight. He had secretly inquired about Huang Yanchen and knew that she had trained at the Martial Market School of Omen Ridge.

What's more, Huang Yanchen had a fiance named Zhang Ruochen, also a student of the Martial Market School of Omen Ridge.

He put forward this condition because he wanted Zhang Ruochen become a laughing stock before all students of Eastern Region. Subsequently, Zhang Ruochen would lack the face needed to marry Huang Yanchen.

Xu Qing looked Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi up and down; which one of them, he wondered, was Zhang Ruochen?

In the end, Xu Qing fixed his eyes on Si Xingkong. Whether in temperament or cultivation, Si Xingkong greatly surpassed Chang Qiqi.

Perhaps he was Zhang Ruochen.

Huang Yanchen snorted. "Why should Zhang Ruochen be the one to kneel down and apologize?" she asked. "Don't you know that Zhang Ruochen is my fiance? How much are you willing to sacrifice to gain his apology?"

The look on Xu Qing's face changed. "As long as he kneels down," he said, "I will be satisfied."

While they were arguing, Zhang Ruochen had already walked up the Stairway to Heaven and stepped up next to Huang

Yanchen. “What If I refuse to kneel down and apologize?” he said, looking at Xu Qing.

“You! You’re Zhang Ruochen? You’re a little different than what I imagined.”

Xu Qing shifted his eyes and stared at Zhang Ruochen, not bothering to conceal his enmity at all.

“How do you know my name, I wonder?” Zhang Ruochen said.

“It’s said that you’ve obtained the Dragon Sarira and become the Buddha Emperor’s descendant,” Xu Qing said. “Is that true or false?”

The Saint Xu Gentry had established itself over a long history of 10,000 years. If there was any signs of trouble in any part of the Eastern Region, the Saint Xu Gentry would be immediately informed.

As the top figure among the young generation of Saint Xu Gentry, Xu Qing had naturally heard of Zhang Ruochen.

“True? False? Who can say?” Zhang Ruochen responded in a calm voice.

“Haha! Since you won’t tell me, I’ll learn the answer myself. I’d like to see how strong of a Buddha Emperor’s descendant you are.”

From head to toe, Xu Qing’s muscles and bones crackled and snapped. Every inch of his flesh and blood turned silver, making him look like an iron man. In a flash, he rushed up to Zhang Ruochen and threw a punch.

Xu Qing practiced the

Hinayana Vajra Martial Code

, which was a Superior Class Ghost Level Exerciss. Moreover, he had activated his Sacred Mark. As long as he channeled Genuine Qi with all his strength, his body would turn into silver and iron alloy. Meanwhile, he would grow strong enough to tear apart brute elephants with his bare hands.

“Swoosh!”

Zhang Ruochen stepped sideways and dodged Xu Qing's punch.

"Thousand-hand King-Kong."

Xu Qing's martial accomplishments had reached the apex of perfection. When Zhang Ruochen moved sideways, Xu Qing abruptly turned his body and threw another punch towards Zhang Ruochen's chest.

Suddenly, Xu Qing resembled a thousand-arm and thousand-handed God of War. Though he threw a single punch, there seemed to be countless fists coming from all directions.

"Nine-folds of the Elephant Power."

Zhang Ruochen threw out 9 handprint strikes in a row, clashing with Xu Qing's strikes using a ninefold palm power.

With a bang, they were both blasted back at the same time.

All Zhang Ruochen felt was an ache running through his arm. Blood trickled from his palm. His arms had nearly dislocated.

"He is a worthy descendant of the Saint Gentry. Even if Xu Qing doesn't qualify as a Saintly Being, he isn't that far off from their level by my estimation."

Zhang Ruochen immediately channeled Blue Genuine Qi through his body. The pain in his arm instantly vanished, while the beads of blood on his palm were refined into blood fog and absorbed back into his body.

The opponent had reached the peak of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm, two realms higher than Zhang Ruochen. The victory Zhang Ruochen desired would not be easy.

Zhang Ruochen may have been surprised, Xu Qing was even more shocked. Zhang Ruochen had withstood a punch he threw with all his strength. In turn, the force of Zhang Ruochen's palm power had rendered Xu Qing's arms numb.

After all, the exercises practiced by Xu Qing were powerful from the start. Due to its amazing defensive power, he always held all the trump cards in hand-to-hand combat.

He had heard that Zhang Ruochen excelled in sword technique rather than palm technique. They said that Zhang Ruochen had mastered Heart Integrated into Sword, but he was not certain how authentic this information was.

On the Stairway to Heaven, warriors were not allowed to carry any weapons. So, Zhang Ruochen could not use his sword techniques.

With this advantage, he should have been able to take Zhang Ruochen down easily.

Although his punch was not effective, Xu Qing ascertained Zhang Ruochen's actual condition.

“You just used the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm of the Thousand Buddhas Sect. You really obtained Dragon Sarira and became the Buddha Emperor's descendant. No wonder you became so powerful at such a young age,” Xu Qing said.

“Because I used Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, that makes me the Buddha Emperor's descendant? If I used martial techniques from the Taiji Doctrine, would that make me the Taoist Emperor's descendant?”

Everything about Zhang Ruochen became clear to Xu Qing. Xu Qing felt the urge to tell everybody present that Zhang Ruochen had obtained Dragon Sarira, a peerless treasure.

Just imagine: who would not want to get such a treasure like the Dragon Sarira?

Forget the young students; even the Half-Saints' desires would be aroused.

Xu Qing attacked Zhang Ruochen again, this time with the “King Kong Exorcism”. Flames burned all around his body like a cloud of blazing fire. He swooped down and swung with his fists at the same time.

Zhang Ruochen did not dodge this time, but instead struck with a lightning-quick little finger.

“Lesser Marsh Tranquility Meridian Sword Wave.”

In an instant, Spiritual Qi seem to flow forth from the surrounding substances of Heaven and Earth. All the Qi

condensed around Zhang Ruochen's fingertip, turning into a powerful, sharp and overbearing sword wave.

The sword wave expanded like a shining comet scorching a trailer across the sky and slammed into Xu Qing's body with a loud 'wham'.

Xu Qing crossed his hands to protect his chest.

BAM!

Under the impact of the sword wave, Xu Qing sparkled with light and flew backward about 33 meters.

"Ten Meridian Sword Wave."

"You...really practiced martial techniques from the Taiji Doctrine."

Xu Qing was astonished. No one, not even disciples of the Taiji Doctrine, could practice Ten Meridian Sword Wave so easily.

Though the Ten Meridian Sword Wave was only a Spiritual-stage Superior-class martial technique, the person who successfully mastered it would possess power equivalent to the Ghost-level Inferior-class martial technique.

Judging by the power just displayed by Zhang Ruochen, he had evidently succeeded at mastering this technique.

"Xu Qing has finally met his match. I never expected Omen Ridge to give birth to such an outstanding talent."

In the eyes of the public, Luo Shuihan, a person who achieved the status of Saintly Being, was more powerful.

After all, Luo Shuihan was favored by the Saint Luo Gentry. Despite training at the Omen Ridge since childhood, Saint Luo Gentry had also provided her some resources for practice.

Therefore, no one was surprised by Luo Shuihan's powerful strength.

What was really surprising was how a person like Zhang Ruochen, who was not from Saint Gentry, had accomplished so much in the present day.

"Is it true that he really obtained the Dragon Sarira?"

A descendant of Saint Gentry spoke up: “I heard from a senior that the Dragon Sarira came into the world a few days ago. They say that it was obtained by a young man named Zhang Ruochen. However, Omen Ridge is a remote area I have scant information on; I’m not sure whether this incident is rumor or a real event.”

“If it’s real, it must be quite amazing. Back in the day, the Buddhist Emperor was one of the most powerful figure in the whole Kunlun’s Field. If one obtained his Sarira, he would have a skyrocketing rise.”

“Zhang Ruochen is less than 20 years old. Without the Sarira, I refuse to believe he could train himself up to this realm.”

...

Upon hearing the public discussion, Xue Yingrou was a little stupefied. In that instant, she knew that Zhang Ruochen’s true identity was none other than the “Buddha Emperor’s descendant”.

Assuming he wasn’t killed as a novice, it would be child’s play for Zhang Ruochen attain this holy title.



# Chapter 387

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Sun Meridian Ripple!”

“Tranquility Pulse Sword Wave.”

“Medium Pulse Breaking Sword Wave.”

Zhang Ruochen struck out three fingers at the same time, gathering three strokes of power. His left thumb, index finger and middle finger felt like they were on fire. With a blast, three Sword Waves struck out simultaneously.

Burning like the scorching sun and smelter, three strokes of giant scorching Sword Breath attacked toward Xu Qing.

“Phht!”

Xu Qing stood firmly and immediately channeling the technique of “Hinayana Vajra Martial Code”. The Genuine Qi in his body was released. He drew a circle in the air with his finger. Silver liquid metal drops immediately appeared in front of him.

The liquid metal drops concentrated together, forming three silver metal combat swords, which were deadly sharp and resembled the combat sword of Genuine Martial Arms.

Only warriors who had a physical quality of Metal nature and achieved a higher realm in martial arts could condense a metal weapon with his own Genuine Qi. At the same time, the warrior could also swallow metal directly and digest it with his stomach, and the metal would integrate into his body.

Xu Qing had such physical quality. Under the strengthening of Hinayana Vajra Martial Code, he had reached the realm of Forming Soldiers with Qi and Fusing Soldiers with Qi.

While Xu Qing was turning his fingers, three combat swords kept turning as well, emitting fierce and forceful Sword Breath. It flew towards three Sword Waves.

“Bam!”

“Bam!”

“Bam!”

There were three loud bangs.

The three metal combat swords condensed by Xu Qing collided with three Sword Waves. They decomposed immediately and turned into streaks of Genuine Qi fog, disappearing into the sky.

“So what if you are the Buddha Emperor’s descendant. I also have the inheritance of Feather Saint; and I may not lose to you.”

“Fiery Wings.”

Xu Qing lowered his arms and bent his back forward. Two humps grew near his spine, becoming bigger and bigger.

With a swooshing sound, they broke out, turning into two flaming wings.

After spreading out, the wingspan was at least nine meters wide.

Xu Qing flew up and hovered nine meters above ground.

Every piece of his feather was as sharp as the blade of a knife. Under Xu Qing’s control, the flaming wings flapped quickly, and the feathers turned into flying flame knives.

“Whir!”

Tens of thousands of flying knives dashed down like a pouring rain.

“I heard long ago that Xu Qing had entered the Holy Land of Saint Xu Gentry, Sacred Valley, to practice and seek for the inheritance of the ancestors. I didn’t expect that he actually got the inheritance of the Feather Saint.”

“In the history of Saint Xu Gentry, there were 47 saints. Feather Saint was one of the most powerful Saints. Xu Qing actually got his inheritance, no wonder he looked down upon the Saintly Beings.”

“Xu Qing can really compete with a Saintly Being if both of them are in the same realm.”

...

Xu Qing triggered the Fiery Wings, and he got a burst in momentum. The entire Stairway to Heaven seemed to be centralized on him. He was like magical flaming pheonix of the legends, flapping its wings in front of the sun, instantly overwhelming all those students who were ready to ascend the Stairway.

While everyone thought that Zhang Ruochen would definitely lose, he condensed combat swords with Blue Genuine Qi. Tens of thousands of sword shadows flew around him.

Knife light and sword shadow clashed together, letting out cracking sounds.

Two forces clashed against each other continually. The distance between Zhang Ruochen and Xu Qing was getting closer and closer. Finally, when they were only five steps apart, both of them used their unique techniques.

Xu Qing swooped down. The wings on his back were like two giant knives as they slashed toward Zhang Ruochen.

Before he could fully swing his wings, a heat wave dashed down first.

Zhang Ruochen stayed cool and pulled a piece of hair from his head. He chopped over with it and broke open Xu Qing's Celestial Bodyshield. With a ripping sound, it chopped off a big chunk of flesh from Xu Qing's left flaming wing.

Xu Qing's wings were activated by his own Spiritual Blood, which belonged to his body.

A piece of muscle was chopped off the wing, and he felt severe pain. He groaned and kept walking backward. His face turned pale.

His wing was chopped off, which meant that his array was broken.

The genius students down below were all surprised, they couldn't believe what just happened.

“How is it possible that Zhang Ruochen only used one piece of hair to break Xu Qing's Fiery Wings?”

“Fiery Wings are as hard as gold and iron. They have the protection of Feather Saint's breath and the support of Xu Qing's power. Even a common Genuine Martial Arts can't hurt them at all.”

An outstanding talent from East Region Saint Mansions smirked, “Why can't it be possible? Although Zhang Ruochen looked like he is just holding a piece of hair, he actually applied the power of Sword Comprehension, which was in the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. As long as he reaches that realm, a piece of hair is sharper than a real sword. The power of Sword Comprehension is like the power of Holy Road, which is terrifying.”

“Heart Integrated into Sword? The legend says that only Half-Saint can reach that realm. How can a young student do that?”

In the mind of warriors who practiced sword in the world, the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword was like the realm of half saint to others. It was as unreachable as summits and as deep as the oceans. People could only look from afar in marvel.

The outstanding talent from the East Region Saint Mansions said, “That's not necessarily the case. As long as your talent, comprehension ability, and Spiritual Power are high enough, even if you don't reach Half-Saint realm, it is possible to reach Heart Integrated into Sword. It is said that many saints in the Saint Academy are in the Fish-dragon Realm and have reached the Heart Integrated into Sword. There are very few saints from the Heaven Realm who practiced the Heart Integrated into Sword.”

“I have heard long ago that Zhang Ruochen has reached the Heart Integrated into Sword. Originally, I didn't believe it.

However today is an attest to that, he actually reached the realm. Now even I feel like going a few rounds against him.”

The talent from East Region Saint Mansions was called Chen Yi. He was tall and handsome. His eyes were full of infinite charm. A slight smile would fascinate the female students around him, turning them into his pets.

There were countless masters among the younger generation in the East Region Saint Mansions. There were everywhere in the world. Some were studying in School of the Martial Market; many others joined the Taiji Doctrine, Thousand Buddhas Sect, Confucianism and Taoism. Among those who joined the School of the Martial Market, there were three out-of-the-world pinnacle masters.

Chen Yi was one of them. The other two were called Chen Tianshu and Chen Jiu'er.

Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier could be also considered as men from East Region Saint Mansions. After getting Dragon's Blood, their physical quality had greatly improved. However, compared with those three people, they were still somewhat inferior.

The power of Heart Integrated into Sword applied by Zhang Ruochen not only startled the young students, but the Half-Saints in the Holy Temple were also surprised.

Demi-saint Lingshu, who was only three inches tall in her red clothes suddenly stood up and said, “Impressive. He can reach Heart Integrated into Sword in the Heaven Realm, I want to take him as my disciple.”

Demi-saint Alan laughed loudly and said, “I see that he is naturally related to Buddhism. His Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm have already been practiced into a certain level. He should be my disciple.”

“It's only the first round of the exam and you both are already fighting for a disciple? It's still unknown that whether Zhang Ruochen can pass the three round of the exam,” Demi-saint Sandao said it in a strange manner.

Demi-saint Lingshu showed cold eyes. She said, “As long as your Saint Xu Gentry doesn’t get in the way, with his talent of practicing the Heart Integrated into Sword, it’s a piece of cake for him to pass the third round of the exam.”

“Hehe! All I’m saying is that he hasn’t passed the first round of the exam yet. As for the hardest third round of the exam, it is full of uncertainty. In the history of Saint Academy, some warriors who were also Saintly Being couldn’t pass the exam because of bad luck,” Demi-saint Sandao smiled.

Demi-saint Lingshu thought very highly of Zhang Ruochen. She believed that he would have a very bright future. So she challenged Demi-saint Sandao and said coldly, “We shall see about that.”

...

When Zhang Ruochen was fighting with Red Wish Emissary, he had exposed his realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. So he will not try to hide it again. He got to strike back when the moment was right.

Although countered, Xu Qing’s Qi did not suffer any major blow. He took retracted his Fiery Wings and immediately recovered.

Xu Qing hummed coldly, “So this is the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. The only disadvantage I’m having now is the inability to use any weapon in this Stairway to Heaven. Otherwise, my giant dragon knife will be enough to hold back your sword.”

Zhang Ruochen used two fingers, holding a piece of hair. He said, “Do you wish to continue?”

“Why not? No matter how powerful you are, how can two fists match with four arms?”

Xu Qing passed a message with his eyes, and the talented students of Saint Xu Gentry all gathered around him. They stood on the 29th Stairway, forming a human wall. They stopped Zhang Ruochen and others from ascending the 30th Stairway.

Even those students who were beaten and fall from the Stairway to Heaven climbed up again. There were more than 30 of them. Everyone was a top master.

Except for Xu Qing, two more person's cultivation was also in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. Their strength was just slightly weaker than Xu Qing's. They were also heavily favored and exclusively cultivated by Saint Xu Gentry.

There were also Xu Yuanzhi and Xu Su who ranked the fourth and fifth respectively. They were also masters who reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. They had practiced Martial Soul and could regulate Spiritual Qi in heaven and on earth. They had the strength to compete with the warrior in the Completion of Heaven Realm.

Having a history of 10,000 years, Saint Xu Gentry indeed had many masters. Any talented master would be a dominator if they went to the Omen Ridge.

“It seems that Saint Xu Gentry decides to suppress the students of the Omen Ridge and won't let any of them pass the first round of the exam.”

“Zhang Ruochen is indeed very powerful. It's a pity that Saint Xu Gentry has many masters. Is it even possible that he can overcome such overwhelming odds?”

“That's not necessarily the case. The Saintly Being from the Luo family is on the side of the Omen Ridge. If she cooperates with Zhang Ruochen, it would be almost impossible for Saint Xu Gentry to hold them back.”

...

When the students were talking, Luo Shuihan stood up as expected.

Golden light shone from her eyes. A stroke of sacred power gushed out of her body and drew the talented students of Saint Xu Gentry into the golden light.

Under the suppression of the Saintly Being, only a few of talented students of Saint Xu Gentry could stay calm. The rest of them shuddered and sweated. They felt like mountains were crashing down on their bodies.

That was the force that only possessed by the Saintly Being. It was enough to suppress the defending warriors.

Luo Shuihan said, “Xu Qing, if I strike, can your Saint Xu Gentry hold me back?”

Xu Qing hesitated. He could tell from the power and aura that was just emitted from Luo Shuihan that her cultivation had reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Although he had the advantage in the realm, his opponent was after all, still a Saintly Being. After his Fiery Wings were chopped off, he was not confident that he could deal with Luo Shuihan.

There were only a few Saintly Beings in the entire Eastern Region.

While he was hesitating, Demi-saint Sandao’s voice passed into his ears, “We have to kill Zhang Ruochen at any cost. I have already alarmed the other three inheritors of powerful saint families. They will help you.”

...

....



# Chapter 388 - Bu Qianfan

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Hearing the sound from Demi-saint Sandao, Xu Qing suddenly felt relieved. He became more confident and laughed, “Since Miss Luo wants to get involved in this, why don’t we join you? I’m also curious about how powerful a Saintly Being is.”

Under the hint of Xu Qing, the masters of Saint Xu Gentry who ranked second and third charged at the same time. They simultaneously attacked toward Luo Shuihan from two sides.

Both of them were in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. They both had great talent and their strength were just slightly weaker than Xu Qing’s.

Luo Shuihan struck out both hands at the same time, which clashed together with the other two masters with a bang. A circle of Genuine Qi ripple emitted from the palms of the three people and flooded in every direction.

Under the impact, even Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong were forcefully pushed backward.

The three people immediately stepped back after the exchange.

“Bang Bang!”

A moment later, two masters from Saint Xu Gentry fiercely attacked again from two directions. One had the physical quality of ice nature and the other had the physical quality of fire nature.

Under the fierce attack, Luo Shuihan didn’t break a single sweat. She applied the bodily movement and countered the attack. She nullified the attack of the two masters.

“Break!”

Luo Shuihan stretched out her arm. She clenched her fingers and made a fist, striking out the fist into the void space.

The fist contained indescribable mysterious norms. It seemed to be accorded with the law of heaven and earth, giving people a most mysterious feeling.

Luo Shuihan had comprehended the great truth by perceiving this fist and practiced into a Saintly Being.

Once the fist struck out, space itself it seemed to shake. The person who attacked her from the left side suddenly got injured. Trace of blood spilled from the corner of his mouth, and he retreated.

The other one who attacked Luo Shuihan was beaten away by Luo Shuihan's left hand.

The two top masters of Saint Xu Gentry were defeated by a Saintly Being of the Luos. They could not withstand him at all.

On the other side, Zhang Ruochen kept on pressing the attack against Xu Qing, who was forced to move backward. Signs of danger appeared everywhere. Xu Qing seemed like he would be defeated anytime.

Si Xingkong, Huang Yanchen, Duanmu Xingling, Chang Qiqi and Chen Xier struck out one after another. They obliterated the talented students of Saint Xu Gentry. A dozen of them had already fallen from the Stairway to Heaven.

“My god! They are all the elites of powerful saint family, and now they are actually suppressed by a few students of the Omen Ridge.”

“Saint Xu Gentry was too unlucky to encounter such powerhouses.”

...

“He is so powerful ... and he has already reached the realm the Heart Integrated into Sword ... ”

Xue Yingrou stared at Zhang Ruochen who was fighting with Xu Qing. She had mixed feelings. If she knew long ago that Zhang Ruochen had such an amazing talent, even if he was not

an inheritor of a powerful Saint family, she should have followed him.

There were very few such figures among the younger generation of Kunlun's Field. If he made it into the Saint Academy, he would definitely be the focus of the whole academy.

At this moment, a wild-looking man with a bristly unshaven chin walked out among the students. He squinted his eyes and stared at Zhang Ruochen who was standing on the Stairway to Heaven. He said coldly, "Zhang Ruochen? Is he the one who defeated Di Yi?"

A student who was standing by the side asked, "Who is Di Yi? Is he powerful?"

The wild man showed sharp and cold expression in his eyes. He replied with two words as though he spoke through his clenched teeth, "Di Yi."

Popping sounds came from his ten fingers. He firmly walked towards the Stairway to Heaven. He said, "After I defeat Zhang Ruochen, I will definitely have a fight with Di Yi."

"Who is this man? How can he be so arrogant?"

Many people heard the wild man's words. They sneered. He wanted to defeat Zhang Ruochen. Who did he think he was?

The spectators might felt nothing if the wild man appeared before the fight took place. However, everyone had witnessed with their own eyes how Zhang Ruochen had overwhelmed Xu Qing and with the Heart Integrated into Sword.

Who did you think you were? You wanted to defeat Zhang Ruochen?

"He is ... He is Bu Qianfan of Saint Bu Gentry ... He was once at the top of the Earth Board for three years. It is said that he has reached the level of the final stage of seven and a half."

"Some time ago, I heard that he was defeated by a mystical person of the black market with three strikes of the sword, and then he went to the Death Primitive World."

“What? He actually dared to go the Death Primitive World? Everyone says that the place is very dangerous. Very few people could survive for more than three days in there.”

The outstanding talent of East Region Saint Mansions, Chen Yi, seemed to know Bu Qianfan a little. He said, “But he managed stay in the Death Primitive World for two months. When he got out, his cultivation improved significantly.”

Another outstanding talent of East Region Saint Mansions, Chen Tianshu, said, “The mysterious master of the black market who defeats Bu Qianfan is the young master of First-Class Hall, Di Yi. It is said that Bu Qianfan’s strength is not any less than Di Yi’s. However, Bu Qianfan has flaws in his mind which were exploited by Di Yi. He damaged his Martial Arts Heart first; therefore he was able to defeat Bu Qianfan with only three strikes of the sword.”

“Bu Qianfan went to the Death Primitive World just to strengthen his Martial Arts Heart to remedy this defect. He actually stayed there for two months. An ordinary person wouldn’t have had such a strong will power. He possibly has fixed the flaw of the Martial Arts Heart.”

Chen Yi said, “If it is really so, with Bu Qianfan’s current strength, he must have made great progress.”

Chen Tianshu smiled, “Bu Qianfan must have heard the news that Zhang Ruochen has defeated Di Yi, so he comes here to fight Zhang Ruochen. He can regain his confidence only by defeating Zhang Ruochen and becoming the best in Martial Arts among the new generation.”

“Although Bu Qianfan has great talent, he is after all, only in his 20s like Zhang Ruochen. He is half a generation younger than Xu Qing and us. He was in the Earth Realm half year ago. I think his cultivation is only in the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm at most,” Chen Yi said.

Three outstanding talents of East Region Saint Mansions, Xu Qing, Zi Hansha and others were all close to or over 30 years old. Bu Qianfan and Zhang Ruochen could only be regarded as juniors to them.

“With their final seventh stage talent, it’s already amazing that they have reached the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. If they reach another realm, elders like us will soon be left in the dust,” Chen Tianshu smiled.

As he was talking, Bu Qianfan had ascended the Stairway to Heaven. He stared at Xu Qing and shouted, “Go away, Zhang Ruochen is my opponent.”

Bu Qianfan’s voice was plain and common when audience heard it, but in Xu Qing’s ears, it was as loud as thunder. His brain went dark and he retreated continuously.

The martial technique applied by Bu Qianfan was in the Inferior Class Ghost Level, which was called Sound of Thunder and Brahma. He had practiced this martial technique into the succeed realm. His battle roar could easily rout 100,000 soldiers.

Although Bu Qianfan had just practiced into Small Success Realm, he had already reached a certain degree. Even if Xu Qing was caught off guard, he was also suppressed.

Xu Qing had powerful physical quality. He reacted quickly and said, “Bu Qianfan, this is Saint Academy, not the battalion of Ministry of War. You’d better be nice to me. Moreover, our opponents are Zhang Ruochen.”

“I said that, Zhang Ruochen is my opponent. You can back down now!” Bu Qianfan said impolitely.

Xu Qing’s face turned gloomy and he was angry. If he had no internal injury after fighting with Zhang Ruochen, he would teach this junior Bu Qianfan a lesson.

“All right. I will let you fight with Zhang Ruochen first and see how you are going to deal with him.”

Xu Qing did not flaunt his superiority and went back to the side.

At this moment, other talented students of Saint Xu Gentry were all beaten down from the Stairway to Heaven by Luo Shuihan and others. Everyone was badly bruised and looked miserable.

Xu Qing was not in the mood to deal with them. He swallowed a healing pill. While he was healing, he was observing confrontation between Zhang Ruochen and Bu Qianfan.

Zhang Ruochen could become an inheritor of a powerful Saint family, he was not only talented but also very smart.

Xu Qing knew clearly that he underestimated his enemy, that's why he was on the losing side when fighting Zhang Ruochen.

Now he wanted to observe Zhang Ruochen's martial arts and movements to find out Zhang Ruochen's flaws. To know one's strength is the key to ensure victory.

“He turns out to be Bu Qianfan.”

Zhang Ruochen had heard of Bu Qianfan's name long ago. The identity of top one on the Earth Board had been possibly known to all in the Eastern Region.

In the past two or three years, the top God's favored sons of the Eastern Region should be Zhang Ruochen, Di Yi, and Bu Qianfan; then there were also Luo Shuihan who had practiced into a Saintly Being and Saintess of heresy with mythical identity.

There were only five people.

Any of them had the talent to become a saint.

They were almost the same age, around 20 years old. Moreover, their martial cultivation were almost the same. Even if their strength varied, they were regarded as at the same level.

Bu Qianfan was not a student of the School of the Martial Market, but a talent cultivated by Ministry of War of the imperial court. He came to Saint Academy only to fight Zhang Ruochen.

“Did you defeat Di Yi?”

Bu Qianfan stood on the Stairway and observed Zhang Ruochen, and gave the latter a bone-chilling stare.

This expression could only be seen in the eyes of a soldier who had slain countless enemies. Even if he did not

deliberately regulate his Genuine Qi, he could intimidate the ordinary warriors, making them tremble with fear and kneel before him.

Zhang Ruochen was also observing Bu Qianfan. The profile of a famous person like Bu Qianfan had been recorded long ago on the Earth Board. You only needed to buy a copy of Earth Board to know everything about him.

Bu Qianfan had just reached 20 years old. He was at the same age as Zhang Ruochen. But his face was covered with beard, which made him look very old and somber. He seemed to be 35 or 36 years old.

Especially his eyes. They were like steel and iron, containing an unyielding will.

Zhang Ruochen looked at him very calmly. He said, "That's right. Di Yi and I had a fight before. I was lucky to win."

"Being able to defeat Di Yi requires more than just luck."

Bu Qianfan's eyes were sharp and cold. He said, "I give you an hour to recover your Genuine Qi. After that, you have to fight me."

Zhang Ruochen smiled, "I don't want to fight with you. Moreover, Stairway to Heaven is a place for the exam of Saint Academy. You are from the Ministry of War and can't be here."

Bu Qianfan wore the armor of Ministry of War.

"You don't think I'm qualified to fight you because I'm defeated by Di Yi with three strikes of sword?"

Bu Qianfan's eyes were sharp and cold. He said, "I'm in the Yellow Realm and have once reached the Ultimate Realm. Am I qualified to fight with you?"

Anyone who reached the Ultimate Realm would keep it a secret. On the contrary, Bu Qianfan did not care at all and told Zhang Ruochen about it.

Was he stupid?

How could he be stupid if he managed to survive in the Death Primitive World for whole two months?

In the end, Bu Qianfan was fearless. Being lionhearted was the behavior of the most orthodox military. He was upright, outspoken, and seemed to have the power to root out all evils in the world.



# Chapter 389 - Suppress the Army and Destroy its Prestige

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Ultimate Realm?”

“Bu Qianfan has once reached the legendary highest realm?”

“That can’t be true! Only a few people have done it since the ancient times.”

...

A tossed stone raises a thousand ripples. Students on the Stairway to Heaven were all shocked. Many of them were staring at Bu Qianfan.

Bu Qianfan remained stone cold, as he stared at Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen was not surprised at all. He had reached the Ultimate Realm three times. Hence, the Ultimate Realm was not so hard to reach as people imagined. At least, it is possible to be achieved by humans.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You are possibly misunderstood. You don’t need to prove your strength. I don’t want to fight with you since the person you want to defeat is Di Yi, not me.”

Bu Qianfan frowned, and he clenched his fists with anger. A stroke of Qi billow gushed out of his body. He said, “If that is the case, then forgive me if I offend you!”

Within an instant, he leaped three steps forward and chopped toward Zhang Ruochen’s neck with his hand.

It was the broadsword technique of Army Suppressing and Prestige Destroying.

The martial technique of Ghost Level Inferior Class contained the most fierce and direct movement of the broadsword technique, chop, stab, twining head ... It could simplify all complicated moves into only three moves.

It seemed that there were only three moves, but every move contained the quintessence of the broadsword technique: taking someone's life within one move.

In the army, only an officer who was the Commander-in-Chief was qualified to practice the broadsword technique of Army Suppressing and Prestige Destroying. If he wanted to succeed in practicing it, he had to practice it on the battle field. Only after he killed tens of thousands of people would he have a chance in successfully mastering the technique.

The first move that Bu Qianfan applied was the Knife of Army Suppressing. He swung his arm as if it was a broadsword, and it formed half-moon of knife light in front of his arm.

“Swish!”

Before Bu Qianfan finished his motion, Zhang Ruochen had already felt the murderous intent, sharpness, and hostility the strike contained, as if it could eliminate every enemy who was in its way.

Zhang Ruochen had to fight back. He pressed together with his forefinger and middle finger. He used his hand as a sword to apply one move of Nine Yang Sword—Pull Chestnut out of Fire.

Sword Comprehension and Genuine Qi condensed on his two fingertips, which thrust quickly toward the side tip of Bu Qianfan's palm.

“Pow!”

There was the clashing sound of knife and sword. Both of them fought recklessly.

Bu Qianfan had sharp eyes and acted quickly. All his power surged, which drove the arm to rotate. He immediately applied

the second move of the broadsword technique.

“Dispiriting Knife Technique.”

The second attack seemed to be even more terrifying than the first. Its power and momentum was astonishing. It could be seen with bare eyes that there was a shadow of broadsword above Bu Qianfan’s arm. It followed the track of his arm movement and chopped toward Zhang Ruochen’s waist.

“Moonglade Knife Technique.”

Zhang Ruochen applied one sword technique of Nine Yang Sword again and held back Bu Qianfan’s second attack once again.

“Regicide Knife Technique.”

Without hesitation, Bu Qianfan applied the third movement of the broadsword technique of Army Suppressing and Prestige Destroying, which was the most powerful one.

Faintly, it could be seen that there was a giant man in armor who was standing behind him. He swung his sword toward Zhang Ruochen’s head.

Boom!

It looked like a knife and tens of thousands of knives as well. All of them sliced down at the same time.

Three knives chopped in a row, and their power continued to increase.

Facing the overwhelming knife energy, Zhang Ruochen looked serious as well. He moved one step backward to decrease the pressure of the broadsword technique.

He mobilized the power of Sword Comprehension and applied the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. He held his hands together, and his whole body became a sword and stabbed toward Bu Qianfan.

“Pow!”

Bu Qianfan flew backward and fell back to more than 16 meters away. His arms were trembling. There was a drop of blood dripping from his sleeve.

Zhang Ruochen retreated three steps. His ten fingers were hurt and numb as if he he just tried to punch an iron mountain.

“Amazing. He could actually hold on three moves of my broadsword technique of Army Suppressing and Prestige Destroying. No wonder he could defeat Di Yi.”

Bu Qianfan was serious. There was a layer of Genuine Qi aura floating on his arm. Suddenly, the blood which had dropped out turned into Spiritual Blood was sucked into his nose and mouth.

Zhang Ruochen said, “You are also powerful. I have used all my strength!”

Bu Qianfan showed a smile in his eyes. He said, “All of your strength? I don’t think so! I have checked on your profile. When you were in the Black Realm, your Spiritual Power was over 30th level.”

“I practice the broadsword technique of Army Suppressing and Prestige Destroying, which emphasis mostly on the momentum. Once the broadsword technique strikes out, it has to destroy the warrior’s spirit. Even if a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm, he can’t be completely stationed, but you remained untouched from the beginning to the end.”

“So I guessing that your Spiritual Power has reached the 40th level. You deserve to be called a master of Spiritual Power. If you attack by applying the Spiritual Power, your strength should be more than this.”

Zhang Ruochen said, “40th level of Spiritual Power? You’ve been exaggerating.”

Bu Qianfan seemed to be very confident. He continued, “If your Spiritual Power is not strong enough to a certain degree, how can you hold back the power of Di Yi’s Demon’s Heart? Even with your sword technique realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, you can’t defeat Di Yi if you are both in the same realm.”

Bu Qianfan then added, “Even if you have the Spiritual Power as the final resolution, you are not necessarily invincible when both of you are in the same realm. I also have a final

resolution. If you and I are engaged in a life-and-death struggle, my chance to survive is bigger than you, because you have a weakness that you don't even realize it yourself."

Zhang Ruochen replied: "What weakness?"

"Fighting experience, the fighting experience in the hovering of life and death."

Bu Qianfan said, "I grew up on the battle field and have experienced various wars for no less than ten thousand times. Among them, there were several hundred times that I was on the verge of death, struggling to be alive, crawling in between life and death and going through trials and tribulations on the blood-soaked battlefields."

"The number of wars I have experienced is more than ten times you have experienced. Every time, some will stand and some will fall. Even if Di Yi defeated me last time, he couldn't kill me and could only watch me leave."

Zhang Ruochen became serious because Bu Qianfan was telling the truth. Compared with him, Zhang Ruochen's fighting experience and the amount of going through trials and tribulations were indeed not enough.

Of course, if it was really a fight between life and death, Zhang Ruochen did not think that he was the one that going to die, because Zhang Ruochen had an indomitable faith.

Zhang Ruochen said, "I'm very curious of why you lost to Di Yi. Were there any flaws in your Martial Arts?"

Bu Qianfan was silent for a moment. He seemed to be recalling something. Afterward, he shook his head and turned around, walking down the Stairway to Heaven. He said, "Zhang Ruochen, if you want to know the answer, come and find me in the big battalion of Ministry of War. If you want to compensate for your weakness, you must come."

Zhang Ruochen stared at Bu Qianfan's shadow. He smiled and said, "What an interesting man."

Bu Qianfan was not a Saintly Being, but he had lots of experience on the battlefield. He had reached the Ultimate Realm, so he had the strength to fight against a Saintly Being.

Although he was not a Saintly Being, he stayed at the top of the Earth Board for three years. He really had something that others did not.

Zhang Ruochen stared at Xu Qing who was not far away. He asked, “Do you still want to fight?”

Xu Qing’s condition of injury had totally healed. With the regulation of the Genuine Qi, both of his hands immediately turned into silver metals. He said with a smile, “Zhang Ruochen, we don’t need to continue the fight. We can have another competition.”

“What kind of other competition?” Zhang Ruochen said.

Xu Qing pointed at Stairway to Heaven. He said, “Let’s see who can climb higher. If you can win, the previous grudge between us would be forgotten once and for all. If you lose, you have to kneel in front of the gate of Saint Xu Gentry for three days as an apology to us. Kneel before a Saint is not disgraceful, is it?”

“As simple as that?” Zhang Ruochen was a bit unconvinced.

There was suppression of gods on the Stairway to Heaven. The higher one’s cultivation was, the more powerful the suppression one will encounter.

Only when one’s talent is greater, his Spiritual Power will be more powerful. The warriors who had more powerful Martial Soul could climb higher up the stairway.

Xu Qing should know it clearly. His greatest advantage was that his cultivation was deeper than Zhang Ruochen’s.

In this case, why did he give up his own advantage and fight against Zhang Ruochen in a tougher condition?

Although Zhang Ruochen thought that Xu Qing must have had a plan, he did not back out and directly agreed instead.

Xu Qing rushed out first and reached the 40th level Stairway without much effort, and he continued to climb up very quickly.

Zhang Ruochen rushed to the 30th Stairway first. He ascended to the 31st, 32nd Stairway after leaving his name on the Jade

Tablet....

A moment later, Zhang Ruochen had already been on the 40th Stairway.

At this moment, the invisible pressure became very overwhelming. There seemed to be 40 times of normal gravity on crushing down on Zhang Ruochen's body, which not only squeezed on Zhang Ruochen's body, but also on Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul.

An ordinary warrior would have been crushed to the ground long ago.

Zhang Ruochen raised his head. There were 57 warriors who had ascended the 40th level. Before that there were several students of Omen Ridge fought with the students of Saint Xu Gentry, there were also other warriors who had ascended the Stairway to Heaven, going up one step by one step.

There was a powerful warrior who had already reached the 65th Stairway.

He was the inheritor of the Powerful Saint Family. He wore a metal vest and exposed his bronze-colored arms. It made him seem to be particularly mighty.

There were three people who had ascended the 60th Stairway. The other two were also inheritors of the Powerful Saint Family.

18 warriors had climbed to the 50th Stairway.

Zi Hansha who had been climbing the Stairway to Heaven before that had reached the 54th Stairway.

But his potential seemed to have been exhausted. He stood on the Stairway, trying hard to hold on. The sweat broke out all over his body and his body bent. He could not set his feet on the 55th Stairway no matter how hard he tried.

“Pfft!”

Zi Hansha made a move forcibly and wanted to ascend the 55th Stairway. He was hit by an invisible power and flew out. She rolled down with blood spitting out of her mouth.

She fell to the 40th Stairway and regained her posture. Then she got up and saw Zhang Ruochen who was not far away.

“Damn. Zhang Ruochen is actually so powerful. I must not lose to him.”

Zi Hansha certainly had seen the fight between Zhang Ruochen and Xu Qing and Bu Qianfan. Now seeing that Zhang Ruochen was right in front of him, he was frustrated.

So he clenched his teeth and tried again. He closely followed Zhang Ruochen and climbed up again.

(To be continued...)



# Chapter 390 - The Battlefield

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Xu Qing reached the 45th Stairway at an extremely high speed.

Gradually, though, he slowed down. He could only climb one step after every other breath.

When he reached the 50th step after expanding tremendous effort, he glanced back and found Zhang Ruochen was right behind him on the 48th step.

At this moment, Xu Qing looked up and in his eyes, unnoticed to most of those present, was a hint of a sinister smile.

The three descendants from the Saint Gentries who were already on the 60th step all felt something, and they turned around at the same time. Their eyes met Xu Qing's, and they all nodded.

But of course, Zhang Ruochen saw it all. He thought to himself, "There's indeed a trick, just as I expected. Do they want to deal with me together?"

But Zhang Ruochen was not afraid. Instead, he was in battle mode. He ran the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean with all his strength and madly absorbed the Divine Dragon Strength from the Dragon Pearl.

Originally, his realm had reached the Peak of the Mid Stage of the Heaven Realm. Under the pressure given by these people, he wanted to use this chance to breakthrough the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm.

Just like Bu Qianfan had said, Zhang Ruochen lacked in the experience of the life-and-death situations.

Only by experiencing the brink of death could he stimulate his potential and breakthrough the realms with more ease.

The moment Zhang Ruochen reached the 50th step, the three descendants dashed down at the same time to attack Zhang Ruochen.

“Thousand-hand King-kong!”

Xu Qing, who was standing to Zhang Ruochen’s left, also punched hard towards Zhang Ruochen’s head.

No one could expect that the situation would have a drastic turn. Four descendants from Saint Gentries attacked Zhang Ruochen at the same time.

On the 50th step, warriors needed to bear huge pressure, so they were much less agile than before. It was almost impossible to avoid each other’s attack.

If Zhang Ruochen was hit, he would be lucky if he was just disabled.

The students under the Stairway to Heaven were all very worried about Zhang Ruochen. They imagined the scene of Zhang Ruochen falling down from the Stairway to Heaven the next second.

They just did not know whether he could at least preserve his life.

Facing this, Zhang Ruochen, however, was unusually calm. He stretched out his two arms and punched out ten Sword Waves at the same time towards the three people coming from above.

The three descendants immediately turned away. They were forced back up to the Stairway.

Although Zhang Ruochen blocked one side of the attack, he could not escape from the other side’s.

“Pfft!”

A strong shockwave from a punch came from the left.

Xu Qing’s punch penetrated Zhang Ruochen’s Celestial Bodyshield and hit hard on his shoulder. Zhang Ruochen was blown off far away.

But, the moment Xu Qing's punch hit, golden splendor came out of Zhang Ruochen's body and formed a halo which blocked the power of that punch.

Zhang Ruochen, therefore, only felt a little pain in the shoulder without being severely wounded.

It was the power of the Dragon Pearl that blocked Xu Qing's attack.

“What's this? The descendants from the Saint Gentries are dealing with me as well?”

Zhang Ruochen stared at the three people above with a wave of anger.

The reason why he fought with Saint Xu Gentry was that Chang Qiqi and Duanmu Xingling were such trouble-makers. Zhang Ruochen actually felt that he was in the wrong.

But what was happening now? All the Saint families were joining hands to persecute the students from Omen Ridge. They even wanted him dead.

This was too much even for the gentlest of person. He was fired up inside and wanted to go on a rampage.

Standing on the 53rd step, the descendant from Saint Shen Gentry said coldly, “We don't want to do this, but you guys are too arrogant.”

The big fellow's name was Shen Yuntong. He was also at the Peak of the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm and was as strong as Xu Qing.

“Why do you waste your time talking to him? Kill him first!” said the descendant from Saint Xi Gentry.

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry was a plump and pretty lady. She had cold eyes and fair hands. Each of her fingers was as sharp as a Finger Sword.

There was another man from the Saint Zuo Gentry.

And there was also Saint Xu Gentry, which made up a total four great saints of the Saint Gentries.

The four Saint Gentries were always close, and they often arrange marriages with one another. In other words, they were tarred with the same brush.

Their joint power was very influential in the whole Eastern Region.

“Take this.”

“Swoosh!”

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry turned into a shadow. Suddenly, twelve beautiful shadows appeared on the Stairway to Heaven which besieged Zhang Ruochen in the center and kept striking their finger technique.

Zhang Ruochen also kept blocking her attack.

On the other direction, the descendant from Saint Shen Gentry performed a palm technique and created a gigantic vigor.

A savage beast howled.

A seven-meter long huge Genuine Qi handprint flew out of Shen Yuntong’s palm and went right to Zhang Ruochen.

Shen Yuntong was born with Natural Divine Power. It was said that he could lift up a 1500 kg copper cauldron when he was only three years old. His physical quality was extremely strong.

Even one with a skin of iron would be bashed into a sludge this attack.

Xu Qing stared at Zuo Fenggu, the descendant from the Saint Zuo Gentry, and said, “Brother Zuo, Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power is very strong. I hope you can suppress him in the Spiritual Power field.”

The forefather of the Saint Zuo Gentry was a Psychic Sage.

Zuo Fenggu was also a born genius of Spiritual Power. Under the cultivation of the Psychic Sage, he reached the fortieth level in Spiritual Power and became a Spiritual Power master at the age of 34.

Although Zuo Fenggu was 34 years old, he looked like he was still in his early twenties. He was tall, slim, and wore an

alchemist robe which gave him a sharp look.

“How old is Zhang Ruochen? Do you really believe what Bu Qianfan said, that his Spiritual Power had reached the fortieth level?”

Zuo Fenggu smiled and slightly shook his head.

As a Spiritual Power master, Zuo Fenggu knew too well that, to reach the fortieth level in Spiritual Power was no easy feat.

Even for him, a Spiritual Power genius with a strict Psychic Sage as a mentor, he conquered a lot of difficulties to accomplish what he had now.

Zhang Ruochen was much younger than him. So there was no way for him to reach the fortieth level in Spiritual Power.

Xu Qing dared not to be arrogant in front of Zuo Fenggu. After all, Zuo Fenggu was much stronger than him. So his smiled obsequiously and said, “Brother Zuo, if Zhang Ruochen’s Spiritual Power really reached the fortieth level, you won’t be too lonely in the Saint Academy’s examination this time. At least there is an opponent for you.”

Zuo Fenggu snickered and said, “He is hardly worth mentioning. You guys can deal with him first. I’ll help you if you fail.”

“Alright,” replied Xu Qing.

Actually, any one of the descendants was not weaker than Zhang Ruochen. If any of the two worked together, they could definitely defeat Zhang Ruochen.

Now, Zhang Ruochen could only passively block the attack from Shen Yuntong and the descendant from Saint Xi Gentry. He would have been badly wounded without the Dragon Pearl.

“Broken Cloud Halberd!”

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry stretched out a slender and white finger and pointed it out quickly. She struck on Zhang Ruochen’s forehead between the eyebrows, wanting to break Zhang Ruochen’s Qi sea and disable Zhang Ruochen’s cultivation.

But she didn't know that Zhang Ruochen's Qi sea was protected by the illusory image of gods. Even a warrior in the Fish-dragon Realm could not break it up.

“SWISH!”

A ball of green light came out of Zhang Ruochen's forehead, blowing the descendant from Saint Xi Gentry away.

Even so, the last strike also wounded Zhang Ruochen. His Genuine Qi became rather messy, which kept lashing at his meridians.

“In this case, I'll break through to the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm!”

On the one hand, Zhang Ruochen blocked the attack from Shen Yuntong. On the other hand, he ran his exercises to break through the realm. Suddenly, he felt a punch was coming to him from the back.

Another person was attacking him now.

“Die, Zhang Ruochen!”

Standing on the 48th step, Zi Hansha ran his Genuine Qi and gathered his power. Then, he punched towards Zhang Ruochen's head from the back.

Although Zi Hansha was not as talented as the descendants from the Saint Gentries, he had deep cultivation and was in the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm.

If they fought alone, Zhang Ruochen would have enough confidence. But now, Zhang Ruochen was already fighting with three descendants from the Saint Gentries. The sneak attack from the back came at the worst time possible.

“Go to hell!”

Zhang Ruochen roared and forced himself to turn around. He struck 81 handprints in a roll and performed Nine-folds of the Elephant Power nine times directly on Zi Hansha, which penetrated the defense created by Zi Hansha's amulet treasure.

The handprints poured down on Zi Hansha like raindrops.

“Bang! Bang! Bang!”

Zi Hansha's organs were smashed, and his chest collapsed indirectly. He flew out backward like a kite with a broken string.

With a loud noise, Zi Hansha fell to the ground hard from the Stairway to Heaven with blood all over him.

Clearly, with such heavy wounds, he could not climb up from the ground. No one even knew whether he could attend the second round of the Saint Academy's examination.

Although Zhang Ruochen struck Zi Hansha off, he was attacked by Shen Yuntong, Xu Qing and the descendant from Saint Xi Gentry. He was struck over 20 times on the back which even broke the Dragon Pearl's defense. Zhang Ruochen's Spiritual Blood was rolling under the violent attack. He fell to the 44th step.

“Pufft!”

Zhang Ruochen was forced to kneel on the ground, and he spat out a mouthful of blood which stained the Stairway.

“Shame on the descendant from Saint Xu Gentry! He knew he was no match for Zhang Ruochen, so he jointed hands with other Saint Gentries!”

Seeing Zhang Ruochen getting wounded, Huang Yanchen was extremely angry. She hurried up to the 40th step and wanted to help Zhang Ruochen out.

“Junior sister apprentice Huang, this battle is between the Saint Gentries and the students from the Omen Ridge. You shouldn't interfere.” A genius from Saint Xi Gentry walked up and stopped Huang Yanchen.

“Get out of my way,” said Huang Yanchen in a low tone.

The genius replied calmly, “I'm warning you for your own good. I'm not afraid if you want to fight.”

Meanwhile, other masters also stood out and stopped Luo Shuihan, Duanmu Xingling, Si Xingkong and so on. Among these masters, there were people from the Half-Saint families and the Saint Gentries.

Although they were not as strong as the direct descendants from the Saint Gentries, they had more people.

Suddenly, the Stairway to Heaven turned into a battlefield, which was greatly disadvantageous to the students from the Omen Ridge.

Meanwhile, this was also a battle between the juniors of the divine families and the juniors of the humble families. But there was a huge gap between them. The juniors of the divine families were far too powerful.



# Chapter 391 - Divine Dragon Transformation

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

“Zhang Ruochen, are you trying to fight against the Saint Gentries alone? You are biting off more than you can chew.”

With his hands at the back, Xu Qing stood stoically. He looked down at Zhang Ruochen and hummed coldly.

The four of them, Xu Qing, Zuo Fenggu, Shen Yuntong and the descendant from Saint Xi Gentry, stood on the 50th step. Each of them gave out a bright holy light. They were so overbearing and arrogant that they looked like four young kings.

But Zhang Ruochen showed no fear. He stood up again and wiped away the blood stain on his mouth. He straightened his body and suddenly, all of his Qi came to his Qi sea at once.

“Whoosh!”

The 10,000th Vital Essence was successfully condensed!

Floating in the Qi sea, the 10,000 drops of the Vital Essence glowed in green and clashed with one another.

The number of Vital Essences started to drop.

But each Vital Essence became bigger and bigger.

Finally, there were only two Vital Essences in the Qi sea, and each of them was the size of a pearl. Shining in all directions, they revolved around each other and pulled each other nearer and nearer.

“Boom!”

They crashed together and condensed into a pigeon egg-sized liquid Vital Essence ball.

The moment the Vital Essence ball was condensed, Zhang Ruochen's pores were all opened and madly absorbed the Spiritual Qi between heaven and earth.

“Whir!”

On the Stairway to Heaven, wisps of Spiritual Qi gathered to Zhang Ruochen and formed a huge Spiritual Qi vortex. The four descendants from the Saint Gentries kept backing up, fearing to be sucked into the vortex.

“What? Is he trying to break through the realm on the Stairway to Heaven?”

Xu Qing's expression changed and said, “We can't let him break through. Let's go!”

After saying this, Xu Qing stepped out first. He activated the Fiery Wings again. His whole body was covered with fire. Then he flew towards Zhang Ruochen like a huge golden fireball.

“Infinite Palm!”

The descendant from the Saint Xi Gentry transferred his Genuine Qi. She lifted up his left arm and sanctified it completely. Every inch of her skin gave out the strong light that was brighter than the sun.

Her Holy Blood revived. Although she was not a Saintly Being now since only her arm was sanctified, the power of her arm was extremely strong, which could burst out the power ten times stronger than usual.

There was a shrill burst of wind in the air when she struck.

The palm power dashed towards Zhang Ruochen like a fierce storm.

“Domineering Saint Fist Technique!”

Inherited from the Domineering Saint, Shen Yuntong's blood was boiling and his body was expanding, making cracking noise.

After a while, he turned into a five-meter tall giant.

Steel-like muscles appeared on the surface of his body. His fists were as big as washbasins, containing infinite power.

The blood of the Domineering Saint was recovering. Although he was not a Saintly Being yet, he could be seen as a Half-Saint.

Zuo Fenggu, in his alchemist robe, was the only one who did not make a move. But he was gathering his strength secretly as well, planning strike a deadly blow with Spiritual Power towards Zhang Ruochen at any moment.

Below the Stairway to Heaven, all the students were shocked with mouth wide open. These descendants from the Saint Gentries were so powerful that they looked like deities descending from Heaven.

“Each one of them is an elite warrior, and now they are working together to fight against Zhang Ruochen. I think every one of them has the strength to be Zhang Ruochen’s match.”

“What do you know? Zhang Ruochen is at the crucial moment of breaking through the realm. If he succeed, he will get into a whole new realm! Of course, people like Xu Qing won’t let him make it. Otherwise, they are no match for Zhang Ruochen even if they work together.”

Only a warrior in the Heaven Realm could understand how hard it was to break through the realm. Every realm was a barrier, and even the Mid Stage and the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, which were the easiest to break through, needed a long period of accumulation.

Just when Xu Qing’s attack was going to land on Zhang Ruochen’s body—

Zhang Ruochen’s body gave out a bright green light of Genuine Qi.

Boom!

Zhang Ruochen stretched out his arms as if all of his muscles and bones became one. Two illusory images of flying dragon

of Genuine Qi appeared, and then they struck out simultaneously.

Xu Qing also struck out. But the moment he touched Zhang Ruochen, he felt an extremely powerful force coming from his arms. He could not help but fly backward.

When Xu Qing fell on the ground, he could not feel his arms. And his body became flaccid as if his soul had left him.

This was bad.

Xu Qing immediately transferred his Genuine Qi, which flowed out of his Qi sea towards his entire body through meridians.

Under the nourishing of Genuine Qi, his sense of his body began to restore, followed by unberable pain from his arms and legs. Apparently, the collision just now had wounded him severely.

“How could he...be so strong? Could it be that he had already broken through the realm?”

Xu Qing's face immediatley lost all color and he felt extremely pressured by the person in front of him.

Could they handle Zhang Ruochen after he broke through the realm?

Indeed, Zhang Ruochen had broken through the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm. But he did not have the time to digest the power, because Shen Yuntong and the descendant from the Saint Xi Gentry had already attacked towards him.

The descendant from the Saint Xi Gentry struck with her hand. With the moving of her fingers, millions of hand shadow appeared in the void space.

It looked like every hand carried endless and unpredictable Saint Power.

“Huaa!”

From Zhang Ruochen's glabella, a Skyeye appeared, with which Zhang Ruochen spotted the real hand precisely.

So, Zhang Ruochen stretched his right hand, clenched her wrist, took hold of her meridians and pulled her.

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry was surprised. She could not help but fly towards Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen clenched her wrist so tight that his fingers stabbed into her skin. With her wrist in hand, he swung his arm quickly and threw her hard on the Stairway.

“Pow!”

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry clashed with the Stairway hard. Her body cracked, and she groaned out of agony.

She laid on the ground and could not move. With blood on her mouth, she shuddered all over.

Zhang Ruochen let her wrist go and step forward to meet Shen Yuntong.

Now, Shen Yuntong was almost five meters tall like a big-boned beast. His fists were like hammers as if one punch could crack the earth open.

“Bang! Bang!”

Dragon’s roar raised inside Zhang Ruochen’s body. He kept performing palm technique and confronted Shen Yuntong with toughness.

Shen Yuntong was born with Natural Divine Power. After inheriting the Domineering Saint’s power, he was even more terrifying.

In the same realm, no one could even block his one single punch.

Now, Zhang Ruochen was one realm lower than him, but Zhang Ruochen could suppress him in raw strength and kept forcing him back.

Even Zhang Ruochen himself didn’t realize, with his continuous punching, his hands were turned into golden dragon claws with Dragon Scales on them.

What's more, these golden Dragon Scales kept growing towards his shoulders, head, chest, and legs. After a while, Zhang Ruochen became a ten feet long golden dragon!

“Awoo!”

An exploding dragon's roar raised up, and even the Stairway to Heaven seemed like to be shaken a bit.

The Half-Saints in the Holy Temple couldn't believe their eyes. One of them stood up and blurted out, “It's...it's the legendary Divine Dragon Transformation!”

Only the human warrior who refined the divine Dragon Pearl could perform this unique technique.

A mortal actually turned into a Divine Dragon.

“Let's attack together. We must take him down.”

Xu Qing recovered from the shock and attacked Zhang Ruochen again. He performed his unique technique which turned his 81 punches into 81 shadows that punched together.

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry got up from the ground and punched on the Stairway. Her palm cracked open at once and blood was splattered everywhere.

She then exercised her technique and the blood on her hand began to burn.

“Huaa!”

Traces of white inscriptions appeared all over her arms, palms and fingers. Like white strings, they quickly covered her whole body.

This was a secret spell. With the help of this secret spell, she could transfer the power of the divine hand to her whole body and burst out the power of the Saintly Being in a short time.

In other words, she just temporarily became a Saintly Being, albeit a fake one.

Shen Yuntong also had his unique technique. Now, he performed it and tried to attack Zhang Ruochen.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen turning into a Golden Dragon, Zuo Fenggu also started attacking.

He was a Spiritual Power master, so he did not dash to Zhang Ruochen directly. Instead, he raised his arm slowly and pointed to Zhang Ruochen.

“Huaa!”

The Spiritual Qi between the heaven and earth shook and turned into flames, forming a blossoming flame floating in the air.

These flames were like a myriad of lights in the valley. They gradually condensed into a huge flaming phoenix. The phoenix stretched its two claws and rushed towards the Golden Dragon.

Standing below the Stairway and looking up, people could only see a Golden Dragon fighting with a flaming phoenix, while the two made ear-splitting noises.

At the same time, the giant, turned by Shen Yuntong, held a huge axe condensed by Genuine Qi and slashed the Golden Dragon as well.

The descendant from Saint Xi Gentry floated in the air like one of the Nine Goddesses of the Empyrean. From her fingertips, traces of light columns struck out and fell on the Golden Dragon's body.

Xu Qing's 81 shadows surrounded the Golden Dragon completely. Some of them performed the fist technique, some of them performed the palm technique, and some of them performed the sword skill.

Each of the four masters proved their worth and fought with the Golden Dragon.

“Bang! Bang!”

The Golden Dragon kept striking out palm print while flying in every direction. All four descendants from the Saint Gentries coughed up blood and flew backward.

“Huaa!”

The Golden Dragon uttered a long and loud cry. It turned into a ray of light and landed on the Stairway again and condensed into a shadowy figure.

It had returned to human form.

Zhang Ruochen took a couple of deep breaths and stared at his hands in surprise. He could not believe that he had just performed the Divine Dragon Transformation.

The Divine Dragon Transformation was a Ghost Level Superior class martial technique.

Even if a warrior had refined the Dragon Pearl, he needed to practice this martial technique to become a dragon.

But Zhang Ruochen had never practiced the Divine Dragon Transformation before. He, however, directly turned into a Golden Dragon during the battle and defeated the four descendants from the Saint Gentries.

What was going on?

“I performed the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm while battling the descendant from Saint Shen Gentry. Is this palm technique somehow related to the Divine Dragon Transformation? Is that why I turned into a dragon because of some kind of power I accidentally stimulated while performing that palm technique?”

Actually, Zhang Ruochen wasn't wrong about that. Because the Divine Dragon Transformation was created by a Saint who comprehended the nine movements of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and created the Draconic Transformation.

The Divine Dragon Transformation and the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, therefore, were somehow related.

During the battle, Zhang Ruochen had a very small probability to stimulate the power of the Divine Dragon Transformation. But no one knew how small the probability was. It could be 1%, 0.1%, or even 0.01%.



# Chapter 392 - Climb the Stairway

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Stairway to Heaven was a mess. Not only were the successors of the four Saint families heavily injured, those students of the four Saint families who took the Saint Academy's examination were as well.

Some of them were even in critical condition. They could not stand up and others had to come to carry them down the stairway.

Of the four Saint families, there were naturally some top masters. But how could they compete against Luo Shuihan and Duanmu Xingling?

Luo Shuihan was extremely powerful. She beat down and knocked down more than 40 talented students off the Stairway to Heaven.

It was the strength of the Saintly Being. Her situation was less vigorous than the situation of Zhang Ruochen and the four successors of Saint families, but no one dared to underestimate her.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen shocked them the most.

With one man's power, he defeated the joint attack of the four successors of Saint families. Even a Saintly Being could not easily fight them off.

“So amazing! He can even use a martial technique as incredible as the Divine Dragon Transformation. No wonder that Bu Qianfan regards him as an enemy. He's really powerful!”

“With his strength, which stair could he climb to?”

“He can probably climb to the 70th level.”

“With his qualification, it won’t be difficult for him to climb to the 80th level of the Stairway.”

“How could it be possible? Even a Saintly Being can’t climb to the 80th level. The pressure of the Saint Power is unimaginable.”

...

It was extremely difficult for an ordinary genius to climb to the 30th level of the Stairway. Only the Saintly Beings could reach the 70th level.

It seemed that Zhang Ruochen was stronger than the Saintly Beings. So people were all looking forward to seeing which level he could climb to.

However, Zhang Ruochen stepped down the Stairway, denied all the expectation of those students and people of Half-Saint Class. He did not continue to climb.

Anyway, I have already left my name on the Jade Tablet. I have passed the first examination. Why should I continue to climb up the Stairway?

Although Zhang Ruochen wanted to keep a low profile, the war would make him famous in the Eastern Region and he would become the newly emerging God’s favored son.

Many of God’s favored daughters swooned at Zhang Ruochen after seeing his upstanding and firm figure. They looked at him as if he was a god in flesh.

He fought against the four successors of Saint families and beat them down with his own power. In the whole Eastern Region, how many could do this?

Walking down the Stairway, Zhang Ruochen came to Lei Jing.

At this moment, Lei Jing was flushed and excited. He directly slapped Zhang Ruochen’s shoulder and said, “Good lord, you actually hid your strength. I was worried about you. But I didn’t think that you can break through your realm mid-

combat. Also, you were even proficient at the Divine Dragon Transformation, a martial technique of the Superior-class in Ghost Level.”

Zhang Ruochen could not explain the Divine Dragon Transformation to Lei Jing. He looked calm and said with a smile, “It was just a stroke of luck. I’m not sure if I can use it again. However, I have offended the four Saint families. I’m afraid that it will be difficult for me to walk freely in the Eastern Region in the future.”

Lei Jing stopped smiling. He looked dignified and said seriously, “As long as you show your talent, those Saint families and Half-Saint families will target you unless you are willing to be a coward. Otherwise, sooner or later, you will have face them.”

“But don’t worry. You have shown your talent today. I believe that the senior leaders of the Saint Academy have started to pay attention to you. As long as you get the support from the Saint Academy, people from Saint families will not hurt you.”

Lei Jing continued to say, “Actually, you should continue to climb the Stairway to Heaven. Do you know why those people desperately want to climb the Stairway after passing the assessment?”

Zhang Ruochen certainly knew the reason and he answered, “I know some reasons. It’s said that if a student can climb up to the 70th level, a Saint of the Saint Academy will accept him as a disciple. If he can climb up to the 80th level, he will become a disciple of a headmaster.”

Lei Jing was puzzled and asked, “Since you know the reason, why didn’t you give it a try? You have a chance to ascend the 80th level of the Stairway with your talent. Each of the 10 headmasters of the Saint Academy is extremely powerful. If you can become a disciple of any one of them, the four Saint families would never dare touch you.”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “Even if I don’t climb the Stairway, I’m afraid that many people have already prepared to accept me as their disciple. Besides, if I become a disciple of a headmaster, I will be a candidate for the young master of

the School of the Martial Market. Now, there are already several candidates. If I also become a candidate, wouldn't I offend a lot more people and cause even more trouble?"

"Also, headmasters of the Saint Academy are all superior and powerful. Even if I become their disciple, I'm afraid that they will not have much time to teach me. I'm willing to be a Half-Saint's disciple to have more learning opportunities."

Zhang Ruochen had his own reason for not climbing the Stairway.

With his capabilities, not to mention the 80th level, even the 90th level of the Stairway would not be hard for him to reach.

Once he climbed to the 90th level, what a sensation would he make?

If he did, his name would be reported to the headquarters of the School of the Martial Market, even Empress Chi Yao would possibly hear his name.

But that would undoubtedly spell disaster for him.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen could stop after reaching the 80th level. But that would be so out of his character.

If you were determined to do something, you need to put your best into it.

If you did not intend to put in your utmost, then you better just give up.

And Zhang Ruocheng needed to keep a low profile, at least Empress Chi Yao could not know his name.

The battle today caused a great sensation, but it was not serious enough to alert Empress Chi Yao, so the influence was still under control.

Lei Jing stopped persuading Zhang Ruochen. He sighed and said, "I climbed to the 49th level and was only one step away from the 50th one."

Although Zhang Ruochen gave up climbing the Stairway, other students from Omen Ridge were not like him. They were

still trying to climb up because they wanted to take this opportunity to test their talent and prove themselves.

Among those students, Chang Qiqi had the worst talent, but he still climbed to the 44th level of the Stairway.

Of course, if he could completely refine the Dragon's Blood in his body, he would be able to climb to a higher level.

The Dragon's Blood in Chen Xier's body had been completely refined so that she reached the 56 level. Her aptitude was comparable to the successors of some Half-Saint families.

Si Xingkong had climbed to the 58th Stairway, but he was still struggling to climb to the 60th stair.

Huang Yanchen's strength had been promoted, and her strength was slightly greater than Si Xingkong's. She had already on the 59th level and she was also trying to climb to the 60th Stairway.

The performance of Duanmu Xingling was unexpected— she had climbed to the 65th level of the Stairway and was only three stairs behind Luo Shuihan.

About three hours passed, all the students from Omen Ridge walked down the Stairway to Heaven and came to Lei Jing's side.

The final result was:

Chang Qiqi reached the 44th level of the Stairway.

Chen Xier reached the 56th level of the Stairway.

Si Xingkong reached the 59th level of the Stairway.

Huang Yanchen reached the 60th level of the Stairway.

Duanmu Xingling reached the 67th level of the Stairway.

Luo Shuihan reached the 44th level of the Stairway.

After Si Xingkong returned, he sighed and said, "It's such a pity. I was just one step away from the 60th level. But the step was a chasm which I could cross."

Huang Yanchen said, "Elder brother, your talent is stronger than mine, but you haven't fully refined the Dragon's Blood

yet. It will not be difficult for you to reach the 60th level of the Stairway after you refining the Dragon's Blood.”

Huang Yanchen understood that she had already taken many treasures that improved her physical constitution while she was refining the Dragon's Blood. It would be hard for her to enhance her physical quality anymore.

But Si Xingkong was different from her. He had not fully refined the Dragon's Blood, there was room to improve himself.

Lei Jing said, “Actually, with you guys' talent, you are not that far off from those successors of Saint families. However, your strength is much worse than theirs.”

“Master, we can't do anything about that. How old are we? How old are they? There is a two-realm gap between our strength and their strength, so how can we be compared to them? If I have another five years, I will reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. By then, I won't be afraid of them then,” Chang Qiqi said.

Everyone was in a good mood. Because they had beaten down those people of Saint families, and were currently basking in the limelight.

Especially Chang Qiqi, he was still excited about what he had achieved.

Zhang Ruochen intended to tamp down Chang Qiqi's pride, so he said, “Elder brother Chang, those successors of Saint families will reach a higher realm after five years, you will still not be an opponent of them unless you work harder than them.”

As a friend, he must know when to cheer him up when he has fallen to the rock-bottom.

But at the same time, he should also know when to appropriately rein him in when he is being overly proudful and arrogant.

Chang Qiqi smiled and said, “At that time, senior sister disciple Luo and you will help me. With your talent, they will be beaten down and kneel down to beg for mercy.”

Hearing these words, all of them stared at Luo Shuihan.

Only she had reached above the 70th level of the Stairway. The others were both envious and impressed.

But only Zhang Ruochen knew that Luo Shuihan had just practiced out the Saintly Being, so the advantage of the Saintly Being had not been completely showed. Otherwise, she would climb to a much higher level, the even 74th level of the Stairway would be easy.

The Saintly Beings were no joke. There were only a few of them in the entire Eastern region.

Lei Jing said, “You have all passed the first round of the assessment and you can choose which department you would like to go to. Meanwhile, you will participate in the second round of the assessment.”

“Of course I will choose the Knife Technique Department. If I can become a disciple of a Half-Saint in Knife Technique, then I will become a successor of a Half-Saint. Haha!” Chang Qiqi said with laughter.

Lei Jing stared at Chang Qiqi and reminded him, saying, “The Knife Technique Department, the Sword Technique Department, the Palm Technique Department, and the Punch Technique Department are the biggest department of the Saint Academy. They have the largest number of applicants and the competition is extremely fierce. I don’t worry about the others, but I’m just worried that you might not even pass the exam of the Knife Technique Department.”

“Amitabha!”

At this moment, a four-meter-tall fat monk silently appeared right next to them. He smiled and looked very kind, just like a “Maitreya”.

The “Maitreya” stared at Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong and said with a smile, “I sense a connection between them and Buddha. It’s best for them to apply for the Buddhism Department.”

# Chapter 393 - Half-Saints

## Accepted Apprentices

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

A connection with Buddha?

Apply for the Buddhism Department?

Chang Qiqi turned around to see the chubby monk. He was shocked at first glance. The monk was so tall that everyone only stood up to his thigh.

He's definitely not of normal human origins.

Moreover, his cultivation seems to be so unfathomable that no one can see through it.

After all, it's the Saint Academy, meeting a master was normal.

To be honest, Chang Qiqi did not even care about him. In his view, he had gotten the Dragon's Blood of Golden Dragon and reached the 44th Stairway, so he was a top-notch genius. If placed in Omen Ridge, he would be a legend in martial arts that would dominate everyone else.

His cultivation now was weaker than the monk's, but he would surely be able to surpass him in future.

Chang Qiqi walked for a couple laps around the monk and contemptuously smiled, "Monk, there is no difference between joining the Buddhism Department and becoming a monk. Who are you? My elder brother and I are God's favored sons. And we will drink wine, eat meat and make love with women. How could a mere Buddhism Department fit for people like us?"



He wanted to continue to say, but Lei Jing grabbed his neck and threw him back. Lei Jing yelled at him, “Shut up, do you know who is standing in front of you?”

Chang Qiqi was shocked by the strong power of Lei Jing. The loud yell of Lei Jing rang in his ears like thunder and made his scalp tingle.

“Who... who?”

Chang Qiqi was scared because he had never seen Master Lei this angry.

Lei Jing knelt on one knee and bowed to the monk. He said, “Disciple Lei Jing humbly greets Half-saint Alan.”

“Demi...saint...”

It seemed that Chang Qiqi’s eyeballs were going to bulge. He couldn’t tell that the monk was a Half-Saint.

“Greetings Half-Saint.”

Zhang Ruochen, Luo Shuihan, Si Xingkong, Duanmu Xingling, Huang Yanchen and Chen Xier immediately knelt on one knee to pay their respects to Half-saint Alan.

It was said that almost everyone in the Half-Saint Class could live up to at least 200 years. They were knowledgeable and had strong vitality. Besides, they could fight with dragons and phoenixes and open up Divine Temples to enjoy incenses of the myriad families.

People who could become Half-Saints were not only powerful. Their understanding of Holy Road, Martial Arts and Humanity were all crystal clear.

Simply practicing skills was not enough for a person to become a Half-Saint. If one wanted to become a Half-Saint, he must constantly learn from life and practice various martial arts and in the end, a Road of his own would eventually appear.

Therefore, people who reached the Half-Saint Class all possessed otherworldly strengths. Each of them was a peerless hero who had practiced the Martial Arts and the Holy Road to an extremely mysterious realm. Each of them was worthy of

being respected, admired and even worshipped by all the warriors.

“Dong!”

Chang Qiqi was scared, his legs became weak and he directly knelt on the ground. He quickly put his face on the ground, lifted his butt and said with a shaking voice, “Monk... no... Half-saint Alan, grandpa Half-Saint, I didn’t mean to say that. I really didn’t know about your identity, please punish me for my wrongs.”

Chang Qiqi wanted to cry, he immediately took back his pride and reevaluated himself.

“In the East Region Saint City, my cultivation is nothing in front of those real masters. I should be more modest.”

“Haha, please stand up! All of you.”

Half-saint Alan seemed to be easy-going. After he smiled and raised his arm, all the people were lifted by an invisible power and they stood up again.

Half-saint Alan’s eyes scanned through all of them, then he nodded and said, “If I’m not wrong, all of you have refined the Dragon’s Blood of Golden Dragon, haven’t you?”

It was hard to hide secrets in front of a Half-Saint. So everyone nodded.

Half-saint Alan took two steps forward and came to Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi. Then he said, “Golden Dragon is a wise ancestor of Buddhism. It’s not only powerful, but its wisdom and knowledge is the real treasure.”

“The Dragon’s Blood in both of your bodies has not yet been fully refined. If you practice my Buddhist doctrine, part of the wisdom and knowledge of Golden Dragon will be awakened, which will be beneficial for you to break through the Half-Saint realm.”

Before Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong could react, Lei Jing had understood the meaning of Half-saint Alan with his eyes glowing. He roared to them, saying, “Half-saint Alan wants to

accept you as his students, immediately kneel down and kowtow to Half-saint Alan.”

Both Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong were clever. After they knew what the Half-saint Alan meant, they were ecstatic.

“He is a Half-Saint and so many people would die to be the successor of a Half-Saint.”

“Master.”

When they were going to kneel down and salute again...

Half-saint Alan shook his head with a smile and said, “No hurry. If you want to be my student, you must pass three rounds of assessment. But before that, you two must apply for the Buddhism Department.”

“No problem, elder brother and I will go to Buddhism Department right now.”

“It is a great opportunity to have a chance to become a successor of a Half-Saint. Of course, this cannot be missed.”

Many Young Geniuses would fight tooth-and-nail with each other if it means they even get the sliver of a chance to become a monk. But of course, one who enters the Buddhism Department could only be regarded as a Buddhist disciple and not a fully fledged monk.

Fearing that Half-saint Alan would suddenly change his mind, Chang Qiqi and Si Xingkong immediately bade a farewell and then ran to the registration of the Buddhism Department.

Zhang Ruochen felt happy that they could be students of a Half-Saint. It meant that they would have a strong backer to shelter them in East Region Saint City.

Half-saint Alan deeply glanced at Zhang Ruochen and said profoundly with a smile, “Young man, you have the Dragon Pearl of Golden Dragon, right?”

Zhang Ruochen replied honestly, “Yes.”

Half-saint Alan nodded and inquired, “Would you like to join the Buddhism Department?”

“Half-saint Alan, is it right for you to grab my apprentice like this?” a woman’s voice resounded.

“Swoosh!”

A red light flashed past and fell on the shoulder of Half-saint Alan. Then it turned into a beautiful figure.

Zhang Ruochen stared at the left shoulder of Half-saint Alan and saw a mere ten-centimeter high woman donned in a red dress. Although she was small, she had a perfect body and peerless appearance.

She looked cold with a sword behind her back. She stared at Zhang Ruochen and said, “Zhang Ruochen, your sword technique had reached the Heart Integrated into Sword, so obviously, you should join the Sword Technique Department.”

Lei Jing had never seen this woman in the Saint Academy, so he did not know her identity.

However, he could feel the powerful strength of her, which was the aura that only a Half-Saint could have. So he immediately saluted again and said, “Student Lei Jing, greets Half-Saint.”

Another Half-Saint?

Zhang Ruochen and others immediately followed him to pay their respects.

“My name is Ling Shu.”

After Half-saint Lingshu simply introduced herself, she looked to Zhang Ruochen again and said, “I come to ask you, on behalf of my Master, if you want to be his apprentice?”

A Half-Saint was already quite formidable. How powerful must the Master of a Half-Saint be?

Zhang Ruochen respectfully saluted with joint hands and asked, “Pardon my imprudence, but could I know the name of your master?”

Half-saint Lingshu proudly answered, “My Master is one of the ten headmasters of the Saint Academy, Elder Xuanji. He is very interested in you and hopes that you can apply for the

Sword Technique Department. At the same time, he wishes that you can be his apprentice.”

After hearing what Half-saint Lingshu had said, even Half-saint Alan looked serious and did not dare to mention that he wanted to accept Zhang Ruochen as his apprentice anymore.

He wouldn't dare have any ideas on the person that Headmaster Xuanji wanted.

Lei Jing was shocked and promptly said, “Zhang Ruochen, Headmaster Xuanji is reputed as one of the three sword saints of the Eastern Region. His power is only inferior to the power of the first headmaster.”

“Actually, the first headmaster has long since stopped interfering with the affairs of the Saint Academy. He has been traveling over the world to perceive the supreme Holy Road. His movement and trace are secretive, and he has never been seen in the past 100 years. Therefore, Headmaster Xuanji can be said to be the most powerful and leading person in the Saint Academy.”

Huang Yanchen was happy for Zhang Ruochen that he could be taken of interest by Elder Xuanji. She quickly pulled the sleeve of Zhang Ruochen and said, “Zhang Ruochen, why are you hesitating? Come on. If you become the apprentice of Headmaster Xuanji, even the four Saint families won't dare to deal with you.”

Under the urging of everyone, Zhang Ruochen still had some concerns and worries.

He had so many secrets, which he may still had to hide from the Half-Saints.

However, could he hide them in front of such a powerful Elder? Zhang Ruochen was not sure at all.

Half-saint Lingshu was a bit speechless. If other students were to be recognized by a headmaster, they would be so excited to immediately kneel down and salute.

The man is still hesitant.

What's wrong with him?

Half-saint Lingshu thought that Zhang Ruochen was worried that Elder Xuanji had some hidden intentions, so she said, “Master already knows that you’ve refined the Dragon Pearl of Golden Dragon. Don’t worry, I’m not interested in your Dragon Pearl, let alone Master. If anyone dares to harass you, even if Master doesn’t stand for you, as your Senior sister apprentice, I will help you to resolve those problems.”

Half-saint Lingshu was very straightforward, for she feared that Zhang Ruochen may worry too much.

For headmasters of the Saint Academy, they would not use such an inferior method to seize treasure. Since Medieval Ancient Times, the development of the Saint Academy had relied on the tradition of selecting moralists and geniuses. So, it had a high reputation in Kunlun’s Field.

Zhang Ruochen replied with a smile, “I certainly trust Half-saint Lingshu and Headmaster Xuanji. But I haven’t passed the three rounds of assessment. It’s too early for me to officially become a student under the headmaster.”

Half-saint Lingshu nodded and said, “All right, I’ll come back to you after the three rounds of assessment.”

After Half-saint Alan and Half-saint Lingshu left, there were a few other Half-Saints appear who came to accept apprentices.

Refining the Dragon’s Blood of Golden Dragon means getting part of the inheritance of Golden Dragon. So obtaining warriors who had refined the Dragon’s Blood were naturally goals to fight for for the Half-Saints.

In the end, Chen Xier, Duanmu Xingling, and Huang Yanchen all respectively made an agreement with a Half-Saint– once they passed the three rounds of assessment, they would respectively become an apprentice of those Half-Saints.

(To be continued...)

# Chapter 394 - Thirteen

## Sword Techniques of Soul

### Chasing

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Everyone was invited by a Half-Saint to become their apprentice. Everyone except for Luo Shuihan.

Luo Xu, the forefather of Saint Luo Gentry, was originally from Saint Academy, so Luo Shuihan had been the successor of Luo Xu. Even if other Half-Saints wanted to apprentice Luo Shuihan, they would not succeed.

The Saint Academy was divided into 27 departments.

There were 18 departments in the Martial Arts and 9 in the Spiritual Power.

The 18 departments in the Martial Arts included Sword Technique Department, Knife Technique Department, Palm Technique Department, Fist Technique Department, Finger Technique Department, Spear Technique Department, Whip Technique Department, Club Technique Department, Buddhism Department, Taoism Department, and other departments.

The nine departments in the Spiritual Power included Weapon Crafting Department, Alchemy Department, Beast Taming Department, Sorcery Department, Thunderbolt Department, Wind and Fire Department and other departments.

All roads would eventually lead to greatness.

After reaching a certain realm, one could become a Saint whether he practiced the sword technique or the knife

technique.

The pace of practice would be slower as the warrior stepped into the Heaven Realm. A genius warrior also needed to spend a lot of time to break through a realm.

If warriors continued to practice different Martial Arts at the same time, they would only make limited progress. So those who broke through the Fish-dragon Realm were extraordinary. Almost nobody could break through the realm of Half-Saint.

Therefore, the most important role of Saint Academy was to allow warriors to choose a technique suitable for themselves and abandon all other distractions.

Meanwhile, the brilliant masters would teach their apprentices and provide them with the best environment to make the most of their potentials.

Only through this way would the warriors be able to improve their skills faster than others.

Of course, Zhang Ruochen chose the Sword Technique Department.

Huang Yanchen and Duanmu Xingling also chose the Sword Technique Department, while Chen Xier chose the Finger Technique Department and Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi chose the Buddhism Department.

Zhang Ruochen originally thought that Luo Shuihan would choose the Fist Technique Department, but she chose the Taoism Department instead.

According to Luo Shuihan, the inheritance of Saint Luo Gentry seemed to have something to do with Taoism. Besides, predecessor Luo Xu advised her to choose the Taoism Department.

As the largest department of Saint Academy, Sword Technique Department had the largest number of applicants. There was still a long queue registering after the first round of assessment.

There were no lecturers at the registration office. Instead, there were only six previous Saints of the Saint Academy—the elder



brothers and sisters, each of them being a top master.

Zhang Rouchen could see through the martial cultivations of them with ease.

Five of them reached the realm of the Completion of Heaven Realm and one reached the realm of the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Of course, the ordinary warriors who have reached the Completion of Heaven Realm were incomparable to those disciples of Saint Academy for their training and experience accumulated over a decade.

Having finished signing up, Zhang Ruochen, Huang Yanchen, and Duanmu Xingling got the scrolls for the second round of exam.

Xu Hai, the disciple who reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, was a disciple of a Half-Saint. Although he was already 45 years old, he looked like he was his twenties. He wore a golden disciple's robe, and had a deep and unpredictable temperament.

For warriors who reached the Fish-dragon Realm, they always looked like they were twenty years old even if their real age was forty.

Standing on the stone table, Xu Hai infused Genuine Qi into his voice and said, "More than 60,000 people from different places come here to take examination this year. Every one of you is a genius in your own right. With your qualifications, most of you can pass the first round of examination."

"Sword Technique Department, the largest department of Saint Academy, attracts nearly one-third people to sign up.

However, the Sword Technique Department recruits just 5,000 people each time, which means that the competition of Sword Technique Department is the fiercest and over 70% of warriors will not pass all three examinations."

"I will ask again before showing the examination paper. Are you guys really ready to apply for the Sword Technique Department? There are still opportunities to select other departments, such as Spear Technique Department, Whip

Technique Department and Club Technique Department, where there are less competition.”

The Saint Academy only recruited disciples once every ten years; one must be cautious when making their decision in choosing a department.

Missing this chance, one might too old to apply again later.

The Saint Academy’s wide age limit aimed to give a chance to those senior warriors who were well-prepared, but they must be under 45 years old.

There was no chance to enter Saint Academy for warriors above 45-year-old, even if they were of high potential.

After hearing the words of Xu Hai, some disciples who were not confident in their own strength put down the scroll silently and left the registration office of the Sword Technique Department, deciding to apply for other departments.

Seeing those disciples who left, Xu Hai smiled coldly and shook his head.

Zhang Ruochen said in a whisper, “The exam has already begun. Just now, brother Xu Hai is testing the determination and self-confidence of people. Those who can not bear the pressure or have no confidence in themselves have already left.”

Xu Hai seemed to hear Zhang Ruochen’s voice. He looked in Zhang Ruochen’s direction, showing his unfriendly look, and said, “Now, I will announce the content of the second exam. The scrolls in your hands record a set of sword technique of superior Spiritual Stage, named ‘Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing’ .”

“Although this sword technique is in superior Spiritual Stage, it is hard to practice. It definitely reaches the peak of martial technique in sword techniques of superior Spiritual Stage, which is enough to compete with sword techniques of inferior Ghost Level.”

“Now, all of you have three days to practice the sword technique. The passing mark of the second exam is to

successfully practice the three swords of ‘Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing’.”

“So, this exam will test your comprehension capabilities and talent on sword techniques.”

“Were you to fail to complete the task, it would mean that your comprehension abilities are too low, or your qualifications are not good enough. So you cannot enter the Sword Technique Department of Saint Academy.”

The sword technique of superior Spiritual Stage was a mysterious martial technique even for warriors of the Heaven Realm. It entailed a lot of time perceive and practice—three or five days won’t do.

This round of exam was quite strict and a large number of people would not be able to succeed.

One of the disciples stood up and said, “Since it is to evaluate everyone’s comprehensive capability, wouldn’t it be unfair if other students had already comprehended the technique in advance?”

What he asked was the question which the other disciples wanted to ask.

Xu Hai said seriously, “Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing is created just seven days ago by a Half-Saint in the Sword Technique Department. Besides, it has been kept within Saint Academy and never leaked out. Therefore, no one could’ve gotten the chance to practice beforehand. Everyone should rest assured about that.”

“In addition, in order to encourage you to perceive the sword technique, the elder presbyter of Sword Technique Department will give a reward of a ‘Sword Heart Pill’ to the best performing disciple in this exam.”

“BAM!”

All disciples were astounded.

Sword Heart Pill, a seventh-class pill, was worth over one million Spiritual Crystals—an astronomically expensive price.

Many warriors of Fish-dragon Realm could not afford it, and it was difficult to get even if you had a lot of money.

The main function of Sword Heart Pill was to help warriors gather the sword technique “Heart of the Sword” to reach the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword.

Of course, Sword Heart Pill is just an external assistance. Reaching the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword must depend on warriors’ comprehension of sword techniques.

Even so, Sword Heart Pill was such a treasure that all warriors under Half-Saints competed for it. Duanmu Xingling and Huang Yanchen’s beautiful eyes were also sparkling upon hearing about it.

Even if it could not let them reach the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, taking a Sword Heart Pill could let warriors make great progress in the realm of sword techniques.

Only Zhang Ruochen stayed calm. After all, he had already reached the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, so he didn’t think much of the Sword Heart Pill.

The disciples below opened the scrolls and raced against time to perceive the “Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing.”

Zhang Ruochen also opened the scroll. As expected, there were more than 1,000 tiny words of cultivation method engraved on it.

13 sword pictures and corresponding 13 sword techniques were at the bottom of the cultivation method.

At a glance, 13 sword-holding people began to swinging swords on the scroll, as if they were alive.

“A set of peak-level superior sword technique of Spiritual Stage is absolutely a first-class treasure in Omen Ridge. It will cause lots of scrambles and blood once it appears. On the other hand, Saint Academy can just take a set of sword technique for all disciples who merely sign up here to perceive.”

The warriors who come here were disciples of the School of the Martial Market, so Saint Academy did not care that the sword technique would be spread out at all.

With his comprehension of sword techniques and Spiritual Power, it was easy for Zhang Rouchen to practice martial techniques of superior Spiritual Stage.

It only took half a day for Zhang Rouchen to fully perceive the first three sword techniques. All subtleties of sword movement, were understood well by his Skyeye.

However, he continued to perceive the fourth sword technique instead of practicing the sword techniques at once.

There were 13 sword techniques in Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing and Zhang Rouchen was ready to perceive all of them to win the first place in the second round.

Even if he did not need Sword Heart Pill, he could still give it to someone else as a gift.

Standing by Xu Hai in the distance, Nie Wenlong stared in the direction of Zhang Rouchen with cold eyes. He transmitted his voice to Xu Hai, “My brother, that man is Zhang Rouchen, who has reached Heart Integrated into Sword and defeated the descendants of four powerful Saint families by himself on the Stairway to Heaven. Your younger brother, Xu Qing, is severely injured by him. This time Saint Xu Gentry has lost a lot of reputation.”

As a previous Saint, Nie Wenlong had been practicing in Saint Academy for ten years, and his martial cultivation had already reached the Completion of Heaven Realm.

Although he did not break through the Fish-dragon Realm, he entered the Heaven Board, which meant that he was powerful.

Xu Hai gave a cold smile and said, “So what? Compared with the powerful Saint families, he is nothing.”

Xu Hai was the descendant of the last generation and his talent was even higher than that of Xu Qing, so he looked down upon Zhang Rouchen. It would be quite easy to kill Zhang Rouchen off for Xu Hai with his current strength.

# Chapter 395 - Practicing Sword Techniques

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The second round of testing was three days long. All of the students were required to stay in the Saint Academy and perceive sword techniques.

Only after the test was complete were they allowed to leave.

Two days time passed very quickly.

Xu Hai had his hands behind his back and his eyes were cold and sharp. He surveyed the examination field and asked Nie Wenlong, “Which move has Xu Canglan reached?”

Nie Wenlong’s expression was very respectful and he said, “In reply to elder brother, the eighth move.”

Xu Hai nodded with satisfaction and said, “Xu Canglan is the second master of this generation from Saint Xu Gentry. His sword technique attainment is very high and should have reached the Peak of the Sword Following the Heart Realm a long time ago. Seven days ahead of time, I had gotten the cultivation method for the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing from the master and gave it to him. He indeed has not let me down. The eighth sword, that is very good.”

The person hosting the second round of the tests of the Sword Technique Department was Xu Hai’s master, Demi-saint Lingyuan.

The Thirteen Swords Technique of Soul Chasing was a sword technique developed by Demi-saint Lingyuan seven days ago.

As a genius of Saint Xu Gentry, as well as a disciple of Demi-saint Lingyuan, seven days ago he had received the cultivation method for the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing and had given it to the second genius of this generation in Saint Xu Gentry, Xu Canglan.

That is to say, before the start of the Saint Academy's examination, Xu Canglan had already had seven days to perceive the cultivation method, and was just about finished studying the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing.

Now, he just had to practice the sword movements to merge them and the cultivation method into one, and then he would have succeeded in practicing this sword technique.

Having spent two days on them, Xue Canglan had already successfully practiced seven moves and was now just beginning the eighth.

“There is still one day left. Xu Canglan should be able to successfully practice the 10th move. The Sword Heart Pill is already in my pocket.”

Thinking of this, a slight curve appeared at the corner of Xu Hai's mouth.

The reason that he told Xu Canglan of the cultivation method of Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing early was because he wanted Xu Canglan to win first place in the second round of the examination and help him win the Sword Heart Pill.

20 years ago, Xu Hai had reached the Peak of the Sword Following the Heart Realm, and his cultivation of sword techniques became deeper and deeper, but he just could not converge the Heart of the Sword.

Thus, he had to obtain the Sword Heart Pill and break into the Heart Integrated into Sword Realm.

And after tomorrow, the Sword Heart Pill was his.

Nie Wenlong stared in Zhang Ruochen's direction and said, “Elder brother Xu Hai, Zhang Ruochen is in the Heart Integrated into Sword Realm, his sword technique practice is

probably very fast. I think he will become a strong opponent of Xu Canglan.”

Xu Hai gave a cold sneer and showed a disdainful expression. “So what if his realm is high. It’s only a total of three days, and he is just a mortal and not a Saint, so how could he practice a sword technique successfully so quickly? Don’t you see? He is still perceiving the cultivation method and hasn’t started sword practice.”

Practicing sword techniques was split into two parts: perceiving the cultivation method, and practicing the sword movements.

The cultivation method included the coordination of the footwork, the running of the Genuine Qi, and the key secret of the sword technique.

Only after clearly perceiving these three things could one start practicing the sword movements.

The purpose of practicing the sword movements was so that the sword technique, the warrior, the footwork, and the running of the Genuine Qi in the warrior’s body could meld into one being.

The sword technique and the warrior became one whole body and reached the point of doing as one wished.

When one struck, there was no need for thought. The sword technique had already been executed and killed those who were under your sword.

For example, Zhang Ruochen had practiced some sword techniques in his previous life. Arriving in this life, he had to practice again so that the sword techniques could meld into one with this body and reach the Realm of Following the Heart, or even Integrating.

In other words, practicing the sword technique until it was part of the body just like the hands, feet, eyes, and nose. Only then was it the Realm of Following the Heart.

Practicing the sword technique until the flesh of the body melded with the soul, only then was that considered the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword.



If that point was not reached, then your practice would always only have the shape of the sword movement and you could only be considered a rash man, and would not be able to become a swordsman.

Just as Xu Hai's words finished, suddenly, Zhang Ruochen, who had been sitting cross-legged, began to practice the sword movements.

Zhang Ruochen used his hand as a sword and pointed outward, then shortly after, seven shadowy streaks of his hand appeared and split apart, like a heavenly girl scattering flowers, and flew toward seven points in the void space.

“Crack! Crack!”

Seven Qi explosions resounded in a row, just like the sound of seven sword tips hitting against a stone wall.

“Elder brother Xu Hai, Zhang Ruochen has already begun to the practice of sword movements. He just demonstrated the first sword of the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing, ‘Haunting Septuple Kill’,” Nie Wenlong said.

Xu Hai's expression darkened and he immediately turned around and gazed at Zhang Ruochen.

It was already the last day, and not only Zhang Ruochen, but the other students were also rising and beginning their practice of sword movements.

After Zhang Ruochen had executed the first move, he became like a stone again, sitting cross-legged on the ground. He did not move and did not continue practicing any movements.

I never knew that, after reaching the Realm of Heart Integrated into Sword, one would only need to thoroughly perceive the cultivation method and then one could use the Heart of the Sword and complete the practice of sword movements in one's mind. Furthermore, it could reach the Realm of Success.

Earlier, Zhang Ruochen had been practicing the move “Haunting Septuple Kill” in his mind. When he had tried it just now, it had indeed succeeded.

Zhang Ruochen continued to enjoy this marvelous realm.

In his Qi Sea, the Heart of the Sword dissolved into a human shape and began to practice the second move, “Soul-breaking Windwhisper”.

In the distance, Nie Wenlong saw Zhang Ruochen not moving at all and furrowed his brows. “What is that guy doing? He only demonstrated one move and then he doesn’t move again. There is only this last day left, is he not going to start practicing the sword movements?”

Xu Hai smiled coldly and said, “Ignore him, he probably thinks too highly of himself and wants to thoroughly perceive all 13 cultivation methods of the sword technique before starting to practice the moves. It is a pity, there is not that much time left for him.”

They had not reached the Heart Integrated into Sword so, of course, they did not understand the marvels of the Heart Integrated into Sword. They had no idea that Zhang Ruochen had long thoroughly perceived all 13 moves of the sword technique and was now already practicing the moves in his mind.

In the other direction, Xu Canglan of Saint Xu Gentry had already successfully practiced the eighth move and had begun the ninth.

How is that student from Saint Xu Gentry so powerful? He’s already successfully practiced eight moves, is he that talented?

Duanmu Xingling was very unhappy, her round eyes stared closely in the direction of Xu Canglan.

At the Stairway to Heaven, Duanmu Xingling had fought against Xu Canglan and did feel that he was particularly powerful. At least, if she released her sealed cultivation, she absolutely could have crossed two realms and defeated Xu Canglan.

However, right now, she had already put all her power into perceiving the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing and had only succeeded to seven swords.

Did a genius student from Saint Xu Gentry have more comprehension ability than she did, a heretical Saintness?

There must be a problem, I don't believe his comprehension ability is really that high.

Duanmu Xingling was very unhappy and continued to perceive the sword technique with all her power, trying to surpass Xu Canglan. If he surpassed her, that would be so embarrassing.

The three days finally ended.

On this day, the main examiner, Demi-saint Lingyuan, personally visited and sat in the highest position.

Beside Demi-saint Lingyuan, there hovered a jade lotus platform. The three-inch tall Demi-saint Lingshu sat cross-legged on the platform.

She wore an outfit of red and carried a sword. Her body was hidden behind a swirl of white fog, like an immortal from another world.

Although Demi-saint Lingshu was not very old, she was the disciple of Headmaster Xuanji. Her position in the Saint Academy was above that of Demi-saint Lingyuan.

Even Demi-saint Lingyuan treated with her great respect and did not dare to slight her.

All of the students who had registered for the Sword Technique Department ascended the martial arts platform and tried their best to demonstrate the sword technique that they had perceived, attempting to show their most outstanding condition.

If they could be favored by a Half-Saint and become a descendant, that would be reaching the heavens in one step.

The first student to ascend the martial arts platform was a young girl. Her cultivation was at the Initial Stage of the Heaven Realm.

“Haunting Septuple Kill.”

“Soul-breaking Windwhisper.”

“Soul-repose Shadowing.”

The girl tried to demonstrate the fourth move but failed and retreated.

However, successfully practicing three techniques was a minimal pass, so she passed the second round of the examinations.

The second student to mount the martial arts platform had a cultivation that reached the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. He was considered a first-class superior among the students who were participating in the Saint Academy's examination.

However, he failed. He barely managed to successfully practice two sword techniques and was not able to enter the Saint Academy in the end.

“To be able to reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm before he was 35, his talent is already very high. It is a pity that his comprehension ability of sword techniques is so lacking and has not reached the standards to be a student at the Saint Academy.”

Many people felt regret for him but at the same time, they sighed with feeling. The threshold for the Saint Academy was very high, even ace geniuses might be turned away.

Over the following tests, at least 70 percent of the students were able to demonstrate three moves of the sword technique and pass the exam.

20 percent of the students were only able to demonstrate two moves of the sword technique.

And less than 10 percent were only able to demonstrate one of the moves of the sword technique.

Among them, there were three to five people who could not even demonstrate one move.

However, even so, it was clear that the students who had participated in the Saint Academy examination were all of a very high quality, and all were aces from the cream of the crop.

If a warrior with a normal talent in the Heaven Realm were asked to practice such a deep sword martial technique like the

Thirteen Swords Technique of Soul Chasing, never mind in three days, even if they were given 30 days, they still might not be able to successfully practice even one move from that technique.

Through the sword practice, it was also possible to see the different levels of the students' comprehension abilities.

There were almost 1,000 students practicing sword techniques here, and about 700 of them were able to practice three moves of the sword technique. About 80 people were able to practice four moves. And only 10 were able to practice five moves.

There was not a single person who could do six moves.

Only one descendant of a Saint from a powerful family was able to practice seven moves, which was the most outstanding result.

“Someone actually practiced seven moves of the sword technique. I never knew that among those powerful Saint families there were geniuses with such high comprehension abilities.” Duanmu Xingling glanced toward Huang Yanchen and said, “Sister Chen, how many moves have you practiced successfully?”

“Five moves,” Huang Yanchen said.

In terms of comprehension ability, Huang Yanchen could only be considered at the Peak, but had not reached the Incredible Level.

To perceive seven moves in just three days, that was an incredible skill. Even in the eyes of the Half-saints, it was a very good result.

(To be continued...)

# Chapter 396 - The 10th Move and the 11th Move

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Duanmu Xingling fluttered her eyes and stared at Zhang Ruochen. In a sweet voice, she asked, “You?”

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “It should be at the Succeed Level, I think!”

“All 13 moves have reached the Succeed Level?” Duanmu Xingling asked in surprise.

Zhang Ruochen nodded.

Although Zhang Ruochen had not demonstrated the sword technique, Duanmu Xingling did not doubt his words at all. She only felt very unsatisfied in her heart, stamping her feet, she said coldly, “Freak.”

It was at this moment that Zhang Ruochen’s gaze focused on the martial arts platform and saw a familiar beautiful woman appearing in the center of the platform.

Seeing that woman, Huang Yanchen’s eyes became cold and she said, “Enemies really do walk a narrow road. I never thought she would also come to the Sword Technique Department.”

At this moment, the woman who mounted the martial arts platform was Xue Yingrou.

Xue Yingrou’s talent was very high as was her comprehension ability. She had successfully practiced five moves and shocked the other students.

“What a beautiful woman, she’ll probably become the flower of the Sword Technique Department in the future.”

“Not only does she have a startling beauty, but her comprehension ability and practice are both very high. If I could get close to her, even if it cost me 10 years of my life, it would well be worth it.”

...

Zhang Ruochen nodded, Xue Yingrou’s comprehension ability was indeed very high.

In the beginning, he had to only gently point out some things to Xue Yingrou and she immediately compensated for the lack in her sword technique and rose to another level in the cultivation of her sword technique.

Huang Yanchen saw that Zhang Ruochen had long been focusing on Xue Yingrou on the martial arts platform, and he had even been nodding his head. She felt very unhappy in her heart as, with a cold sneer, she leaped up and also landed on the martial arts platform.

In terms of beauty, Huang Yanchen and Xue Yingrou could be said to be almost on par. With her appearance, the eyes of the students below all lit up.

Another department level beauty had appeared.

When Huang Yanchen finished performing the five moves of the sword technique, a loud applause broke out from below.

“Another five moves and another beauty, will there be two flowers in the Sword Technique Department this year?”

“I must do my best and, no matter the cost, I must pass the third round of the exam and become a Saint of the Saint Academy. For nothing else but those two beauties.”

...

After Huang Yanchen left the martial arts platform, Xu Hai gestured to Xu Canglan to show that he could make his move.

Xu Canglan was the second genius of this generation from Saint Xu Gentry. He was only 28 and had already reached the

Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. His steps as he mounted the martial arts platform appeared to be very steady.

“Swish!”

With his long sword leaving its sheath, Xu Canglan’s arm extended and the first move was struck out quickly.

Moving like floating clouds and a flowing river, he danced through the sword movements. In the space of a breath, he had already displayed 10 moves of the sword technique and had returned his sword to its sheath.

Xu Canglan bowed in the direction of the two Half-Saints and said, “My talent is limited, I have only practiced these 10 moves.”

The students below had already seen Xu Canglan perform the 10 moves, so they had been prepared. They were not shocked, they just felt very inferior.

Among them, one of the students who had performed five moves said with a sigh, “I am from the Martial Market School in the Shilong Commandery, and I am considered a top genius, even the Palace Master has praised me many times. After coming to the Saint Academy, I have realized how petty my previous glories have been. Compared to Xu Canglan, I have far to go.”

Another student who had also practiced five moves also gave a long sigh and said, “Give me another three days and perhaps I can practice 10 moves.”

“My so-called talent is not worth mentioning in front of Xu Canglan.”

It was not only the students, even Demi-saint Lingshu, who sat on her jade lotus platform, was slightly surprised. After closely considering Xu Canglan, she said, “I never expected that Saint Xu Gentry would give birth to such an incredible talent. To have practiced 10 moves in three days, even if I were in the Heaven Realm I wouldn’t be able to do it. However, his sword technique is still inexperienced and not strong enough. He is still very far away from the Realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword.”



Demi-saint Lingshu, of course, did not know that Xu Canglan had received the cultivation method for the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing seven days ahead of time. She just thought that Xu Canglan had incredible comprehension ability.

Originally, Demi-saint Lingshu had come to watch mostly to see Zhang Ruochen's performance. Xu Canglan could be considered an unexpected surprise.

Although Demi-saint Lingyuan had guessed at what had probably happened, the exam question had leaked from his mouth, so of course, he could not say anything.

He said, "The students in this round all have very high talents, surpassing the previous round. In the last round, there were no geniuses at Xu Canglan's level."

Demi-saint Linghu also nodded her head.

Xu Hai heard the praise that the two Half-Saints had for Xu Canglan and felt a secret joy in his heart. It looked like the Sword Heart Pill already belonged to him.

Duanmu Xingling huffed coldly, she did not believe that Xu Canglan's comprehension ability was that high.

Thus, after Xu Canglan had left the platform, she immediately went up and began practicing the sword moves.

11 moves.

Duanmu Xingling went straight ahead and demonstrated 11 moves of the sword technique. Furthermore, her speed at demonstrating the sword technique was even faster than Xu Canglan's. It was almost possible to see the streaks of a human figure.

In the end, 11 streaks of human shadows overlapped and formed Duanmu Xingling's body.

"Boom!"

The entire audience shook once again.

"I'm done, that's too depressing! She is so young and, yet, can already participate in the Saint Academy's examination. She even demonstrated 11 moves."

The genius student who had demonstrated five moves earlier had already taken a blow from Xu Canglan and had now taken another blow. They could not accept this reality and almost fainted.

Duanmu Xingling looked to be a girl of about 15 or 16. In the eyes of the crowd, her age was definitely under 20.

Too young!

Many of the genius students felt embarrassed and thought of immediately escaping from the Saint Academy. They felt that they had absolutely no right to enter the Saint Academy.

Among them, the people who had taken the greatest hits were, of course, Xu Hai and Xu Canglan. They had always seen Zhang Ruochen as the biggest threat and did not expect Duanmu Xingling to pop up halfway.

The almost-at-hand Sword Heart Pill had been snatched by Duanmu Xingling.

Xu Hai's eyes revealed a desire for murder—he wished he could break Duanmu Xingling into tens of thousands of pieces.

Damn. Damn.

Xu Canglan was able to perform 10 moves because he knew about the test ahead of time and had 10 days, rather than three, to practice the sword technique.

Other than Xu Canglan, the most talented student had only been able to practice seven moves, and they were a descendant of a powerful Saint family. Their fame had long traveled far and wide, they were the first to be listed on the Eastern Region Report.

Who the hell was Duanmu Xingling?

No one had heard of her name before, where had she come from?

The eyes of the two Half-Saints were also shining, their gazes converged on Duanmu Xingling's body.

Demi-saint Lingshu said, “Her comprehension ability is very high, and her sword realm is above that of Xu Canglan’s. She is probably not far from the Heart Integrated into Sword. If she takes the Sword Heart Pill, she will have the opportunity to break into the Realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword.”

Although Xu Canglan had performed 10 moves, his sword technique realm could not be hidden from the superior Half-Saint class. In one glance, they could see that he was some distance from Duanmu Xingling.

After seeing Duanmu Xingling perform the sword technique, a trace of doubt was revealed in Demi-saint Lingshu’s eyes. She felt that it was not logical that Xu Canglan would be able to perform 10 moves. Perhaps someone had leaked the exam question ahead of time?

This matter was a concern to a Half-Saint because, after all, Demi-saint Lingshu did not dare to report it lightly. She could only suppress the suspicion in her heart.

Zhang Ruochen said, “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu has been deeply hidden. Such powerful comprehension power is not something that normal people can achieve.”

If Zhang Ruochen had not reached the Realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword, even he could not promise that he could do better than Duanmu Xingling.

Just comparing their comprehension abilities, he and Duanmu Xingling were almost on par.

Huang Yanchen also gently nodded her head. She suddenly felt that Duanmu Xingling had become very unfamiliar—it was like she had never known the real Duanmu Xingling.

After Duanmu Xingling left the platform, Zhang Ruochen also mounted the martial arts platform.

As he passed by Duanmu Xingling, Zhang Ruochen said to her in a low voice, “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, perhaps I have already guessed your identity.”

Hearing Zhang Ruochen’s words, Duanmu Xingling’s proud figure shook slightly. Her eyes revealed complicated emotions like fear, struggle, relief, and worry.

She did not know whether or not Zhang Ruochen had truly guessed her identity. If Zhang Ruochen already knew, how would he treat her in the future?

Zhang Ruochen would definitely not report it to the Saint Academy, Duanmu Xingling was sure of this point.

But, could they still maintain their current relationship?

It was not until now that Duanmu Xingling finally felt the losses and gains. She felt very regretful and that she should have told him the truth earlier.

For some reason, she truly cared about what Zhang Ruochen thought.

In a flash, she guessed countless outcomes. And in the end, her face had become very pale like she had just gone through a major illness.

Zhang Ruochen mounted the martial arts platform.

Through the battle of the Stairway to Heaven, Zhang Ruochen had already become famous. Many people recognized him and knew that he had practiced to the Realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword.

“How many moves do you think Zhang Ruochen has successfully practiced? Any chance that it could be more than Xu Canglan and Duanmu Xingling?”

“Bro, that is the Heart Integrated into Sword. How many people have reached the Heart Integrated into Sword in the Heaven Realm? I think he’s practiced at least 10 moves successfully, if not more.”

“I’m not sure about that. Zhang Ruochen may not have reached the Realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword because his comprehension ability is high. I heard that he received the inheritance of Buddhist Emperor. Perhaps he took the Dragon Sarira and that’s how he entered the Realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword.”

...

Zhang Ruochen stood in the center of the martial arts platform and called out his name. Following that, he squeezed his index

and middle fingers together and ran all of the Genuine Qi in his body.

“Haunting Septuple Kill.”

Zhang Ruochen slowly lifted his arm, and with his hand as the sword and at a very slow speed, he struck out with one finger.

“Swish!”

Streaks of sword breath, with his arm as the center, converged and became seven shapeless sword shadows and flew out.

Seeing Zhang Ruochen’s slow speed, the students below did not understand.

“How can you kill an enemy if you execute the sword technique so slowly?”

“Does this count as reaching the Succeed Level?”

“Perhaps the Heart Integrated into Sword does not live up to its fame?”

Countless questions arose.

They were inevitable. Who told Zhang Ruochen to move so slowly to the point that it did not look like he was executing a sword technique?

If anyone looked closely, they would discover that every move that Zhang Ruochen executed was extremely perfect, without any flaws. It was almost more perfect than the original sword technique movements.

However, normal people did not have this power of perception.

On hand, only the two Half-Saints and Xu Hai, who had reached the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, could infer anything from what they saw.

“Perhaps it is... the Perfection of Martial Arts?”

Xu Hai’s expression changed. His eyes revealed a disbelieving shock.

# Chapter 397 - The Battlefield of Primitive World

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Martial techniques were divided into four realms.

They were Beginner level, Small Success, succeed, and the Perfection of Martial Arts.

Previously, the sword techniques the genius students had demonstrated were in succeed level. Whether they demonstrated three moves or more, none reached the Perfection of Martial Arts.

In reality, few people were able to polish a set of sword techniques to the Perfection of Martial Arts. Only those warriors who spent decades cultivating a particular set of sword techniques were capable of such feat.

But who would spend so much time polishing one set of sword techniques?

With that much time, they could have practiced a more superior level of sword technique instead.

Of course, if one could polish a sword technique until the Perfection of Martial Arts, the sword technique would undergo great changes. Its power would grow greatly, its exquisiteness clearer. The technique would rise to a new level.

Take the Thirteen Sword Techniques of Soul Chasing as an example. It was originally a Peak sword technique of the Superior class of the Spiritual Stage, but its power would be stronger than certain sword techniques in the Inferior Class of the Ghost Level once it was polished to the Perfection of Martial Arts.

“Soul-breaking Windwhisper.”

Zhang Ruochen very slowly began demonstrating the second move of the sword technique. He moved even slower than he did for the first move.

“What is Zhang Ruochen doing? Can he do it or not?”

Huang Yanchen glared with her almond eyes, angered. She felt that he wasn't taking the demonstration seriously and was playing around.

She failed to see the profoundness of his sword technique even with her cultivation.

Some of the students began to feel drowsy watching Zhang Ruochen.

“Soul-repose Shadowing.”

Continuing to move at an incredibly slow speed, Zhang Ruochen finally completed his demonstration of the third move of the sword technique.

He then stopped and didn't continue to practice.

“Why did he stop? Did he only finish learning three moves?”

From below came a lot of questioning sounds.

“He only managed to execute three moves of the so-called Heart Integrated into Sword and so slowly at that! He really doesn't live to his name.”

“Looks like he simply lucked out in receiving Buddhist Emperor's inheritance and reached Heart Integrated into Sword.”

The envious students were being sarcastic on purpose. They were implying that Zhang Ruochen was merely luckier than them. If they were the one receiving Buddhist Emperor's inheritance, they would also achieve the same things that he did.

It was true that Zhang Ruochen had only practiced these three moves to the Perfection of Martial Arts. The rests were all in the succeed.

Since he hadn't practiced them to the realm of perfection, there was no need to demonstrate them.

"In just three short days, he's able to practice the sword technique to the Perfection of Martial Arts. This child is indeed in the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword," Demi-saint Lingyuan praised.

Demi-saint Lingshu nodded. "It's even more incredible for him to have perfected three moves than polishing the entire set to the succeed. He's more genius than I am."

Zhang Ruochen had undoubtedly gained the first place in the second round of the examination.

The round continued.

The students who were done demonstrating their sword technique left the Saint Academy in succession and returned to the Courier Station of Martial Market. There, they waited for the results of the second round and the details of the third round at the same time.

Si Xingkong, Chang Qiqi, Luo Shuihan, and Chen Xier had also finished the second round of the examination so they gathered and went to the biggest restaurant in the Seventh District, the Saint Music Pavilion, and had a celebratory feast.

The Saint Music Pavilion was extremely expensive. Only Half-Saint families and disciples of powerful Saint families could dine at such an extravagant restaurant.

Chen Xier called herself the host and so she was buying.

At the celebratory feast, Luo Shuihan revealed some information to everyone. "The third round may be different than usual. It's likely it won't be held in the Saint Academy or even in Kunlun's Field."

Since the forefather of Saint Luo Gentry was Saint Luo Xu, Luo Shuihan's information was certainly not baseless.

Chang Qiqi had sobered a little and quickly asked, "If not in Kunlun's Field, where would it be?"

Luo Shuihan pressed her lips together into a slight smile but said nothing.



“The Battlefield of Primitive World,” Zhang Ruochen said, wearing a thoughtful expression.

Everyone’s expression changed.

“No way! The Battlefield of Primitive World is so dangerous that only Monks of the Fish-dragon Realm and the existence of Half-Saint class stand a chance there. If warriors of the Heaven Realm go, they’re no different than cannon fodder,” Huang Yanchen said solemnly.

“I’ve heard only some of the news the forefather sent. Right now, the High-level of the Saint Academy hadn’t made a decision if they’ll send us there. It’s never a bad thing to prepare ahead of time,” Luo Shuihan said.

Everyone nodded in response.

They went to purchase healing Pills, Genuine Martial Arms, and amulets after the feast, preparing a large number of resources and treasures. Since they were heading into the Battlefield of Primitive World, naturally they had to be completely armed to the teeth.

In the Saint Academy, in a deep and serene abode of fairies and immortals.

This abode was very close to the holy meridian of the Saint Academy and the Spiritual Qi here was relatively thick. There seemed to be Spiritual Qi spreading out from the surface of the rock face.

TAP! TAP!

Crisp footsteps rang out in the abode.

Xu Hai approached the bottom of the abode and knelt on one knee, bending his body in a bow. “Forefather, in the second round of the examination, Zhang Ruochen actually practiced the sword technique until the Perfection of Martial Arts. This child not only has outstanding talent but has a terrifying comprehension ability. Coupled with the fact that he has refined the Golden Dragon’s Dragon Pearl, it’s unfathomable what more he’ll achieve in the future. If we don’t kill him now, he’ll certainly spell disaster for us in the future.”

Demi-saint Sandao was seated cross-legged above him on a stone chair, casting a giant human-shaped shadow and emitting a terrifying power. He sneered coldly. “Being Lei Jing’s disciple, he has always been an enemy to the Saint Xu Gentry. Today, at the Stairway to Heaven, he made us lose all our face. If we don’t kill him, we’ll become the laughing stock of the world.”

Back then, Lei Jing had offended Saint Xu Gentry. That was why he had been forced to leave the Saint Academy and leave for the Omen Ridge.

Now, Lei Jing had brought a group of genius students back to the Saint Academy. Naturally, the Saint Xu Gentry felt the threat and thought of Lei Jing’s students as imaginary enemies.

“Since that’s the case, I’ll go make the arrangements now. Let’s take the opportunity to get rid of him before he fully develops,” Xu Hai said.

“Wait.”

Demi-saint Sandao stopped Xu Hai. “Today, Zhang Ruochen’s performance was too spectacular. There were those at the level of the headmaster who had begun paying attention to him and preparing to take him as a disciple. If we kill him right in the East Region Saint City, how can we prevent the headmaster from finding out?”

“Then what’s your plan?” Xu Hai was confused.

Demi-saint Sandao slowly said, “The location for the third round of the examination has almost been confirmed. We’ll be sending all of the participating students to the Battlefield of Primitive World.”

“What? The Battlefield of Primitive World?” Xu Hai was greatly surprised.

Demi-saint Sandao smiled. “Why are you so astonished? The Battlefield of Primitive World is also split into different levels. They’ll only be sent to the Inferior Primitive World. Though it’s still dangerous, it shouldn’t be difficult for someone at the Heaven Realm to survive.”

“Do you know which Inferior Primitive World?” Xu Hai asked.

“The Five Elements Primitive World. It’s a newly discovered Primitive World.”

“Go seek out a few reliable aces below the Fish-dragon Realm and bring them to me. I’ll contact some of the people in the Battlefield of Primitive World and have them sent to the Five Elements Primitive World ahead of time. When Zhang Ruochen goes here to participate in the third round of the examination, they’ll be able to get rid of him without anyone none the wiser,” Demi-saint Sandao said.

Xu Hai was ecstatic. “You’re very wise to come up with such a marvelous plan. In the Saint Academy, there’s a Saint who is loyal to the Saint Xu Gentry called Nie Wenlong. He’s a master on the Heaven Board. If he strikes, he’ll definitely be able to kill Zhang Ruochen.”

“A master of the Heaven Board? Good, very good! Anyone below the Fish-dragon Realm is already considered a top master. Furthermore, even if he’s discovered by a Saint from the Saint Academy, he can explain that it’s a training experience of the Heaven Board.” Demi-saint Sandao laughed.

“Go now and bring Nie Wenlong here. Xu Hai, work hard for me. As long as you can get rid of Zhang Ruochen this time, I’ll gift you a Sword Heart Pill and help you break into the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword.”

“Many thanks, ancestor.”

Xu Hai felt overjoyed. He quickly bowed and backed out of the abode to find Nie Wenlong.

...

The sky was already dark when they got back to the Courier Station of Martial Market.

Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi returned to their own rooms to continue refining their Dragon’s Blood.

Zhang Ruochen stood alone in the garden. Threads of bright moonlight were like strands of silver gauze spilling onto his

body, casting a long shadow.

FLASH!

He rubbed the Storage Ring with his finger and saw a flash of light. He retrieved a long purple sword and gripped it in his hand. The blade of the sword was slightly cold. It was about one and one-third meters long and about half a palm wide.

The mark of an ancient Mythical Beast was carved on the surface of the blade. It seemed to resemble a Thunder Vulture.

It was the Violet Thunder Sword, a tenth level Genuine Martial Arms. There were 72 basic inscriptions and three medium level inscriptions carved on the blade. The basic inscriptions were all 'electric' inscriptions.

Of the three lines of medium level inscriptions, one was of the Inscription of Electric Series, one was of the Inscription of Power Series, and one was of the Inscription of Fire Series.

Zhang Ruochen had just purchased the sword at the Martial Market in the Seventh District, costing him 370,000 Spiritual Crystals.

He temporarily placed his Abyss Ancient Sword in the Sword Sanctum. He estimated that it wouldn't be restored for a while.

If the third round of the examination was really in the Battlefield of Primitive World, he naturally needed a suitably powerful combat sword.

Though he had already reached the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword and he could use just about anything as a sword, he would definitely be able to exhibit more combat power with a true legendary sword in hand.

A tenth level Genuine Martial Arms was indeed much more expensive than a ninth level Genuine Martial Arms.

370,000 Spiritual Crystals.

It was certainly an enormous fortune for an ordinary warrior of the Heaven Realm.

SWOOSH!

He held the hilt and swung the sword gently without running his Genuine Qi. The sword immediately crackled with the sound of lightning.

Strands of fine electricity surged out from the blade of the sword, completely enveloping his right arm.

“Good sword.”

Zhang Ruochen moved all of the Genuine Qi in his body and sank it into the Meridians of his right hand, directing them toward his sword. He instantly activated all 72 lines of ‘electric’ inscriptions carved on it.

BOOM!

The sound of thunder and beasts roaring burst forth from the blade.

He then saw streaks of purple lightning shooting out of the sword tip, forming dozens of lightning as thick as a wine cup. They flew in all directions, nearly enveloping the entire garden in lightning. It was completely impossible to see any of his shadows.

# Chapter 398 - Saintess of the Heresy

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

Violet Thunder Sword was made of Purple Ribbed Steel. Its blade was forged in a pool of a Thunder Vulture's blood, creating a boundless power. It was an unique treasured sword.

When Zhang Ruochen activated the 72 lines of basic electric inscriptions, a giant purple shadow rose from the blade. It spread out both of its wings like a giant Thunder Eagle.

Suddenly, Zhang Ruochen seemed to find something interesting. He spared a glance at the shadow that was not far away.

His arms swung and chopped over.

SWISH!

That was a Thunder Eagle condensed by the thunderbolt. It seemed to have come to life and flew toward the shadow.

It was not a real Thunder Eagle but a shadow compressed by sword Qi and lightning, which was called Transformation by sword Qi.

Duanmu Xingling, who was standing in the shadow, did not expect that she would be discovered by Zhang Ruochen, so she immediately applied her body movement and sidestepped to the left.

It seemed to be one step, but she actually moved 33 meters. It left a series of Shadow, and the speed was as quick as a ghost.

WHOOSH!

The sword Qi that turned into the Thunder Eagle did not dissipate. It seemed to have a mind of its own and chased after Duanmu Xingling, attacking relentlessly.

A purple combat sword flew out of Thunder Eagle's stomach and attacked toward the Duanmu Xingling's back.

Duanmu Xingling sensed danger from her back. She suddenly stopped and did a back flip, jumping over by the purple combat sword. She then attacked the Thunder Eagle with her palm.

Duanmu Xingling's palm turned red and struck out a giant Flying Snake with four wings on its back. It widely opened its mouth and swallowed the Thunder Eagle.

She applied the Transformation by Palm Force.

She moved the Genuine Qi with her palm and turned it into a Flying Snake, which had a great explosive power.

Zhang Ruochen struck out with the sword again. His arm shook and turned into seven illusory images of sword Qi. Seven swords slashed toward Duanmu Xingling at the same time.

It was the first move of Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing, Haunting Septuple Kill.

At this very moment, the power Zhang Ruochen applied was totally different from the power he applied to the martial arts stage. It was no longer looked sluggish and slow. The slash appeared out of nowhere like a bolt of lightning and it swept towards Duanmu Xingling like the wind..

Even though it was still the same move of Haunting Septuple Kill, it was totally different as Zhang Ruochen's mastery brought this move up to another level.

"Amazing. He has already practiced Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing into the Perfection of Martial Arts," Duanmu Xingling was surprised.

Duanmu Xingling was up in the air and had not landed. The white bracelet on her wrist span quickly under the infuriation

of Genuine Qi. It became bigger and bigger and flew out from her wrist.

It was a weapon of the tenth level of the Genuine Martial Arms and it was called the Anti-Dragon Ring.

It was said that it could expand and shrink. If the inscriptions were all activated, it could even lock a giant flood dragon.

Anti-Dragon Ring clashed with Violet Thunder Sword. A large number of sparks came out. A layer of Genuine Qi wave gushed out into the distance.

Luckily, there was an array set up in the Courier Station of Martial Market. Otherwise, the fight between them would destroy almost half of the Courier Station.

Duanmu Xingling wore a black nightcrawler coat and a black hood with only her bright eyes were being exposed.

After holding back Zhang Ruochen's sword attack, she turned around immediately and flew away. She wanted to escape.

Duanmu Xingling was here because she was influenced by what Zhang Ruochen had said the other day. She could not help but came over to see him. She did not really want to have a fight with Zhang Ruochen.

So she took the chance to try and leave. She immediately applied the bodily movement with all her might.

However, Zhang Ruochen was faster. Suddenly, he was behind her and stabbed toward her again with his sword.

Duanmu Xingling struck out the Anti-Dragon Ring again. With a swooshing sound, the Anti-Dragon Ring flew above Zhang Ruochen's head and started to spin quickly. It turned bigger and bigger and attacked over from above, wanting to lock Zhang Ruochen.

**SWOOSH!**

Zhang Ruochen flew downwards quickly and swung his sword upward.

The sword tip accurately hit the Anti-Dragon Ring and the Ring spinned away.



Duanmu Xingling swung her sleeves and drove a stroke of Genuine Qi. She wrapped up the Anti-Dragon Ring the Genuine Qi and withdrew it quickly. She put it on her wrist again.

At the same time, her feet gently landed on a nearby cornice.

Under the moon light, Duanmu Xingling appeared to be very graceful. She was curvaceous and every curve of her was full of endless temptation.

CRASH!

There was a loud sound.

Duanmu Xingling's black hood was ripped open. Her long blackish hair fell down, exposing her fair forehead along with her long and arched eyebrows arched above her big, beautiful eyes.

However, the face below her eyes was still covered by the black cloth.

Duanmu Xingling was a bit flustered. She had no idea when she was stabbed by the sword.

It was just her hood that was torn apart. If the sword Qi was slightly more powerful, her neck would've been cut off.

SWOOSH!

Zhang Ruochen swung his arm and turned the Violet Thunder Sword into a flying light. It accurately landed in the sword scabbard about 33 meters away.

“Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, you have come to visit me late at night. There must be something you want to talk about?”

“How did you know it is me?”

Duanmu Xingling slowly pulled off the cloth on her face, exposing her beautiful face. Her skin was crystal-clear and she had delicate facial features. She seemed to be not much older than 10 years old, but she was very enchanting and attractive.

Zhang Ruochen walked to the side of a stone table in the yard. He flicked his sleeves and a stroke of Qi billow gushed out

and blew off the dust on the two stone stools.

He sat on one of the stool and said slowly, “We have been friends for almost three years. It would be strange if I didn’t recognize you.”

Zhang Ruochen sniffed with his nose. He said, “There seemed to be your scent in the air. Did you deliberately want me to recognize you?”

Duanmu Xingling flew off from the cornice and sat opposite to Zhang Ruochen. She had a worried look on her face and it was in total contrast with her usually cheerful look.

After a long while, Duanmu Xingling broke the silence and raised her beautiful face. She said, “Do you already know my identity?”

Zhang Ruochen said with a smile, “Just some few guesses. I am not completely certain.”

Duanmu Xingling saw Zhang Ruochen’s smile. She felt more relieved and pouted her lips. She said, “Then tell me your guesses. I want to know if you are right.”

Zhang Ruochen stared at Duanmu Xingling’s eyes. He said, “You are a Saintess of Moon Worship Demonic Sect. Those who appeared at the Tongming River are not warriors of Duanmu family but apprentices of the heresy.”

Duanmu Xingling’s smile turned stiff. She signed and slightly frowned. She hesitated and finally said, “You are right.”

Zhang Ruochen, “Why?”

Duanmu Xingling said, “Are you asking why did I change my appearance just to enter the School of the Martial Market? How about you answer my question first? How did you know my identity?”

Zhang Ruochen stretched out three fingers. He said, “Three reasons.”

“First, you are too talented. The disciples of the powerful Saint families are not even in your league. A Half-Saint family can’t cultivate a God’s favored daughter like you. If I am right, you

didn't use all of your power when you were at the Saint Academy's examination."

Duanmu Xingling showed her snow-white teeth with a smile, "But isn't your talent even higher than mine?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "I do have a big secret, but I can't tell you right now. It is because of this secret that I got to be where I am today."

Duanmu Xingling, "Then what is the second reason?"

Zhang Ruochen said, "The Saintess of the heresy has been in Omen Ridge once. How can such a big shot like her be in Omen Ridge?"

Duanmu Xingling said with a smile, "Wasn't Di Yi also in Omen Ridge?"

Zhang Ruochen replied, "Di Yi went to Omen Ridge for the Dragon Sarira. So why did the Saintess of the heresy go there for? Moreover, Di Yi didn't rescue me, the Saintess of the heresy did. We don't even know each other. Why did she do that?"

Duanmu Xingling was frustrated and said, "It seems like you knew from long ago."

In Yunwu City of Yunwu Commandery Prince, when Zhang Ruochen was hunted down by the Black Market masters, Duanmu Xingling helped him defeat the Black Market masters by using the identity of the Saintess of the heresy.

Zhang Ruochen continued, "And the third reason. In Tongming River, when I strived for the Dragon Sarira, Duanmu family gathered several hundred warriors in the Completion of the Earth Realm in a very short time."

"Even the dominator of Omen Ridge, Yuntai Suzerain, and Tai Qing Palace couldn't do it, how could the Duanmu family do it? Since then, I had started to doubt you."

"Combining the three reasons, it is not hard to guess your identity."

Duanmu Xingling said, "Since you have known my identity, what are you going to do next?"

Zhang Ruochen smiled and said, “You have to answer my question first.”

Duanmu Xingling said, “It was certainly Sect Master’s idea to send me to the School of the Martial Market. He asked me to practice hard and try to become a High-level in the Martial Market Bank.”

“As simple as that?” Zhang Ruochen was unconvinced.

“Of course.”

Duanmu Xingling crossed her arms over her chest. She spoke seriously.

Zhang Ruochen stopped asking and advised, “Senior sister apprentice Duanmu, what you are doing is very dangerous. If the superior of Saint Academy finds out your identity, you will end up in a miserable situation. You should also know that the spies of the Black Market and the evil all end up dead if caught.”

Duanmu Xingling was a bit dejected. She said, “You think I had a choice? It is the Sect Master’s order, how could I reject it? Although I am the Saintess and I can give orders to Masters of all Demonic Sect, I am just a servant of all the Sect Saints. If I am not a Saint, I can only be a nonentity.”

She stared at Zhang Ruochen and continued, “Now that you know my identity, will you tell it to the Elder of Saint Academy?”

Zhang Ruochen stood up and said, “Of course not.”

If Zhang Ruochen exposed Duanmu Xingling’s identity to Saint Academy, it would certainly be a great credit, and he would be rewarded heftily.

However, he would not do that.

Zhang Ruochen joined the School of the Martial Market to look for a better place to practice and help improve himself. At the same time, if he was in danger, he would be protected by the School of the Martial Market.

There was no need to betray a friend.

There was only one enemy in Zhang Ruochen's mind, Empress Chi Yao.

As long as they had matched personalities and could help and support each other, anyone, even the warriors of the Black Market and believers of the heresy, could be his friends.

After listening to Zhang Ruochen's affirmative answer, Duanmu Xingling blinked her eyelashes. She could not help but shed tears and walked to Zhang Ruochen's back. She unfolded a pair of her snow-white lotus like arms and hugged Zhang Ruochen.

Zhang Ruochen could clearly feel that a fine soft body fell on his back. It seemed that there were two fluffy balloons that pressed tightly on him with the seductive warmth of a woman's body.

Hiding in the School of the Martial Market for several years, Duanmu Xingling had been under great pressure. It was like treading on the thin ice. She was very careful, and dared not tell anyone about her secret that had been buried in her mind all these years.

Duanmu Xingling seemed to be very optimistic, but her heart was actually filled with fear.

Now she finally spoke out her identity and shared it with Zhang Ruochen, and Zhang Ruochen had willingly lent her his ears.

The touch and the relief made all Duanmu Xingling's bottled up stress and worries flood out of her in an instant.

# Chapter 399 - Divine Dragon's Steal

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

After Duanmu Xingling left, Zhang Ruochen pulled himself together. He did not want to think about her identity anymore. He took out the Time and Space Spinel and entered the internal space, continuing to practice Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing.

The first three sword moves, Haunting Septuple Kill, Soul-breaking Windwhisper and Soul-repose Shadowing, had been practiced into the Perfection of Martial Arts.

Next, he needed to practice the rest of the 10 sword techniques.

Zhang Ruochen held the Violet Thunder Sword in his hands. The Heart of the Sword in the Qi Sea started to spin and turned into a small human shadow.

While the human shadow applied the sword technique, Zhang Ruochen also entered the realm of Heart Integrated into Sword. The sword in his hand waved along as well.

Zhang Ruochen took four days to practice all the sword techniques into the Perfection of Martial Arts.

The power of his sword technique seemed to have increased a level.

“Now only one day has passed outside. The second round of the exam shouldn't have started yet.”

“I have reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, I wonder what kind of power I have now.”

When Zhang Ruochen had reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, he did not have a chance to check on his strength. He could finally find out now.

Zhang Ruochen closed his eyes and emerged his Martial Soul into the Qi Sea. A pigeon egg sized liquid Ball of Vital Essence floated in the center of the Qi Sea.

Vaguely, many sacred illusory images of gods floated on the surface of the Ball of Vital Essence. They were flying around in a certain pattern.

He circulated the Scripture of Emperor Ming's Empyrean, and the Ball of Vital Essence immediately started to spin quickly and released streaks of Genuine Qi. The streaks of Qi separated into 36 lines and gushed into 36 Meridians in his body.

SWISH!

At the same time, a layer of green light was glowing on the surface of Zhang Ruochen's body. It then rushed out of his body and turned into a layer of Celestial Bodyshield with a diameter of about ten meters.

Even if an ordinary warrior in the Completion of Heaven Realm struck out with his full strength, he would not be able to so much as leave a scratch on the Celestial Bodyshield.

Zhang Ruochen mobilized his Genuine Qi into the Vessel of Spiritual Blood and woke the gold Dragon Pearl in his heart.

“Divine Dragon Transformation.”

There was a deep dragon's roar from the Dragon Pearl.

A stroke of golden dragon Qi was released from his heart. It rushed into Zhang Ruochen's limbs and head.

Zhang Ruochen shuddered. He felt his body, limbs, and head get pulled by an invisible power, as if he was being ripped apart.

“PUFFET!”

Zhang Ruochen felt the danger. He immediately put away the Genuine Qi and the force finally dissipated. A sharp pain

dashed to his throat from his stomach, and blood spurted out of his mouth.

He failed!

“It is indeed not easy to pull off the Divine Dragon Transformation.”

On the Stairway to Heaven, Zhang Ruochen displayed the Divine Dragon Transformation and turned into a Golden Dragon. He easily defeated disciples of the four powerful Saint families like he was breaking a dead branch from a tree.

Hence, the great power of the Divine Dragon Transformation was obvious.

However, the Divine Dragon Transformation was a martial technique of the Superior class of the Ghost Level. Zhang Ruochen had never practiced it before. His only guess was that it may be related to the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

If Zhang Ruochen could freely display the Divine Dragon Transformation, how powerful would he be?

He wanted to try again.

Zhang Ruochen became more cautious in case he hurt himself before he could even display the Divine Dragon Transformation.

But he failed again.

With the last experience, Zhang Ruochen was not injured this time.

Then, he tried again for the third time.

This time, while Zhang Ruochen was striking out the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, he also infused the Genuine Qi into the Dragon Pearl. He used both the power of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm to drive the power of the Dragon Pearl.

It was a pity that he failed again.

After failing for 78 times, he finally made some progress.

Zhang Ruochen realized that he could bring out part of the power of the Dragon Pearl if he quickly struck out the first



five palms of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm in a row. There would be a layer of golden Dragon Scale formed on his body.

“Elephant Galloping.”

“Dragon in the Sky!”

“Dragon and Elephant Returning to Earth!”

“Dragon Shape and Elephant Shadow.”

“Nine-folds of the Elephant Power.”

After striking out the fifth palm, Zhang Ruochen felt a great power rushing out of his body.

There was light emitting from the surface of his skin. Nail-sized golden Dragon Scales grew out and covered his whole body. Even his scalp and nails turned into scales too.

It was not the full power of the Divine Dragon Transformation that was brought out, but it greatly increased Zhang Ruochen’s power and defensive power. He turned into a half-dragon and half-human form.

“It is too difficult to bring out the Divine Dragon Transformation. I probably won’t succeed even if I try for 1,000 times.”

“Maybe only when I meet danger, will I be able to display the Divine Dragon Transformation under great pressure and with the power of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.”

Of course, bringing out one layer of the armour of the Dragon Scale had already greatly increased Zhang Ruochen’s strength.

According to Zhang Ruochen’s prediction, if he successfully practiced the sixth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, Divine Dragon’s Steal, he could bring out even more dragon power.

The probability of displaying the Divine Dragon Transformation would also be greatly increased.

Zhang Ruochen had just reached the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm, there is no way he could reach the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm overnight.

If he wanted to increase his power before the third round of the exam, he could only practice the sixth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm.

If he could successfully master the sixth palm, his Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm would become a martial technique of the Superior class of the Spiritual Stage. With the profound of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm, even if he just practiced the sixth palm, he could display the power of the martial technique of the Inferior Class Ghost Level.

“Divine Dragon’s Steal.”

Zhang Ruochen stood in the center of the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel. His legs slightly bent and formed a dragon-shaped horse stance. His hands looked like palms and claws. Almost all of his bones were connected together, making clicking sound of bones clashing together.

When his palms struck out, there were streaks of flying light like lightning flying out of the center of his palms.

“AWOO!”

An illusory image of Divine Dragon more than ten meters long flew out of the center of his palm. It spun around him once and then disappeared.

Divine Dragon’s Steal mostly emphasized on the palm power. It could transform the Genuine Qi into the power of Thunderbolt. It was like a Divine Dragon tiding over a disaster in the thunderbolt.

Because Zhang Ruochen swallowed the Dragon Pearl, it was easier for him to practice the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm and totally release the momentum of his palm power.

“Both are martial techniques of the Superior Class of the Spiritual Stage, the sixth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm is more profound than the Thirteen Swords Techniques of Soul Chasing. Its power is more formidable, and it is extremely virile and masculine. At the same time, it is very difficult to practice.”

Zhang Ruochen had spent the entire day and night to practice the Divine Dragon’s Steal into the Beginner level.

Zhang Ruochen spent another three days to practice the Divine Dragon's Steal into the Small Success.

Next, Zhang Ruochen would strike out tens of thousands palms every day until his Vital Essence was exhausted, then he would stop to take a rest.

When his Vital Essence recovered, he immediately continued to practice.

Without rest, Zhang Ruochen had been practicing for half a month. He finally practiced the Divine Dragon's Steal into the succeed.

If Zhang Ruochen wanted to master the sixth palm of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm without him reaching Heaven Realm, it would at least take him one or two years.

At present, he spent less than one month to master it.

Moreover, Zhang Ruochen had totally refined the Half-Saint's Light in the Qi Sea.

Although it was only 1% of the Half-Saint's Light, Zhang Ruochen's Martial Soul equaled to the level of a Monk in the Fourth Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

If he could use the power of the Martial Soul to regulate the Heaven and Earth Spiritual Qi and turn it into attack power, with Zhang Ruochen's current strength, he would be able to compete with a monk in the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm.

Of course, he would not be able to defeat the Monk in the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm but only stay on the defensive side.

However, if his opponent was a genius of Saint Academy, whether they were in the Second Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, or even just the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, it was best for him to just run for his life.

For example, although Xu Hai was in the First Change in the Fish-dragon Realm, he was still the disciple of a powerful Saint family, which means that he could leap over several realms to defeat his opponent.

If Zhang Ruochen ran into him, the best way was to run, and he may even be unable to escape.

The internal space of the Time and Space Spinel was very narrow. Zhang Ruochen dared not test the power of the Divine Dragon's Steal in it. He could only leave the internal space of the Time and Space Spinel.

**BANG! BANG!**

Zhang Ruochen came to the Martial arts field of the Courier Station of Martial Market, and he struck out six palms of the Dragon and Elephant Prajna Palm in a row at the fastest speed. He suddenly brought out the power of the Dragon Pearl.

**SWISH!**

Zhang Ruochen was wrapped up by the golden light. His skin gradually became stiff and turned into scales.

All his bones went through subtle changes. Just like refining a golden stone, streaks of dragon patterns grew out.

The length of his fingers had increased by two times and became sharp, turning into two dragon claws.

There was a searing pain in his back. With a "Chh" sound, his body grew a pair of 12-meter-long golden dragon wings, which were also covered by the Dragon Scale and was as hard as iron.

Watching the change in his body, Zhang Ruochen was very surprised.

It was not Divine Dragon Transformation. He was still Half-dragon and Half-human. However, it was more powerful than the previous state in the Time and Space Spinel.

"With my current strength, even if I don't use the Spiritual Power and the power of the Martial Soul, I can possibly fight against warriors on the Heaven Board for a few moves.

Warriors on the Heaven Board were all very powerful. They were elites among the elites.

Especially the masters who ranked in the front, even if Zhang Ruochen used up all his Spiritual Power and the power of the

Martial Soul, he still could not match his opponent.

When Zhang Ruochen practiced in the Time and Space Spinel, eight days had passed in the outside world, and the second round of the exam of Saint Academy had finally ended.

The exam ranking of every department had been posted. They were written in lists hanging outside of Saint Academy.

Without a doubt, Zhang Ruochen became the first in the Sword Technique Department. He got a pill of seventh-class, Sword Heart Pill as the reward.

Many people saw that Zhang Ruochen actually got first place in the Sword Technique Department, and they were very surprised. How did this happen when Zhang Ruochen merely displayed three moves of the sword technique during the second round of the exam?

#

Luckily, Zhang Ruochen was not a disciple of a powerful Saint family. Otherwise, some people would've thought that there was a despicable plot behind the assessment.

Only very few knew that the three moves of sword technique Zhang Ruochen showed had reached the Perfection of Martial Arts. He fully deserved to be the first in the Sword Technique Department.

Half-saint Lingshu sent the Sword Heart Pill to Courier Station of Martial Market. She personally handed it over to Zhang Ruochen.

“Zhang Ruochen, the third round of the exam will commence tomorrow. The location will be the Inferior Primitive World that was just discovered.”

“The Primitive World is full of unknown danger. There are powerful indigenous Monks and is also filled with dangerous places. Even warriors in the Fish-dragon Realm may die there if they are unlucky.”

Half-saint Lingshu was very serious. She said again, “You'd better prepare in advance. When you are in the Primitive

World, you can only count on yourself and no one can help you. I have high hopes for you. Don't let me down.”

# Chapter 400 - East Region

## Saint Mansions

Translator:

Transn

Editor:

Transn

The Sword Heart Pill was put in a thumb-sized jade elixir bottle.

Zhang Ruochen opened the lid of the elixir bottle. With a swishing sound, a white light sword flew out of the bottle.

It was not a real light sword but a stroke of the Pill Spirit.

Zhang Ruochen immediately closed the lid and tightly held the bottle in his hands.

“I have reached the Heart Integrated into Sword. The Sword Heart Pill is not much of a use to me now. Who should I give it to?”

Si Xingkong and Chang Qiqi did not practice the sword technique, so he could only give it to Huang Yanchen and Duanmu Xingling.

Duanmu Xingling was the Saintess of the Moon Worship Demonic Sect, if she wanted a Pill like Sword Heart Pill, it would be very easy for her to get one.

Huang Yanchen's mother was a Half-Saint who practiced the sword technique. It was also not hard for her to get a Sword Heart Pill with her power. However, Huang Yanchen's mother must have some considerations in mind and would not give the Sword Heart Pill to Huang Yanchen right now.

It was because that Huang Yanchen was still far from the realm of the Heart Integrated into Sword. Even if she

swallowed the Sword Heart Pill, she would still not be able to reach the Heart Integrated into Sword.

After some thoughts, Zhang Ruochen decided to give the Sword Heart Pill to Huang Yanchen.

Even if it could not help her reach the Heart Integrated into Sword, it would greatly increase her realm of the sword technique.

Zhang Ruochen left the Courier Station of Martial Market with the Sword Heart Pill in hand and headed towards East Region Saint Mansions.

East Region Saint Mansions was not just a mansion. It consisted of 360 mansions, big and small, and they covered the entire East Region Saint City.

It was said that there was an array platform at the bottom of every Saint Prince's Mansion. If 360 array platforms were all activated, they could start up the Big Array of Circulation covering the entire East Region Saint City.

In the Seventh District of Jinhong Mainland, there was also a Saint Prince's Mansion located in Lake Jiangyue.

One could find it if he just made a few inquiries.

There were many younger generations in the Chens. Almost all the most outstanding talents lived in the Saint Prince's Mansion of Lake Jiangyue.

Lake Jiangyue was vast and boundless. It was said that its broadest part was 400 kilometers.

There was a large number of island-dotted around the lake. Resplendent and magnificent Pavilions, Palaces, high towers and martial-arts arenas were built on the islands. Looking at it with a glance, one would feel that it was like the land of the immortals.

The gate of the Saint Prince's Mansion was about 33 meters tall. Giant Kylin statues stood on each side of the gate. They looked as fierce as if they were alive.

There were 16 sergeants, eight on each side guarding the entrance to the Saint Prince's Mansion.



The eight people on the left side were all three meters tall. They had massive human bodies, but with a wolf's head above each of their bodies.

They were of the Fire Lycan tribe. Every one of them was in the Heaven Realm.

Although the eight people on the right side had human looks, their bodies were even bigger. They were all four meters tall with the Giants' blood running in their bodies. They had Natural Divine Power and could tear apart a brute elephant with their bare hands.

With 16 powerful sergeants guarding Saint Prince's Mansion, who dared to get close to the gate?

“Who is it?”

A sergeant of Fire Lycan tribe who was in the Advanced Stage of the Heaven Realm looked at Zhang Ruochen who was still far away. He picked up a weapon and took a step forward. He roared, and the sound wave was so loud that it sent the sand and rock flying.

Zhang Ruochen was calm. He walked forward and came to the outside of the gate. He said, “I am Zhang Ruochen and I am here to visit Huang Yanchen. Please send my message.”

The sergeant of Fire Lycan tribe sized up Zhang Ruochen for a while. His voice was loud and rough, “Do you have the token of East Region Saint Mansions?”

“No,” Zhang Ruochen replied.

“No token? Why should I report it for you? Get away from here quickly. You shouldn't be here.” The sergeant of Fire Lycan tribe said rudely.

As a member of East Region Saint Mansions, even if he was just a sergeant who guarded the gate, he had a very high status. So the sergeant of Fire Lycan tribe was cold and arrogant. He did not want to talk more with Zhang Ruochen and sent him away directly.

Zhang Ruochen slightly frowned but he was not angry, because he knew that the more powerful one's influence was,

the more rules it had.

If you did not have high status, even a doorkeeper wouldn't look up to you, how would he pass the message for you?

While Zhang Ruochen was going to leave, a dozen of young students came up to him from the distance. They were all geniuses of East Region Saint Mansions. Some were handsome men, and some were beautiful women.

They were holding the latest

Eastern Region

Report

and discussing something.

“The person who defeated Bu Qianfan was actually the young master of the Black Market Excellence Hall. I wonder what kind of person Di Yi is?”

“No matter how powerful Di Yi is, he was defeated by Buddha Emperor's descendant, Zhang Ruochen.”

“Genius appears one after another. Bu Qianfan, Di Yi, and Zhang Ruochen are all incredible and outstanding talents. We still have a lot to catch up.”

...

...

Suddenly, Chen Tianshu raised his head and looked at Zhang Ruochen who was in the distance. He laughed out loud, “Haha! What a coincidence. That is Zhang Ruochen. Weren't you all were suspecting his strength? You should go and challenge him right now. If you can win, you can be featured in the next Eastern Region Report.”

Chen Tianshu was about 20 years old. He was extremely handsome. He wore a silver-colored martial robe which made him very chivalrous.

Zhang Ruochen had very sharp hearing. Although the group's conversation was happening about 33 meters away, he could still hear Chen Tianshu's voice, so he spared a glance at him.

“Hey! This man looks very familiar.”

Zhang Ruochen recalled for a while and finally remembered. Two years ago, he had met him once in Sword Technique Conference in Qianshui Commandery.

His name should be Chen Tianshu.

Was he actually a member of the Chens?

In a very short moment, a dozen of young students of the Chens were ten steps away from Zhang Ruochen. They were all looking at him curiously. Among them, almost all of the male warriors were driven by war intent. They were eager to have a try.

On the other hand, Zhang Ruochen was confused. He did not know what had happened.

Chen Tianshu smiled and cupped his hands. He said, “Brother Zhang, do you still remember me since we parted in Qianshui Commandery?”

“I certainly do.”

Zhang Ruochen cupped his hands too. He said, “At that time, I didn’t know that you were actually a young master of East Region Saint Mansions.”

Chen Tianshu said with a smile, “I was ordered by the Elder of my family to handle some affairs in Qianshui Commandery. It was destiny that we could meet there. Unexpectedly, you have become an outstanding talent whose name became famous in the entire Eastern Region within two years. Congratulations.”

At this very moment, a man of about 20 years old stepped up from behind Chen Tianshu. He had a hawk nose and sharp eyes. He said, “I am, Chen Tianran, a young student of the Chens who ranks 12th. Zhang Ruochen, would you accept my challenge?”

Zhang Ruochen was a bit shocked. He looked at Chen Tianshu with confusion.

Chen Tianshu laughed and said, “My sixth brother is a warlike. He wants to fight with any young masters. He just saw the Eastern Region Report and knows that you have

defeated the young master of Black Market Excellence Hall, Di Yi, so he can't help but want to challenge you. If you don't mind, please spare him some moves."

Chen Tianran was not happy. He said coldly, "Tianshu, you boost other's morale and being too humble yourself. After all I am top 20 among the masters of the Chens. I have reached the Dawn State of the Heaven Realm. If I strike out with my full strength, I may not lose to him. Although he is talented, he is still too young."

Chen Tianshu said with a smile, "Sixth brother, brother Zhang defeated Di Yi, who defeated Bu Qianfan. If I am right, you have fought with Bu Qianfan once, he was two realms lower than you and defeated you with only seven moves."

A young genius girl of the Chens with a pony tail laughed, "Sixth brother, didn't you see Saint Lady's commend of Zhang Ruochen at Eastern Region Report? Saint Lady said that Zhang Ruochen is one of the Six Young Kings in the younger generation in the Eastern Region and he has the talent to become a Saint."

Chen Tianran's face did not change. He said coldly, "Although Saint Lady governs Eastern Region Report, and she could reckon nature's mystery and write about big Events Under the Sky, that doesn't mean what she says is always right. As long as I can defeat Zhang Ruochen, I can be on the next issue of Eastern Region Report."

The young woman sneered, "You don't need to win. As long as you can hold back him back for 10 moves, I will give you the Peacock Pill that uncle gave to me."

Chen Tianran showed smirking expression in his eyes. He said, "Sister Jing, Peacock Pill is made from peacock's blood, and it is very valuable. A warrior would be able to grow a pair of peacock wings when he or she swallows it which enables him to fly across the sky and go underground. Are you sure you want to bet with it?"

Chen Jingjing smiled, "If you can hold him back for 10 moves, the Peacock Pill would certainly be yours. If you lose, you have to be my loyal follower for ten days, is that a deal?"

“Hmph! How can I lose?”

Tianran raised his chin. He sneered.

Chen Tianran was not confident to defeat Zhang Ruochen.

However, exchanging 10 moves with Zhang Ruochen shouldn't too difficult. So, Chen Tianran agreed immediately.

Zhang Ruochen was feeling indifferent. He said, “I don't seem to have accepted your challenge yet.”

“As a powerful warrior, how can you be afraid of challenges?”

Chen Tianran did not care if Zhang Ruochen agreed. He roared and the Genuine Qi in his body released.

Under the promotion of the Genuine Qi, a long black spear that was on his back flew to Chen Tianran's hands.

“Genuine Martial Arms of the tenth level, Ghost King Spear.”

Chen Tianran's arms shivered suddenly. The long spear drew an arch line, letting out banging sound. A cloud of cold fire came out of the spear. It brought out a stroke of Icing air.

WHOOSH!

A layer of white heavy frost appeared on the ground, covering the surrounding area about 100 meters away.

“Ghost King Invisible Spear.”

Chen Tianran took the initiative to attack. He displayed a move of spear technique of the Inferior Class of the Ghost Level.

The long spear kept spinning. It stabbed toward Zhang Ruochen with cold air.

With the tip of the spear getting closer and closer, Zhang Ruochen faintly heard the ghost's roaring sound. A stroke of Icing air blew toward him. It was like he fell into an ice hole, and all his blood was going to freeze.

He could rank top 20th among the young men in the Chens because he was indeed not an ordinary person and deserved to be one of the top masters. He had actually practiced the martial technique of Ghost Level into the succeed.

Zhang Ruochen finally figured out what had been going on. It turned out to be the fault of Eastern Region Report. From today on, challenges like this would surely come one after another.

In this case, he should suppress his opponent with overwhelming strength. Showing his strength at an appropriate level would stop the endless challenges.